



CRC



CRC

TOUCHING

JUL 20 1991





TOUCHING: THE HUMAN SIGNIFICANCE OF THE SKIN (*Second Edition*). Copyright © 1971, 1978 by Ashley Montagu. All rights reserved. Printed in the United States of America. No part of this book may be used or reproduced in any manner whatsoever without written permission except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical articles and reviews. For information address Harper & Row, Publishers, Inc., 10 East 53rd Street, New York, N.Y. 10022. Published simultaneously in Canada by Fitzhenry & Whiteside Limited, Toronto.

*Designed by Eve Kirch Callahan*

---

Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data

Montagu, Ashley, date

Touching.

Includes bibliographical references and index.

1. Touch. 2. Skin. 3. Nonverbal communication.

4. Personality. 5. Child psychology. I. Title.

BF275.M66 1977 152.1'82 77-3762

ISBN 0-06-012979-4

---

78 79 80 10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

1875-1876  
Montrose

To the memory of  
James Louis Montrose

606

KANSAS CITY (MO) PUBLIC LIBRARY



# CONTENTS

	<i>Preface to the First Edition</i>	ix
	<i>Preface to the Second Edition</i>	xi
<b>ONE</b>	The Mind of the Skin	1
<b>TWO</b>	The Womb of Time	37
<b>THREE</b>	Breastfeeding	59
<b>FOUR</b>	Tender, Loving Care	76
<b>FIVE</b>	Skin and Sex	158
<b>SIX</b>	Growth and Development	186
<b>SEVEN</b>	Culture and Contact	231
	<i>Envoi</i>	317
	<i>Appendix: Touch and Age</i>	320
	<i>References</i>	323
	<i>Index</i>	371



## PREFACE

### TO THE FIRST EDITION

This book is about the skin as a tactile organ very much involved, not alone physically but also behaviorally, in the growth and development of the organism. The central referent is man, and what happens or fails to happen to him as an infant by way of tactile experience, as affecting his subsequent behavioral development, is my principal concern here. When I first started thinking about this subject in 1944 there was very little experimental evidence available bearing upon these matters. Today a considerable amount of such evidence has been made available by a large variety of investigators, and my lonely paper of 1953, "The Sensory Influences of the Skin" (*Texas Reports on Biology and Medicine*, vol. 2, 1953, pp. 291-301), is no longer alone. This book draws upon many sources of information, and notes citing these sources have been gathered in the Reference section, where they are identified by the numbers of the pages and the line or lines on the pages where references or quotations occur. (This system seemed preferable to using note numbers which interrupt the text. When notes are amplifications, suggestions, or comments, however, rather than simple source citations, they are keyed to asterisks and appear on the same pages as the passages to which they refer.)

The skin as an organ, the largest organ of the body, was very much neglected until quite recently. But it is not as an organ as such that I am here concerned with the skin; rather, in

contrast to the psychosomatic or centrifugal approach, I am interested in what may be called the somatopsychic or centripetal approach. In short, I am interested in the manner in which tactile experience or its lack affects the development of behavior; hence, "the mind of the skin."

*A.M.*

*Princeton, N.J.*

*8 February 1971*



## PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION

The first edition of this book has gratifyingly found a large audience. The present edition incorporates much new information concerning the vital importance of touch from birth to old age.

One regret that every writer must have is that there does not exist a word which specifically refers to both sexes. In this edition I first attempted to remedy the situation by employing "it" as a substitute for the customary masculine pronouns. The result was an unacceptable impersonality which, combined with the awkward repetitiveness of "he or she" and "his or hers," rendered the change repellent. I, therefore, have adhered to customary usage. It is, of course, to be understood that in all instances both sexes are implied. This book is about human beings, not objects, and no baby is an "it" to its mother, nor should it be to anyone else.

Most of all, I have to thank Louise Schaeffer of the Biology Library, and Terry Caton and Terry Wiggins of the Psychology Library, all of Princeton University.

I have also to thank Louise Yorke of the Library of the Medical Center, Princeton.

To my friend Dr. Philip Gordon I am indebted for his careful reading of proof.

To Elisabeth Jakab, my editor, many thanks for her sympathetic interest and concern for the continued welfare of this book.

A.M.  
Princeton, N.J.  
20 September 1977



# TOUCHING



---

# ONE

---

## THE MIND OF THE SKIN

The greatest sense in our body is our touch sense. It is probably the chief sense in the processes of sleeping and waking; it gives us our knowledge of depth or thickness and form; we feel, we love and hate, are touchy and are touched, through the touch corpuscles of our skin.

—J. Lionel Taylor, *The Stages of Human Life*,  
1921, p. 157.

The skin, like a cloak, covers us all over, the oldest and the most sensitive of our organs, our first medium of communication, and our most efficient of protectors. The whole body is covered by skin. Even the transparent cornea of the eye is overlain by a layer of modified skin. The skin also turns inwards to line orifices such as the mouth, nostrils, and anal canal. In the evolution of the senses the sense of touch was undoubtedly the first to come into being. Touch is the parent of our eyes, ears, nose, and mouth. It is the sense which became differentiated into the others, a fact that seems to be recognized in the age-old evaluation of touch as “the mother of the senses.” Touch is the earliest sensory system to become functional in all species thus far studied, human, animal, and bird. Perhaps next to the brain, the skin is the most important of all our organ systems. The sense most closely associated with the skin, the sense of touch,

is the earliest to develop in the human embryo. When the embryo is less than an inch long from crown to rump, and less than six weeks old, light stroking of the upper lip or wings of the nose will cause bending of the neck and trunk away from the source of stimulation. At this stage in its development the embryo has neither eyes nor ears. Yet its skin is already highly developed, although in a manner not at all comparable to the development it is still to undergo. In the womb, bathed by its mother's amniotic fluid and enveloped by the soft walls of the womb, "rocked in the cradle of the deep," the conceptus\* leads an aquatic existence. In this environment its skin must have the capacity to resist the absorption of too much water, the soaking effects of its liquid medium, to respond appropriately to physical, chemical, and neural changes, and to changes in temperature.

The skin in common with the nervous system arises from the outermost of the three embryonic cell layers, the ectoderm. The ectoderm constitutes the general surface covering of the embryonic body. The ectoderm also gives rise to the hair, teeth, and the sense organs of smell, taste, hearing, vision and touch—everything involved with what goes on outside the organism. The central nervous system, which has as a principal function keeping the organism informed of what is going on outside it, develops as the intumed portion of the general surface of the embryonic body. The rest of the surface covering, after the differentiation of the brain, spinal cord, and all the other parts of the central nervous system, becomes the skin and its derivatives—hair, nails, and teeth. The nervous system is, then, a buried part of the skin, or alternatively the skin may be regarded as an exposed portion of the nervous system. It would, therefore, improve our understanding of these matters if we were to think and speak of the skin as the external nervous system, an organ system which from its earliest differentiation

\**Conceptus*, the organism from conception to delivery. *Embryo*, the organism from conception to the end of the 8th week. *Fetus*, from the beginning of the 9th week to delivery.

remains in intimate association with the internal or central nervous system. As Frederic Wood Jones, the English anatomist, put it, "He is the wise physician and philosopher who realises that in regarding the external appearance of his fellow-men he is studying the external nervous system and not merely the skin and its appendages." As the most ancient and largest sense organ of the body, the skin enables the organism to learn about its environment. It is the medium, in all its differentiated parts, by which the external world is perceived. The face and the hand as "sense organs" not only convey to the brain a knowledge of the environment, but convey to the environment certain information about the "internal nervous system."

Throughout life the skin is in a continuous state of renewal by the activity of the cells in its deep layers. In different parts of the body the skin varies in texture, color, scent, temperature, innervation, and in other features. Furthermore, the skin, as we know from human faces, carries its own memory of conditions experienced in the remote and immediate past.

The skin's growth and development proceed throughout life, and the development of its sensitivities depends largely upon the kind of environmental stimulation it receives. Interestingly enough, in common with chick, guinea pig, and rat, in the newborn human the relative weight of the skin, expressed as a percentage of the total body weight, is 19.7, nearly the same as in the adult, 17.8, suggesting what should be obvious: the enduring importance of the skin in the life of the organism.

In other animals it has been found that "skin sensitivity is apparently earliest and most completely developed during prenatal life." There is a general embryological law which states that the earlier a function develops the more fundamental it is likely to be. The fact is that the functional capacities of the skin are among the most basic of the organism.

It is that part of the skin which is most immediately exposed to the environment, its most superficial layer, the epidermis, that houses the tactile system. The free nerve endings in the epidermis are almost entirely concerned with touch, as are the nerve plexuses known as Meissner's corpuscles. The larger

nerve plexuses, known as Pacinian corpuscles, are the specific end organs that respond to mechanical stimuli of pressure and tension. These are particularly numerous under the digital pads of the fingers. A plexus of free nerve endings distributed among the epidermal cells of each hair follicle renders tactile stimulation through mechanical displacement of the hair a very important mechanism in producing tactile sensations.

The surface area of the skin has an enormous number of sensory receptors receiving stimuli of heat, cold, touch, pressure, and pain. A piece of skin the size of a quarter contains more than 3 million cells, 100 sweat glands, 50 nerve endings, and 3 feet of blood vessels. It is estimated that there are some 50 receptors per 100 square millimeters, a total of 640,000 sensory receptors. Tactile points vary from 7 to 135 per square centimeter. The number of sensory fibers from the skin entering the spinal cord by the posterior roots is well over half a million.

At birth the skin is called upon to make many new adaptive responses to an environment even more complex than that to which it was exposed in the womb. Transmitted through the atmospheric environment, in addition to air movements, are gases, particles, parasites, viruses, bacteria, changes in pressure, temperature, humidity, light, radiation, and much else. To all these stimuli the skin is equipped to respond with extraordinary efficiency. By far the largest organ system in the body, about 2,500 square centimeters in the newborn and about 18,000 square centimeters, or approximately 18 square feet, in the average male, in whom it weighs about 8 pounds, the skin constitutes some 6 to 8 percent of the total body weight. The skin ranges in thickness from 1/10th of a millimeter to 3 or 4 millimeters. It is generally thickest on the palms of the hands and soles of the feet, and usually thicker on extensor than flexor surfaces.

Physiologically the skin has seven primary functions: (1) as a protector of underlying parts from mechanical and radiation injuries, and invasion by foreign substances and organisms; (2) as a sense organ; (3) as a temperature regulator; (4) as a metabolic organ involved in the metabolism and storage of fat, and



in water and salt metabolism by perspiration; (5) as a reservoir for food and water; (6) as a facilitator of the two-way passage of gases through it; and (7) as the seat of the origin of the anti-rachitic vitamin D.

One would have thought that the remarkable versatility of the skin, its tolerance of environmental changes, and its astonishing thermo-regulatory capacities, as well as the singular efficiency of the barrier it presents against the insults and assaults of the environment, would have constituted conditions striking enough to evoke the interest of inquirers into its properties.

Strangely enough, until relatively recent years, this has not been the case. Indeed, most of what we know about the functions of the skin has been learned since the 1940's. Though much knowledge has been acquired, of both the structure and the physical functions of the skin, much more remains to be learned. Today the skin no longer languishes for want of interest.

Somewhat surprisingly, the one repository of so much of the sensitive human spirit in which one might have expected to find a sophisticated insight into the functions of the human skin, namely poetry, is found to be disappointingly barren. Poems have been written in celebration of every part of the body, but the skin, unaccountably, appears to have been slighted, as if it did not exist. In prose literature the case is otherwise: there are many references to the skin, perhaps the most notable being Gulliver's mortifying account of the diminutive Lilliputians' animadversions on the unprepossessingness of his skin, with its blotches, pimples, and other disfigurements.

That the importance in human behavior of the tactile functions of the skin has not gone wholly unrecognized is evident from the many expressions in common parlance in which these functions appear. We speak of "rubbing" people the wrong way, and "stroking" them the right way; of "abrasive" and "prickly" personalities. We say of someone that he has "a happy touch," of another that he is "a soft touch," and of still another that he has "the human touch." We get into "touch" or "contact" with others. Some people have to be "handled"

carefully ("with kid gloves"). Some are "thick-skinned," others are "thin-skinned," some get "under one's skin," while others remain only "skin-deep," and things are either "palpably" or "tangibly" so or not. Some people are "touchy," that is, over-sensitive or easily "irritated." Others are "out of touch," or "have lost their grip." The "feel" of a thing is important to us in more ways than one; and "feeling" for another embodies much of the kind of experience which we have ourselves undergone through the skin. A deeply felt experience is "touching." Pleasure in a work of art gives some of us "goose pimples." We say of some people that they are "tactful," and of others that they are "tactless," that is, either having or not having that delicate sense of what is fitting and proper in dealing with others (see p. 228). Through "feeling" we frequently refer to emotional states, such as happiness, joy, sadness, melancholy, and depression, and by that term often imply a reference to touching. We speak of an "unfeeling," un pitying person as "callous," which is the English for the Latin *callum*, meaning "hard skin," and from which the word both for the unfeelingness and the thickened skin is derived. We speak of a person as having grown so "callused" that he has become insensitive to human feeling.

When we speak of someone as removed from reality, we say that he is "out of touch with reality," and when we describe the contemporary unrelatedness of people to each other, we speak of them as "disengaged," "out of touch," and not wishing to be "touched." One "keeps one's distance." "We reach out" to others. We "pat each other on the back." We are "held" by an appealing performance. A voice makes one's skin "tingle." A dread fear makes one's skin "creep." The skin, in fact, does creep—it contracts, and this is the reason why one's hair sometimes stands on end (the pilomotor reflex). We hold the world in our "grasp," and "clutch" our loved ones to our bosom. As Bertrand Russell pointed out long ago, it is the sense of touch that gives us our sense of reality. "Not only our geometry and our physics, but our whole conception of what exists outside us, is based upon the sense of touch. We carry this even into our

metaphors: a good speech is 'solid,' a bad speech is 'gas,' because we feel that a gas is not quite 'real.' "

Although the skin has constantly occupied the forefront of human consciousness, it is strange that it should have elicited so little attention. Most of us take our skin entirely for granted, except when it burns and peels, or breaks out in pimples, or perspires unpleasantly. When we think of it at other times, it is with a vague wonder at so neat and efficient a covering for our insides: waterproof, dustproof, and miraculously—until we grow old—always the right size. As we grow older we begin to discover qualities of the skin, color, firmness, elasticity, texture, we had failed to notice at all before we began to lose them. With the accumulation of years we are apt to regard our aging skin as a rather dirty trick, a depressing public evidence of aging, and a somewhat unwelcome reminder of the passage of time. No longer the good fit it once was, it grows loose and baggy, and is often wrinkled, dry and leathery, even parchment-like, sallow, splotched, or otherwise disfigured.

But these are all superficial ways of looking at the skin. As we study the observations of numerous investigators, and put together the findings of physiologists, anatomists, neurologists, psychiatrists, psychologists and other investigators, adding to the brew our own observations and knowledge of human nature, we begin to comprehend that the skin represents something very much more than a mere integument designed to keep the skeleton from falling apart, or merely to provide a mantle for all the other organs, but rather that it is in its own right a complex and fascinating organ. In addition to being the largest organ of the body, the various elements comprising the skin have a very large representation in the brain. In the cortex, for example, it is the postcentral gyrus, or convolution, which receives the tactile impulses from the skin, by way of the sensory ganglia next to the spinal cord, then to the posterior funiculi in the spinal cord and medulla oblongata, to the venteroposterior nuclei in the thalamus, and finally the postcentral gyrus. Nerve fibers conducting tactile impulses are generally of larger size than those associated with the other senses. The sensorimotor

areas of the cortex are situated on each side of the central gyrus. The precentral gyrus is largely sensory while the postcentral gyrus is mainly motor. Horizontal connecting fibers across the central fissure connect both gyri. Since it is a general rule of neurology that the size of a particular region or area of the brain is related to the multiplicity of the functions it performs (and to the skill, say, in the use of a muscle or group of muscles), rather than to the size of the organ, the proportions of the cerebral tactile area underscore something of the importance of tactile functions in the development of the person. Figures 1 and 2 are drawings of sensory and motor homunculi, or "little men," designed to show the proportionate representations of tactile functions in the cortex. From these figures it will be seen how large is the representation of the hand, especially the index finger and the thumb, and the enormous representation of the lips.

Consider: as a sensory system the skin is much the most important organ system of the body. A human being can spend his life blind and deaf and completely lacking the senses of smell and taste, but he cannot survive at all without the functions performed by the skin. The experience of Helen Keller, who became deaf and blind in infancy, whose mind was literally created through the stimulation of her skin, shows us that when other senses fail, the skin can to an extraordinary degree compensate for their deficiencies. The sense of pain, mediated from the skin to the brain, provides an essential warning system designed to compel attention. The condition known as *cutaneous alagia*, in which the individual can feel no pain in his skin, is a serious malady. Those affected by this disorder have been known to sustain severe burns before becoming aware of any danger. Such persons are in jeopardy of their lives.

The continuous stimulation of the skin by the external environment serves to maintain both sensory and motor tonus. The brain must receive sensory feedback from the skin in order to make such adjustments as may be called for in response to the information it receives. When a leg "falls asleep" or grows numb, the sensory cutoff results in difficulty in initiating leg

movement because the impulses from the skin, muscles, and joints are not adequately reaching the postcentral gyrus of the brain. The feedback from skin to brain, even in sleep, is continuous.

As a student and teacher of human anatomy I was, in the course of the years, repeatedly struck by the largeness of the tactile area of the brain as shown, usually in green, in textbook illustrations. No one seemed to have made any significant comment on this. It was not until the middle 1940's, when I commenced to draw together the data bearing on the development

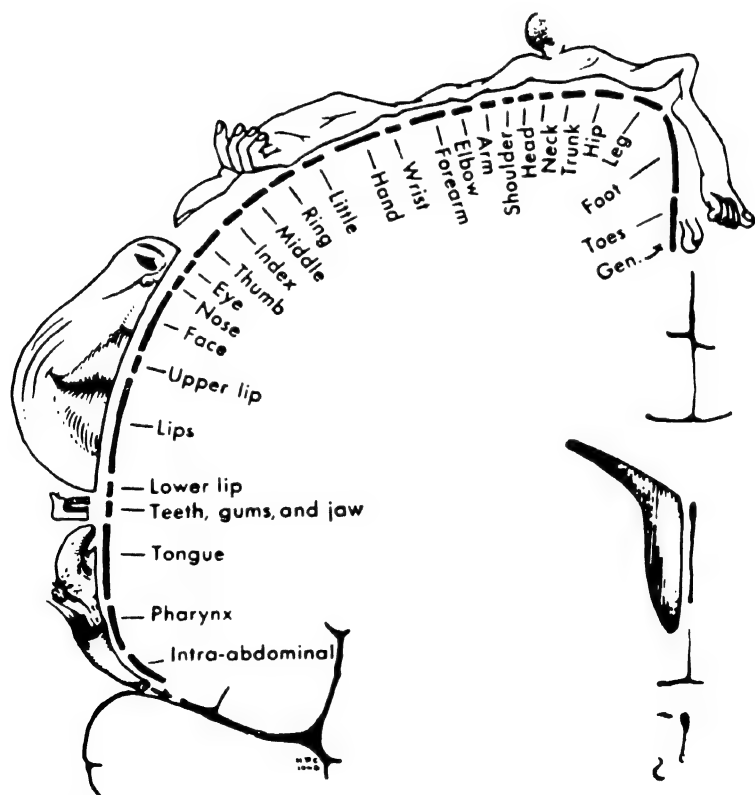


FIGURE 1. The sensory homunculus drawn upon the profile of one hemisphere. The underlying solid lines indicate the extent of cortical representation.

of human behavior,\* that the recurrence of stray bits of evidence from a large variety of different sources impressed upon me the importance of the skin not only in the development of physical functions, but also in the development of behavioral ones. I delivered a lecture on this subject at the University of Texas Medical School at Galveston in April 1952. This was subsequently published in the journal issued by the School. The response to the lecture and to the published article encouraged me to proceed with the collection of the findings which are presented in this book, and which serve, I hope, to throw some light on an aspect of human development that has been largely underappreciated.

What is this aspect? It is quite simply the effect of tactile experience upon human behavioral development.

Our approach to the skin in this book is quite the opposite of that which psychosomatic medicine has so illuminatingly made, the demonstration that what goes on in the mind may express itself in the skin in many different ways. The psychosomatic approach constitutes an invaluable contribution to our understanding concerning the influence of the mind upon the body—for the purposes of discussion we may preserve the artificial separation of mind *and* body—and of the extraordinary sensitivity of the skin in reacting to centrally originating nervous disturbances. That distressing thoughts may break out as boils in the skin, that urticaria, psoriasis, and many other skin disorders may originate in the mind, is no longer the novel idea it was when, some fifty years ago, I read of this relationship in W. J. O'Donovan's pioneering little book, *Dermatological Neuroses*. Since 1927, when O'Donovan's book was published, considerable progress has been made, much of it admirably set out in Maximillian Obermayer's book, *Psychocutaneous Medicine*. The psychosomatic approach to the study of the skin may be

\*Delivered as a course on socialization at Harvard University in 1945, and subsequently published in my book, *The Direction of Human Development* (New York: Harper & Bros., 1955; revised edition, New York: Hawthorn Books, 1970).

regarded as centrifugal; that is, it proceeds from the mind outwards to the integument. What we shall be concerned with in the present book is the opposite approach, namely from the skin to the mind; in other words, the centripetal approach.

The question we are most concerned to ask and answer in this book is, What influence do the various kinds of cutaneous

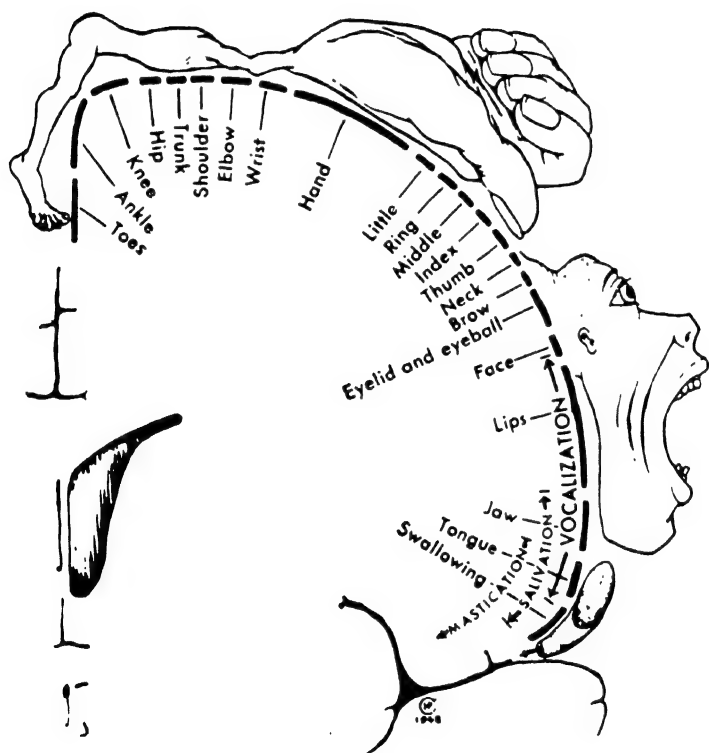


FIGURE 2. The motor homunculus. While there is a close correspondence between sensory and motor representation, the correspondence is not complete. The representation of sensation refers to specific areas and parts, whereas the motor representation refers to the movements of those parts. (From W. Penfield and T. Rasmussen, *The Cerebral Cortex of Man*. New York: The Macmillan Co., 1950, p. 214. By permission.)

experiences which the organism undergoes, especially in early life, have upon its development? Primarily we are concerned to discover: (1) What kind of skin stimulations are necessary for the healthy development of the organism, both physically and behaviorally? and (2) What are the effects, if any, of the want or insufficiency of particular kinds of skin stimulation?

One of the best ways of discovering whether or not a particular kind of experience is necessary or basic to any particular species and its members, is to determine how widely distributed it is in the Class of animals (in the present instance, the mammals) to which the species under investigation belongs; what is phylogenetically basic is likely to be physiologically significant, and significant perhaps in other functional respects as well.

The specific question to which we seek an answer is: Must the member of the species *Homo sapiens* undergo, in the course of early development, certain kinds of tactile experiences in order to develop as a healthy human being? If such experiences are necessary, of what kind are they? For some light on these questions we may first turn to the observations made on other animals.

**RATS AND SERENDIPITY.** What started me thinking about the skin was the serendipitous reading, in a totally different connection, of a 1921-1922 paper by the anatomist Frederick S. Hammett, of the Wistar Institute of Anatomy in Philadelphia. Hammett was interested in discovering what would be the effects of total removal of both the thyroid and parathyroid glands from albino rats of the genetically homogeneous Wistar stock. Hammett noted that following the operation some of the animals did not, as they ought to have done, die. It had been thought by many investigators that such a thyroparathyroidectomy must invariably prove fatal, presumably owing to the action of some toxic substance upon the nervous system.

Upon inquiry Hammett found that the rats that had undergone the thyroparathyroidectomies had been drawn from two separate colonies, and that the greater number of the survivors came from what was called the Experimental Colony. In this



colony the animals were customarily petted and gentled. In contrast, the animals exhibiting the higher mortality rate were drawn from what was called the Standard Stock, a group whose only human contact was that incidental to routine feeding and cage-cleaning by an attendant. These animals were timid, apprehensive, and high-strung. When picked up they were tense and resistant, and frequently exhibited fear and rage by biting. "The picture," as Hammett put it, "as a whole is one of constant high irritability and neuromuscular tension."

The behavior of the gentled rats was strikingly different from that of the Standard Stock animals. The former had been gentled for five generations. When handled, the gentled animals were relaxed and yielding. They were not easily frightened. As Hammett noted, "They give a uniform picture of placidity. The threshold of the neuromuscular reaction to potentially disturbing stimuli is almost prohibitively high."

With human beings it was very evident that the gentled rats felt secure in the hands not only of those who fondled them, but of everyone. The laboratory attendant had raised them under conditions in which they were frequently handled, stroked, and had kindly sounds uttered to them, and they responded with fearlessness, friendliness, and a complete lack of neuromuscular tension or irritability. The exact opposite was true of the ungentled rats, who had received no attention whatever from human beings, except that involved in feeding and cage-cleaning. These animals were frightened and bewildered, anxious and tense in the presence of people.

Let us see what happened when thyroid and parathyroid glands were removed in the 304 animals operated from both groups. Within forty-eight hours of operation 79 percent of the irritable rats died, while only 13 percent of the gentled rats died—a difference of 66 percent of survivals in favor of the gentled animals. When the parathyroids alone were removed, within forty-eight hours 76 percent of the irritable rats died while only 13 percent of the gentled rats died, a difference of 63 percent.

Standard Stock rats, placed at weaning in the Experimental Colony and gentled, became tame, cooperative and relaxed, and

resistant to the effects of the parathyroid gland removal.

In a second series of experiments, Hammett investigated the mortality rate in parathyroidectomized wild Norway rats that had been caged for one or two generations. The wild Norway rat, it is well known, is a notoriously excitable creature. Of a total of 102 wild Norway rats, 92 animals, or 90 percent, died within forty-eight hours, most of the survivors succumbing within two or three weeks of operation.

Hammett concluded that the stability of the nervous system induced in rats by gentling and petting produces in them a marked resistance to the loss of the parathyroid secretion. In excitable rats this loss usually results in death from acute parathyroid tetany in less than forty-eight hours.

Subsequent experience and observation at the Wistar Institute showed that, the more handling and petting rats receive, the better they do in the laboratory situation.

Here, then, was something more than a clue to the understanding of the role played by tactile stimulation in the development of the organism. Gentle handling of rats could make all the difference between life and death following the removal of important endocrine glands. This discovery was striking enough. But what was equally remarkable was the influence of gentling upon behavioral development. Gentling produced gentle, unexcitable animals; lack of gentling resulted in fearful, excitable animals.

These important findings, it seemed to me, were worth following up. There were innumerable unanswered questions, principally involving the mechanism, the physiology, by which handling or gentling could produce such significant differences in organismal and behavioral responses as Hammett had recorded. Since, apart from the Wistar Institute observations by Hammett and his colleagues, there was literally nothing in print that could throw any light on such questions, I began to make inquiries among animal breeders, among people who had been raised on farms, veterinarians, husbandrymen, and the staffs of zoos—the results were illuminating.

LICKING AND LOVING. Reading the Wistar Institute studies of Hammett, it occurred to me that the "washing" the mammalian mother gives her young, virtually from the moment they are born, in the form of licking, isn't washing at all, but something fundamentally very different and very necessary; that "washing" in the sense of cleaning was not the real function of licking, but that licking served very much more profound purposes. It seemed a reasonable hypothesis that, as Hammett's observations suggested, the proper kind of cutaneous stimulation is essential for the adequate organic and behavioral development of the organism. It seemed likely that the licking mammalian mothers give their newborn, and which they continue for durable periods thereafter, probably serves a basic series of functions, since it is universal among mammals with the exception of man. In that exception, I reasoned, there probably also lay an interesting story, and indeed there does, as we shall later see.

As soon as I commenced my inquiries among persons with long experience of animals I found a remarkable unanimity in the observations they reported. The substance of these observations was that the newborn animal must be licked if it is to survive, that if for some reason it remains unlicked, particularly in the perineal region (the region between the external genitalia and the anus), it is likely to die of a functional failure of the genitourinary system and/or the gastrointestinal system. Breeders of chihuahua dogs were particularly insistent upon this, for according to them the mothers often make little or no attempt to lick their young. Hence there is a high mortality rate among these puppies, caused by failure to eliminate, unless some substitute for maternal licking, such as stroking by the human hand, is provided.

The evidence indicated that the genitourinary system especially simply would not function in the absence of cutaneous stimulation. The most interesting observations on this matter soon became available in the form of an unpremeditated experiment carried out by Professor James A. Reyniers of the Lobund Laboratories of Bacteriology of the University of Notre Dame, Indiana. Professor Reyniers and his colleagues were interested

in raising germ-free animals, and in 1946 and 1949 they published their findings in two separate monographs. In the early days of their experiments these workers' labors came to naught because all the experimental animals died of a functional failure of the genitourinary and gastrointestinal tracts. It was not until a former zoo-worker brought her own experience to bear upon the solution of this problem, advising the Notre Dame group to stroke the genitals and perineal region of the young animals with a wisp of cotton after each feeding, that urination and defecation occurred. In response to an inquiry, Professor Reyniers wrote me:

With respect to the constipation problem in hand-reared newborn mammals the following may be of some interest: Rats, mice, rabbits, and those mammals depending upon the mother for sustenance in the early days of life apparently have to be taught to defecate and urinate. In the early period of this work we did not know this and consequently lost our animals. The unstimulated handled young die with an occlusion of the ureter and a distended bladder. Although we had for years seen mothers licking their young about the genitals I thought that this was a matter largely of cleanliness. On closer observation, however, it appeared that during such stimulation the young defecated and urinated. Consequently, about twelve years ago, we started to stroke the genitals of the young after each hourly feeding with a wisp of cotton and we were able to elicit elimination. From this point on we have had no trouble with this problem.

Failure of the genitourinary tract to function when newborn mammals were removed, immediately after birth, from contact with their mothers was soon also demonstrated by McCance and Otley. These investigators suggested that normally the licking and other attentions of the mother stimulated an increase in the excretion of urea as a consequence of the change in blood flow to the kidney.

Motherless kittens and other animals have been successfully raised by the appropriate cutaneous stimulation administered by a surrogate "mother." In an engaging account of his rescue of a newborn abandoned kitten from the bushes, Larry Rhine

tells how he called up the A.S.P.C.A. after feeding the kitten from a doll's bottle, and having announced that Moses, as he had named him, was eating quite normally, received the reply, "Of course he is. Your problem is not with the eating. You see, a kitten's first eliminations are stimulated by the mother cat. Now, if you'd like to do the same with a cotton swab dipped in warm water you might be able to . . ." And for the next few days Mr. Rhine was up every two hours, with a cup of warm water and a cotton swab, feeding, swabbing and sleeping—and Moses, who, appropriately enough, had been found in the rushes, flourished.

Observation of the frequency with which the mother licks different parts of the kitten's body reveals a definite pattern. The region receiving most licking is the genital and perineal region; next in order comes the region around the mouth, then the underbelly, and finally the back and sides. The rate of licking seems to be genetically determined, about three to four licks a second. In albino rats the rate is six to seven licks a second.

Rosenblatt and Lehrman found that, during a fifteen-minute observation session, maternal rats lick their newborn pups for an average of two minutes and ten seconds in the anogenital region and lower abdomen, for about twenty-five seconds to the rear end of the back, about sixteen seconds on the upper abdomen, and about twelve seconds on the back of the head.

Schneirla, Rosenblatt, and Tobach mention, among the criteria defining maternal behavior in the cat, exaggerated licking of self and of young. We shall return to a consideration of the significance of self-licking later. These observers found that between 27 and 53 percent of the time was spent in licking; no other activity approached licking in the amount of time devoted to it.

Rheingold, in reporting her observations on a cocker spaniel, a beagle, and three Shetland sheep dogs (Shelties), states that licking started on the day of birth and occurred infrequently after the forty-second day. The area most commonly licked was the perineal region.

Turning to the order of mammals to which man belongs, the

primates, Phyllis Jay reports, on Indian langurs observed in the field under natural conditions, that langur mothers lick their young from the hour of their birth. The same appears to be true of baboons under natural conditions. "Every few minutes she explores the newborn infant's body, parts its fur with her fingers, licks, and nuzzles it."

Interestingly enough, the great apes lick their young immediately after birth, but not much thereafter. The ubiquity of the practice among the mammals testifies to its basic nature.

The self-licking in which many mammals indulge, in the nonpregnant or parturitive state, while having the effect of keeping the animal clean, is probably more specifically designed to keep the sustaining systems of the body—the gastrointestinal, genitourinary, respiratory, circulatory, digestive, reproductive, nervous, and endocrine systems—adequately stimulated. What this means in actual end effects is perhaps best illustrated by the developmental failure which follows any significant restraint of self-licking. A striking behavioral feature of both the pregnant rat and the pregnant cat is intensified self-licking of the genito-abdominal region as pregnancy progresses. The significance of this self-licking may be conjectured as serving to stimulate and improve the functional responses of the organ systems especially involved in the pregnancy during labor, delivery, and parturient periods. It is known that after the birth of the infant or litter, suckling and other stimulation of the genito-abdominal regions of the body serve to maintain lactation and cause the growth of the structures of the breast and mammary glands. There is, however, no evidence that sensory stimulation contributes to mammary development during pregnancy. Drs. Lorraine L. Roth and Jay S. Rosenblatt inquired into this matter experimentally. In a series of ingenious experiments these investigators put neck collars on pregnant rats in such a manner that they were prevented from licking themselves. It was found that the mammary glands of collared rats were about 50 percent less developed than those of control animals.

Since collars would undoubtedly produce some stress effect,

other uncollared pregnant rats were subjected to stress effects, while still others were fitted with notched collars which allowed them to lick themselves. In none of these, nor in the normal uncollared groups, was the inhibition of mammary development anywhere nearly as great as in the collared group.

Birch and his collaborators have shown that when the female rat is fitted with a light collar that prevents self-licking of the abdomen and posterior erogenous zone, even though the collar is removed permanently for delivery and thereafter, such females make very poor mothers. They carry materials but fail to build regular nests, spreading the materials around very loosely instead. They do not nurse their young to any extent, but seem to be disturbed when the newborn pups happen to reach them, and tend to move away. The pups would invariably die were it not for artificial interference by the experimenter. Hence, depriving the pregnant female of the self-stimulation of her body, which provides a normal preparation for maternal behavior, seems also to deprive her of orientations that would otherwise promote the fluid-licking, afterbirth-eating, and other activities underlying the transition to the after-care period.

From such experiments it is clear that cutaneous self-stimulation of the mother's body is an important factor in contributing to the development of the optimum functioning of her sustaining systems, not only before and after pregnancy but equally so during pregnancy. The question immediately arises whether this may not also be the case during these same periods in the human female? It is a question to which the answer seems to be in the affirmative.

It is evident that in mammals generally cutaneous stimulation is important at all stages of development, but particularly important during the early days of the life of the newborn, during pregnancy, during labor, delivery, and during the nursing period. Indeed, the more we learn about the effects of cutaneous stimulation, the more pervasively significant for healthy development do we find it to be. For example, in one of the most recent studies reported, it was found that early

infantile cutaneous stimulation exerts a highly beneficial influence upon the immunological system, having important consequences for resistance to infectious and other diseases. The study indicated that rats who had been handled in infancy showed a higher serum antibody titre (standard) in every case, after primary and secondary immunization, than those who had not been handled in infancy. Thus the immunological responsiveness of the adult appears to be significantly modified by early cutaneous experience. Such immunological competence may be produced through the mechanism of conductor substances and hormones affecting the thymus gland, a gland which is critical in the establishment of immunological function, and also through the mediation of that part of the brain known as the hypothalamus.

Indeed, the evidence showing the greater resistance to disease of subjects given early cutaneous stimulation is striking, but is perhaps complicated by the fact that the cutaneously stimulated animal enjoys a great many other correlated advantages, which undoubtedly also play a role in contributing to the higher resistance of the stimulated organism. As many investigators have confirmed, handling or gentling of rats and other animals in their early days results in significantly greater increases in weight, more activity, less fearfulness, greater ability to withstand stress, and greater resistance to physiological damage.

In sheep, although active maternal assistance is not essential in order for the newborn lamb to find the teats and suck for the first time, the process is facilitated by licking and by directional orientation of the ewe toward the lamb. In a series of experiments Alexander and Williams found that it was the combination of the two factors, the licking and the directional orientation—that is, the standing of the ewe facing the kid—that significantly facilitated the progress of the kid toward successful sucking. Neither orientation nor licking alone, which these investigators later refer to as “grooming,” facilitated the drive toward sucking to any significant extent. Licking and maternal orientation in every case resulted in substantially greater teat-seeking activity, and also in a tendency towards an earlier in-



crease in weight than in unlicked lambs.

The importance of intercutaneous or reciprocal cutaneous stimulation, or physical contact, between mother and young, among birds as well as mammals, has been demonstrated by many investigators. Blauvelt has shown that, in goats, if the kid is removed from the mother for only a few hours before she has a chance to lick it and the kid is then restored to her, "she seems to have no behavioral resources to do anything further for the newborn." In sheep Liddell found the same thing, and interestingly enough, Maier observed that the same held true of hens and their chicks. Maier found that when broody hens are prevented from having physical contact with their chicks, even though all other visual clues are left intact, and they are situated in adjacent cages, the hens' broody response quickly disappears. Furthermore, Maier found that hens kept in close physical contact with their chicks and unable to leave them remained broody for a longer period of time than those hens who were free to leave their chicks whenever they chose.

Physical contact, then, appears to act as a principal regulator of broodiness. Stimulation of the skin apparently constitutes an essential condition in causing the pituitary gland to secrete the hormone most important for the initiation and maintenance of broodiness, namely prolactin. This is the same hormone associated with the initiation and maintenance of nursing in mammals, including the human mother.

Collias showed that, in goats and sheep, mothers establish the identity of their own young immediately after birth, largely by contact, and thereafter vigorously repel any alien young that may approach them. The findings of many independent researchers indicate that there exist certain types of normal species-specific behavior dependent upon particular experiences during critical periods in the life of the individual animal. It has been found that changes in the natural environment at these times often result in the development of abnormal, species-atypical behavior. Hersher, Moore, and Richmond separated twenty-four domestic goats from their newborn kids five to ten minutes immediately following birth, for periods ranging from

a half hour to an hour. Two months later these mothers were observed to nurse their own kids less and alien kids more than nonseparated mothers. A most interesting and unforeseen result of this experiment was the appearance of "rejecting" behavior, that is, nursing neither their own nor other kids, among mothers of the nonseparated group. Separation of these highly gregarious animals seems to have influenced the structure of the herd as a whole, "changing the behavior of 'control' animals whose early *post partum* experiences had not deliberately been disrupted, but whose environment had been affected in turn by abnormal maternal and filial behavior produced in the experimental members of the group."

In an ingenious experiment designed to determine whether the critical period for the development of individual specific maternal behavior could be prolonged in sheep and goats, Hersher, Richmond, and Moore found that this could, indeed, be achieved by enforced contact between dam and young and the prevention of butting behavior.

In the domestic collie, McKinney has shown that, immediately after whelping, removal of the pups for little more than an hour seriously retards the recovery of the mother, a recovery which is accelerated by the rooting, nuzzling, and nursing of the young. McKinney suggested that similar undesirable effects may be produced in human mothers as a consequence of the practice of removing their babies from them at birth without permitting the continued contact that is so urgent a need in the newborn. This suggestion has been fully confirmed by recent research.

In the rhesus monkey Harry F. Harlow and his co-workers, on the basis of their direct observations, "postulate that contact-clinging is the primary variable that binds mother to infant and infant to mother." Maternal affection, they find, is at a maximum during close bodily face-to-face contacts between mother and infant, and maternal affection appears to wane progressively as this form of bodily interchange decreases.

Maternal affection is defined by these authors as a function of many different conditions, involving external incentive stim-

ulation, different conditions of experience, and many endocrinological factors. External incentives are those relating to the infant, and involve contact-clinging, warmth, sucking, and visual and auditory cues. Experimental factors relating to the maternal behavior probably embrace the mother's entire experience. Here it is probable that her own early experiences are of special importance, as well as her relationships with each individual infant she bears, and her cumulative experiences gained from raising successive infants. Endocrinological factors relate both to pregnancy and parturition, and to the resumption of a normal ovulatory cycle.

Indeed, the mother's early experiences are of considerable importance for the subsequent development of her own offspring, right into adulthood. In a series of elegant experiments, Drs. Victor H. Denenberg and Arthur E. Whimbey showed that the offspring of handled rats, whether in relation to the natural or to a foster mother, exhibited a higher weight at weaning than pups reared by mothers that had not been handled in infancy; they also defecated more and were significantly less active than the offspring of nonhandled mothers.

Ader and Conklin found that the offspring of rats that had been handled during pregnancy, whether they remained with their natural mothers or were cross-fostered to other females, were significantly less excitable than the offspring of unhandled rats.

Werboff and his co-workers found that handling of pregnant mice throughout the gestation period resulted in an increased number of live fetuses and surviving offspring. The decrease in weight these workers observed may, as they suggest, be due to the increased litter size.

Sayler and Salmon found that young mice raised in a communal nest, in which females combined their litters, showed faster rates of growth during the first twenty days than young raised by single females, even when the ratio of mothers to young was the same. The investigators think that the differences in body weight are most likely related to the nutritional benefit of additional and higher quality milk provided by more than one

mother. They also think that tactile stimuli may be operative, as well as thermal ones, the presence of additional littermates and mothers serving to insulate the pups so that more metabolic energy could be devoted to growth. Mice normally spend a great proportion of time in bodily contact with other mice; when isolated from such contact for durable periods of time they show an increased sensitivity to tactile stimuli, but not to photic ones.

Weininger found that male rats gentled for three weeks following their weaning at twenty-three days had, at forty-four days, a mean weight twenty grams higher than the ungentled control group; furthermore, the growth of the gentled was greater than that of the ungentled rats. In an open-field test gentled rats ventured significantly closer to the brilliantly lit center of the open-field setup, thus showing more of a tendency to ignore the natural habit of their species to cling to walls and avoid light. Rectal temperatures were significantly greater in the gentled rats, suggesting a possible change in the metabolic rate of these animals.

When exposed to stressful stimuli (immobilization, and total food and water deprivation for forty-eight hours) and autopsied immediately thereafter, the gentled rats showed much less damage to the cardiovascular and gastrointestinal systems than the ungentled rats.

Cardiovascular and other organic damage under prolonged stress, as Hans Selye and others have abundantly demonstrated, may be considered an end product of the action of the adrenocorticotrophic hormone (ACTH); that is, the hormone secreted by the pituitary gland which acts upon the cortex of the adrenal gland to cause it to secrete cortisone. This interactive relationship is sometimes called the sympathetico-adrenal axis. Weininger suggests that the relative immunity to stress damage exhibited by the gentled animals was probably due to their lesser output of ACTH from the pituitary in response to the same alarming situation with which the ungentled animals were confronted. If this were in fact the case, it would be expected that the adrenal glands of gentled and ungentled rats following

stress would show those of the ungentled rats having been stimulated by more ACTH output, to be heavier, and upon examination this was, indeed, found to be the case. "A major change in hypothalamic functioning, involving reduction or inhibition of massive sympathetic discharge in response to an alarming stimulus (and hence decreased ACTH output from the pituitary), is predicted to account for the results mentioned above."

The process is much more complicated than that, but, reduced to its essential elements, the relation between the pituitary-adrenal secretions in gentling and stressful situations holds true. Gentled animals respond with an increased functional efficiency in the organization of all systems of the body. Ungentled animals fail to undergo organization expressing itself in functional efficiency, and are therefore in all respects less able to meet the assaults and insults of the environment. Hence, when we speak of "licking and love," or skin (cutaneous tactile) stimulation, we are quite evidently speaking of a fundamental and essential ingredient of affection, and equally clearly of an essential element in the healthy development of every organism.

Fuller found that puppies isolated from all contact shortly after birth, and subsequently stroked and handled by human beings, did better on tests following their emergence from isolation than puppies that had been neither stroked nor handled.

The workers at the Cornell Behavior Farm found that, with no licking at all (although licking for one hour after birth is sufficient) many newborn lambs fail to stand and subsequently die. While it is possible for some lambs to stand without licking, it is notable that when the newborn makes an effort to rise its mother will often keep it down with her foot until she has licked it. Barron found that lambs that had been dried off with a towel (the equivalent of licking) rise on their four feet before lambs who have not been dried off.

The very real effects of early tactile experience have been impressively demonstrated by a series of independent experiments. Karas, for example, found that rats handled during the first five days showed a maximal effect of emotionality, as mea-

sured by avoidance conditioning, as compared with animals handled at other times during infancy. Levine and Lewis found that animals handled during days 2 to 5 after birth showed a significant depletion of adrenal ascorbic acid in response to severe cold stress at twelve days of age, as compared with nonhandled animals and animals handled after the first five days, who did not show a significant depletion reaction to stress till the sixteenth day of life. Bell, Reisner, and Linn found that twenty-four hours after electroconvulsive shock blood sugar level was significantly higher in nonhandled animals and animals handled at times other than the first five days, than in animals handled during the first five days. Denenberg and Karas observed that rats handled during the first ten days of life weighed the most, learned best, and survived longest.

The manner in which the young of all mammals snuggle up to and cuddle the body of the mother as well as the bodies of their siblings or of any other introduced animal strongly suggests that cutaneous stimulation is an important biological *need*, for both their physical and behavioral development. Almost every animal enjoys being stroked or otherwise having its skin pleurably stimulated. Dogs appear to be insatiable in their appetite for stroking, cats will relish it and purr, as will innumerable other animals both domestic and wild, apparently enjoying the stroking at least as much as they do self-licking. The supreme note of confidence offered a human by a cat is to rub itself against your leg.

The touch of a human hand is very much more effective than the application of an impersonal mechanical apparatus, as for example in milking, where it is well known among experts and dairy farmers that hand-milked cows give more and richer terminal milk than machine-milked cows. Hendrix, Van Valck, and Mitchell have reported that horses exposed to human handling immediately after birth developed unusual adult behavior. Among the adult traits observed in these handled horses were responsible behavior in emergencies without loss of cooperative tractability at other times, and inventive behavior for equine-to-human communication in situations of urgency.

Dolphins, as I know from personal observation, love to be gently stroked. At the Communications Institute in Miami I enjoyed the opportunity of making friends within a few minutes with Elvar, an adult male dolphin who occupied a small tank all to himself. Because Elvar playfully habitually splashed them, visitors were customarily provided with oilskins. Elvar adjusted his splashes to the size of the visitor: small children would receive small splashes, middle-sized children middle-sized splashes, and adults, large ones. For some reason I received no splash at all. Dr. John Lilly, the director, stated that this had never happened before. Approaching Elvar with all the affection, interest, and respect he deserved, I proceeded to stroke the top of his head. This was very much to his liking. During the remainder of the visit Elvar proceeded to expose every part of his body for me to stroke, leaning over sideways so that I could stroke him under his flippers, which he seemed particularly to enjoy. It is sad to have to record that some months afterwards Elvar caught cold from a human visitor and died.

Drs. A. F. McBride and H. Kritzler of the Duke University Marine Laboratory at Beaufort, North Carolina, have recorded, of a two-year-old female dolphin, that she "became so fond of being caressed by the observer that she would frequently rear cautiously out of the water to rub her chin on the knuckles of his clenched fist." The same observers recorded that "dolphins are very fond of rubbing their bodies on various objects, so a backscratcher, constructed of three stout sweeper's brushes fixed to a slab of rock with the bristles directed upward, was installed in the tank. The young dolphins took to rubbing themselves on these brushes as soon as the adults discovered their purpose."

Similar behavior has been reported in gray whales in the waters of Laguna San Ignacio, west coast Baja California, 430 nautical miles south of the California border. Here a group of friendly whales, and especially an adult female, sought out a group of small boats and their occupants in order to be scratched. They would scratch themselves against the boats,

and then rise out of the water to be scratched by hand or with a long-handled neck brush. "The pleasure of a touch-stimulus," writes Raymond Gilmore, the author of this fascinating report, "through body-contact is obvious among gray whales." The nine color photos illustrating this speak for themselves.

Quite fascinating is an observation made by Mr. A. Gunner relating to the fleas carried by hedgehogs. He writes:

I have kept and observed hedgehogs for some fifty or sixty years and am convinced that de-fleaing hedgehogs is not good for them. There is some essential factor which the fleas provide. It may be—and I think it is—a skin circulation stimulus that is missing in an animal unable to nudge, massage, scratch, rub or otherwise stimulate the skin to keep its labyrinth of capillaries properly active.

A zoologist friend assures me that I may be right, as the Australian echidna, some armadillos, and particularly that mammalian curiosity the *pangolin* tolerate insect populations in the overlaps at crevices of their armoured bodies and that the cleaned up and deloused animal does not long survive.

In attempting to follow up this observation I regret to say I could obtain no further information of any kind on the subject, but, like the zoologist friend of Mr. Gunner, I rather suspect that his observation is a sound one. The close (commensal) association of birds with other animals, from crocodiles whose teeth they pick, to sheep on whose backs they often alight, picking debris and insects from their bodies with the obvious approval of their hosts, the "grooming" of monkeys and apes, or the loving embrace—all these forms of behavior indicate that a basic and complex need is involved.

What emerges from the observations and experiments reported here—and there are many more with which we shall deal in subsequent pages—is that cutaneous stimulation in the various forms in which the newborn and young receive it is of prime importance for their healthy physical and behavioral development. It appears probable that for human beings tactile stimulation is of fundamental significance for the development



of healthy emotional or affectional relationships, that "licking," in its actual and in its figurative sense, and love are closely connected; in short, that one learns to love not by instruction but by being loved. As Professor Harry Harlow has put it, from the "intimate attachment of the child to the mother, multiple learned and generalized affectional responses are formed."

In a series of valuable studies Harlow has demonstrated the significance of physical contact between the monkey mother and her infant for the subsequent healthy development of the latter. During the course of his studies Harlow noticed that the laboratory-raised baby monkeys showed a strong attachment to the cloth pads (folded gauze diapers) which were used to cover the hardware-cloth floors and cages. When an attempt was made to remove and replace the pads for sanitary purposes the infants clung to them and engaged in "violent temper tantrums." This is, of course, similar to the "security-blanket" behavior of many small children (see pp. 276-277). It had also been discovered that infants raised on a bare wire-mesh cage floor survive with difficulty, if at all, during the first five days of life. When a wire-mesh cone was introduced, the baby did better; and when this was covered with terry-cloth, husky, healthy babies developed. At this point Harlow decided to build a terry-cloth surrogate mother, with a light bulb behind her which radiated heat. The result was a mother, "soft, warm, and tender, a mother with infinite patience, a mother available twenty-four hours a day, a mother that never scolded her infant and never struck or bit her baby in anger."

A second surrogate mother was built entirely of wire mesh, without the terry-cloth "skin," and hence lacking in contact comfort. The remainder of the story is best told in Harlow's own words. He writes:

In our initial experiment, the dual-mother surrogate condition, a cloth mother and a wire mother were placed in different cubicles attached to the infant's living cage. . . . For four newborn monkeys the cloth mother lactated and the wire mother did not; and for the other four, this condition was reversed. In either

condition the infant received all its milk through the mother surrogate as soon as it was able to maintain itself in this way, a capability achieved within two or three days except in the case of very immature infants. Supplementary feedings were given until the milk intake from the mother surrogate was adequate. Thus, the experiment was designed as a test of the relative importance of the variables of contact comfort and nursing comfort. During the first 14 days of life the monkey's cage floor was covered with a heating pad wrapped in a folded gauze diaper, and thereafter the cage floor was bare. The infants were always free to leave the heating pad or cage floor to contact either mother, and the time spent on the surrogate mothers was automatically recorded. Figure 3 shows the total time spent on the cloth and wire mothers under the two conditions of feeding. These data make it obvious that contact comfort is a variable of overwhelming importance in the development of affectional responses, whereas lactation is a variable of negligible importance. With age and opportunity to learn, subjects with the lactating wire mother showed decreasing responsiveness to her and increasing responsiveness to the nonlactating cloth mother, a finding completely contrary to any interpretation of derived drive in which the mother-form becomes conditioned to hunger-thirst reduction. The persistence of these differential responses throughout 165 consecutive days of testing is evident in Figure 4.

We were not surprised [writes Harlow], to discover that contact comfort was an important basic affectional or love variable, but we did not expect it to overshadow so completely the variable of nursing; indeed, the disparity is so great as to suggest that the primary function of nursing as an affectional variable is that of insuring frequent and intimate body contact of the infant with the mother. Certainly, man cannot live by milk alone. Love is an emotion that does not need to be bottle- or spoon-fed, and we may be sure that there is nothing to be gained by giving lip service to love.

By far the most important of Harlow's observations was the finding that his infant monkeys valued tactile stimulation more than they did nourishment, for they preferred to cling to "mothers" who provided physical contact without nourish-

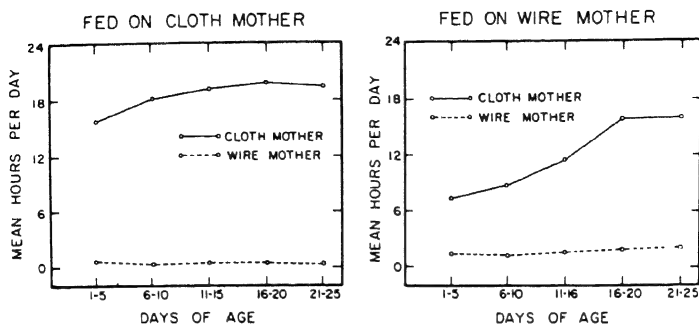


FIGURE 3. Time spent on cloth and wire mother surrogates. (From H. F. Harlow and R. R. Zimmermann, "The Development of Affectional Responses in Infant Monkeys," *Proceedings, American Philosophical Society*, 102:501-509, 1958. By permission.)

ment to wire ones who did supply nourishment. Harlow goes so far as to suggest that the primary purpose of nursing is to ensure frequent body contact between infant and mother. Such contact may not be the primary function of nursing, but it is certainly a fundamentally important one, a matter we shall discuss in greater detail later.

Finally, Harlow concludes:

We now know that women in the working classes are not needed in the house because of their primary mammalian capabilities; and it is possible that in the foreseeable future neonatal nursing will not be regarded as a necessity, but as a luxury—to use Veblen's term—a form of conspicuous consumption limited perhaps to the upper classes.

As we shall see (pp. 59-75), Harlow thoroughly underestimates the importance of breastfeeding in both animals and man, but this does not in the least affect the validity of his conclusions concerning the value of body contact between mother and infant. As Harlow and his co-workers have shown, in their normal nursing-couple (mother and infant) rhesus monkeys, nutritional and nonnutritional nipple contacts endure for some three months. These nipple contacts undoubtedly play an

important role in the development of the individual.

When a baby is born a mother is also born. There is considerable evidence that at this time, and for months thereafter, her needs for contact exceed those of the infant. The Harlows observed that during the first few months in the rhesus monkey the mother's need for intimate contact surpassed that of the infant, and served to produce maternal protection. In the human mother the need for intimate contact is undoubtedly much greater and considerably more prolonged than it is in other mammals, serving not only important psychological functions, but also many physiological ones, such as arresting of the postpartum hemorrhage, contraction of the uterus, detachment and expulsion of the placenta, improved circulation, etc.

A striking finding of Harlow and his fellow investigators

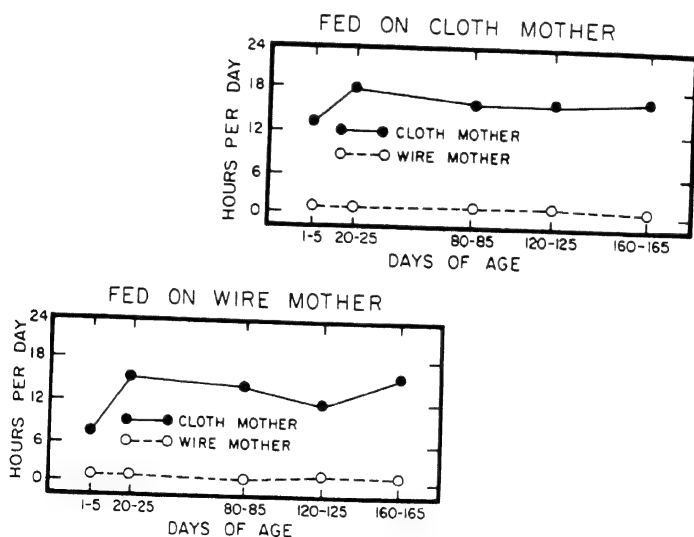


FIGURE 4. Long-Term Contact Time on Cloth and Wire Mother Surrogates. (From H. F. Harlow and R. R. Zimmermann, "The Development of Affectional Responses in Infant Monkeys," *Proceedings, American Philosophical Society*, 102:501-509, 1958. By permission.)

was that when the five utter failures as mothers had their histories traced back to their early experiences it was found that they had been denied the opportunity to develop normal maternal-infant relationships, that they had never known a real monkey mother of their own, and had also been denied normal infant-infant relationships, subsequently having only limited physical association with other monkeys. Two of these mothers were essentially indifferent to their infants, and three were violently abusive. "Failure of normal gratification of contact-clinging in infancy may make it impossible for the adult female to show normal contact relationships with her own infant. Likewise, maternal brutality may stem from inadequate social experience with other infants within the first year of life." Furthermore, these investigators found that none of the motherless-mother animals ever showed normal female sex behavior, such as posturing and responding. They became mothers in spite of themselves. As we shall see, the parallel with such interrelated behaviors in humans is virtually complete, and the significance of these behaviors is virtually identical.

Maternal behavior in mammals is not entirely dependent upon either hormones or learning, but it is more readily and effectively developed by stimulation received by the mother from the young. Roth has shown that maternal behavior is delayed when pups are presented in wire baskets attached to the inside of the female's cage where the female cannot lick or contact them in other ways. Terkel and Rosenblatt found that maternal behavior can be induced more rapidly, in about two days, by confining virgin female rats in narrow cages where they are forced to remain in contact with pups continuously rather than sporadically as in the larger standard cages. Maternal responsiveness to the young varies with the amount of stimulating contact she has with them which permits the various stimuli from the young to exert their effects.

Rosenblatt has proposed the concept of "synchrony" to denote the fact that the mother's behavior is adapted to the needs and behavioral capacities of the young, and that her

behavior changes as these capacities develop in the young. *Synchrony* however is a term which refers to the simultaneity of events in time, and I would suggest that *interdependence* more accurately describes the relationship and the significance of the reciprocal interstimulation that occurs between mother and offspring in the neonatal period. Of course, there is a marvelous synchrony about these reciprocal changes, but their very reciprocity underscores their interdependence. It is the reciprocal interstimulation between mother and infant that leads to the development in each of the changes, somatic and behavioral, which in the absence of such interstimulation will not occur. Hence, the importance of the interstimulation of the nursing couple can hardly be overestimated.

Harlow and his co-workers comment upon the "extremely powerful social response observed throughout the monkey kingdom," namely, that of grooming. This response to their young increased throughout the first thirty days following the birth of the infant, and they suggest that this perhaps represents an intensification of the specific psychological bond between mother and infant.

Phyllis Jay reports that "from the hour of its birth" the mother langur monkey "inspects, licks, grooms, and manipulates the infant. When the newborn is nursing quietly or sleeping, she grooms and strokes it softly without disturbing or waking it. For the first week of life the newborn is never away from its mother or another adult female."

Tactile communication forms an elaborate medium of communication among primates. Sexual presenting, mounting without sex, lip smacking (ear flattening), embracing, genital/-stomach nuzzling, rump nuzzling, mouth/head kissing, rump fingering, hand touching, biting, have been widely observed among primates, and, as Peter Marler, summarizing the evidence, has said, "It would be difficult to overestimate the importance of such tactile signals in maintaining peace and cohesion in primate societies."

As an order, primates are, as Hediger has remarked, contact animals. The young are carried on their mothers' bodies for long periods of time. There is much clinging, riding, and contact with other members of the group. Young animals, and often adults, tend to sit and even sleep together in close contact. There is a great deal of touching and, most characteristically, grooming. Primates groom each other. Grooming not only serves to keep the body free of parasites, dirt, and the like, but it constitutes, as Allison Jolly puts it, "the social cement of primates from lemur to chimpanzee." Anthony has described the development of grooming in the dog-headed baboon, *Papio cynocephalus*, from the infant's suckling the nipple, to grasping the specialized sucking fur, to grooming. The reciprocal pleasure enjoyed in this relation is quite probably related to the later pleasure of grooming and being groomed.

In addition to grooming, primates exhibit a large variety of other contact behaviors, such as patting and nuzzling, especially in greeting behavior. Chimpanzees will not only pat each others' hands, faces, groins, and other parts of the body, but will lay a hand on each others' backs in reassurance, will kiss in affection, and in their passion for being tickled will draw the tickler's hand to their bodies.

Grooming with the hands, which is usual among monkeys and apes, or, as among lemurs, with the specialized comb-like teeth, presents an interesting seriation, for as Jolly has pointed out, the lemurine form of grooming with the teeth really represents a form of licking. This view of grooming may be extended to the finger-picking variety, and finally to the stroking of human beings. In short, it may well be that there has been an evolutionary development from licking, to tooth-combing (as among lemurs), to finger-grooming, to handstroking or caressing, as in chimpanzee, gorilla, and *Homo sapiens*, and that therefore handstroking is to the young of the human species virtually as important a form of experience as licking is to the young of other mammals.

This is a matter into which we shall inquire further. Meanwhile, it would seem evident that one of the elements in the genesis of the ability to love is "licking" or its equivalent in other forms of pleasurable tactile stimulation.



---

## TWO

---

# THE WOMB OF TIME

There are many events in the womb of time, which  
will be deliver'd.

—SHAKESPEARE, *Othello*, 1, iii.

As we have seen in the preceding chapter, licking, or tooth-combing, or grooming of the young soon after they are born and for an appreciable period thereafter, appears to be an indispensably necessary condition for their survival. Such stimulations seem to be equally necessary for the healthy behavioral development of the young. If this is so, why then is it that human mothers neither lick, toothcomb, nor groom their young?

Human mothers do none of these things. Extensive inquiries over many years yielded only two cultures in which mothers sometimes washed their young by licking. In regions in which water is scarce, among the Polar Eskimos and in the Tibetan highlands, mothers sometimes resort to licking their older young children as a substitute for washing them with water drawn from other sources. The fact is that human mothers do not lick their young, though traditional wisdom has not been insensible to the likeness between what the good human mother does and what the mammalian mother of other species does. The parallel is recognized in such phrases as *un ours mal léché*, "an unlicked cub." The French phrase is often employed to describe an ill-mannered person, "a boor," one who is

“gauche,” awkward in his relations with others. Although the notion behind this phrase originally referred to the belief that the young of some animals were born in so undeveloped a form that they had to be licked into shape by the mother,\* later usage conferred upon the phrase a meaning implicitly recognizing the importance of the mother’s gentle ministrations in the development of what might be called “relatability.” George Sarton, the distinguished Belgian-American historian of science, for example, wrote in his private journal, “I have now discovered that the first of August is the saint’s day of the Spaniard Raymond Nonnatus (1200–1240). He was called Nonnatus because he was ‘not-born,’ but removed from his mother’s womb after her death. My own fate was not very different from his, because my mother died soon after my birth and I never knew her. . . . Many of my shortcomings are due to the fact that I had no mother, and that my good father had no time to bother much about me. I am indeed ‘an unlicked bear’ (*un ours mal léché*).”

The question we have to answer here is: What, if any, are the equivalents of “licking” which the human mother gives her child in order to prepare sustaining systems for adequate functioning?

I suggest that one of the equivalents for “licking” is represented by the long period of labor that the parturient human female undergoes. The average duration of labor with the firstborn is fourteen hours; with subsequent-born children the average duration of labor is eight hours. During this period the contractions of the uterus provide massive stimulations of the fetal skin. These uterine contractions serve much the same functions and end effects that licking of the newborn does in other animals. In the womb the fetus has been constantly stimulated by the amniotic fluid and by the growing pressures of its own body against the walls of the uterus. These stimulations are

\*Pliny the Elder (A.D. 23–79) writes in his *Natural History*, Book VIII, 126, “Bears when first born are shapeless masses of white flesh a little larger than white mice, their claws alone being prominent. The mother then licks them gradually into proper shape.”

greatly intensified during the process of labor in order to prepare the sustaining systems for postnatal functioning in ways somewhat different from those which were necessary in the aquatic environment in which the fetus has thus far spent its life. This intensification of cutaneous stimulations is especially necessary in the human fetus because, contrary to general belief, the period of gestation is not completed when the baby is born. It is only half-completed. It will be necessary for us to discuss this matter further, in order to gain some insight into the precarious condition in which the young of human kind is born, and why it is necessary that the human neonate undergo certain kinds of cutaneous stimulation.

THE MEANING OF NEONATAL AND INFANT IMMATURITY IN HUMANS. Why are human beings born in a state so immature that it takes eight to ten months before the human infant can even crawl, and another four to six months before he can walk and talk? That a good many years will elapse before the human child will cease to depend upon others for his very survival constitutes yet another evidence of the fact that humans are born more immature, and remain immature for a longer period, than any other animal.

The newborn elephant and the fallow deer are able to run with the herd shortly after they are born. By the age of six weeks, the infant seal has been taught by his mother to navigate his watery realm for himself. These animals all have long gestation periods, presumably because animals that give birth to small litters are unable to protect them as efficiently as predatory animals, and must therefore give birth to young who are in a fairly mature state. A long gestation period serves to allow for such maturation.

The elephant, which has a gestation period of 515 to 670 days, gives birth to a single infant. In animals such as the fallow deer, which gives birth to a litter of two or three, the gestation period is 230 days. In the seal, which produces only a single pup at a birth, the gestation period varies from 245 to 350 days. Predatory animals, by contrast, are very efficient in protecting

their young, and have a short gestation period. Their litters may vary from three at a birth upwards; the size of the young may be small at birth, and the young may be born in a somewhat immature state. The lion, for example, which generally has a litter of three cubs, has a gestation period of 105 days. Humans have a gestation period of 266½ days, which is distinctly in the class of long gestation periods. Since this is so, what can be the explanation for the extremely immature state in which humans are born? This is a somewhat different question from that which refers to the prolonged immaturity of the young of human kind.

Apes are also born in an immature condition, but remain in that state for a much shorter period than human infants. The average duration of gestation in the gorilla is about 252 days, in the orang-utan about 273 days, and in the chimpanzee 231 days. Labor in the apes generally lasts not more than two hours, which contrasts strikingly with the average of fourteen hours for the firstborn and eight hours for the subsequent born in the human female. Like humans, the apes are monotocous, that is, one infant is usually conceived and born at term, but compared with that of humans the development of the young ape is somewhat more rapid, so that the infant ape takes about one-third to two-thirds of the time the human infant does to develop such traits as lifting the head, rolling, worming along, sitting alone, standing, and walking. Ape mothers tenderly care for their young for several years, and it is not uncommon for breastfeeding to continue for three or more years. Human immaturity in infancy, therefore, may be regarded as an extension of the basic infant immaturity characteristic of all anthropoid forms, characteristic, that is, of the great apes and probably earlier forms of humankind. Among anthropoids the care, feeding, and protection of the young fall exclusively to the females. Only when the females and the young are endangered do the males act to protect them.

While the length of the gestation period lies within the same range in anthropoids and in humans (see Table I), there is a marked difference in the growth of the fetus in the two groups. This is seen in the great acceleration in the rate of growth of

the human fetus, as compared with the anthropoid fetus, towards the end of the gestation period. This is most strikingly seen in the increase in size of the human fetal brain, which by the time of birth has acquired a volume of between 375 and 400 cubic centimeters. Total body weight of the human newborn averages 7 pounds. In the chimpanzee total body weight of the neonate is, on the average, 4.33 pounds (1,800 grams), and the brain volume is about 200 cubic centimeters. In the gorilla the total body weight of the newborn is about 4.75 pounds (1,980 grams), and the brain size at birth would appear to be not much more than in the chimpanzee.

TABLE I. LENGTH OF GESTATION, POSTNATAL GROWTH PERIODS, AND LIFE SPAN IN APE AND HUMAN

Genus	Gestation (days)	Menarche (years)	Eruption of First and Last Permanent Teeth (years)	Completion of General Growth (years)	Life Span (years)
Gibbon	210	8.5	?-8.5	9	30
Orang-Utan	273	?	3.0-9.8	11	30
Chimpanzee	231	8.8	2.9-10.2	11	35
Gorilla	252	9.0	3.0-10.5	11	35
Human	266½	13.5	6.2-20.5	20	75

The smaller size of the anthropoid newborn is probably correlated to some extent with the shorter duration of labor in the anthropoid female. In humans, however, the large body size, and especially the large size of the head at 266½ days of fetal age, necessitate the birth of the child at that time. If it were not born then and it continued to grow at the rate at which it is geared to grow, it could not be born at all—with lethal consequences for the continuation of the human species.

As a result of the evolution of the erect posture in humans, the pelvis has undergone major rearrangement in all its parts. Among these changes has been a narrowing in the pelvic outlet. During parturition the pelvic outlet enlarges somewhat with the relaxation of the pelvic ligaments, enough to permit the

head of the child, with a certain amount of molding and compression, to pass through the birth canal. In adaptation to this situation the skull bones of the human infant, in relation to the membranes in which these bones develop, grow much less than those of the ape infant of the same gestation age. Thus the human infant's skull bones allow for a considerable amount of movement and overlapping in adaptation to the compressive forces that will act upon them during the process of birth. The human infant, then, is born when it is because it must be born at that time; otherwise the rapid rate at which its brain grows would make it impossible for it to be born at all. The brain growth of the anthropoid infant presents no such problems, particularly in view of the mother's generous pelvic arrangements.

Not only does the prolonged period of behavioral immaturity of the human infant reveal how undeveloped and dependent it is at birth, so too does its biochemical and physiological immaturity. For example, a variety of enzymes remain undeveloped in the newborn human. In this the human shares a trait common to a number of other mammals, except that in the human infant, unlike most other mammalian infants thus far investigated, most of these enzymes are not present at all. In guinea pigs and mice, for example, the liver enzymes develop during the first week of life, but require some eight weeks for full development. It appears that in all mammals some factor is present in the uterine environment which represses the formation of liver enzymes in the fetus. In the human infant some liver and duodenal enzymes (amylase) do not appear until several weeks or months have passed. Gastric enzymes are present which are fully capable of dealing with the ingested colostrum and milk from the maternal breast, but these enzymes cannot effectively metabolize foods normally consumed by older children.

All the evidence indicates that, while the duration of the gestation period in humans differs by only about a week or two from that of the great apes, a large number of other factors, all combining to lead to the considerably more prolonged develop-

ment of the human infant, cause it to be born before what is generally believed to be its gestation has been completed. One would think that a creature developing at the rate of the human fetus in the later stages of uterine development and during childhood, should, developmentally, enjoy a much longer period of gestation within the womb. In humans, as compared with apes, every one of the developmental periods—infancy, early childhood, later childhood, adolescence, young adulthood, later adulthood or maturity, and terminal age—with the exception of the developmental period within the womb, is greatly extended in duration. Why not also the period of gestation?

The explanation seems to be that the fetus must be born when its head has reached the maximum size compatible with its passage through the birth canal. This transmigration constitutes no mean accomplishment. Indeed, the passage through the 4 inches of the birth canal is the most hazardous journey a human being ever takes. The evidence suggests that the human fetus is born before its gestation is completed. The rate of growth of the brain is proceeding at such a pace during the last month of pregnancy that its continuation within the womb would render birth impossible. Hence, the survival of the fetus and the mother requires the termination of gestation within the womb when the limit of head size compatible with birth has been attained, and long before maturation occurs.

The process of evolution by which the increase in the length of human developmental periods has been accomplished is known as *neoteny*. The term refers to the process whereby the functional and structural features of the young (fetal or juvenile) of ancestral forms are retained in the developmental stages of the maturing individual, from infancy to adulthood. Man's large head, flat face, roundheadedness, small face and teeth, absence of brow ridges, thinness of skull bones, late suture closure, relative hairlessness, thin nails, prolonged period of educability, playfulness, love of fun, and many other traits all constitute evidence of neoteny.

The gestation period, then, is also greatly extended in hu-

mans, except that its latter half is completed outside the womb. Gestation, as we have usually understood it, is not it would seem completed at birth, but is continued from gestation within the womb, *uterogestation*, to gestation outside the womb, *exterogestation*. Bostock has suggested that the limit of exterogestation be set at the stage of the beginning of effective crawling on all fours, a suggestion which has considerable merit. Interestingly enough, the average duration of exterogestation, taking its limit here to be when the infant commences to crawl, lasts, on the average, exactly the same time as uterogestation, namely, 266½ days. In this connection it is also of interest to note that while the mother continues to nurse her infant, pregnancy will be delayed for some time. Nursing the child at the breast causes the suppression of ovulation for variable periods of time, and thus constitutes a natural, although not altogether dependable method of child-spacing. It also suppresses menstrual bleeding. Menstrual bleeding tends to be heavier and longer-lasting when the mother does not breastfeed, and, as a consequence of the heavier bleeding, the mother's reserve energies tend to be somewhat depleted. The premature cessation of breastfeeding would, then, result in distinct disadvantages, especially when a mother already has other children who require her attention. Hence breastfeeding confers benefits not only upon the baby but also upon the mother, and therefore upon the group. This is to mention only the physical benefits of breastfeeding. Even more important are the psychological advantages which are reciprocally conferred upon infant and mother in the nursing situation, especially in a species in which the mother is symbiotically designed to continue the gestation of her child outside the womb.

To learn what the child must learn in order to function as an adequate human being, he must, then, possess a large warehouse in which to store all the necessary information, a brain, in short, of considerable storage and retrieval capacity. It is a striking fact that by the time the human child has attained its third birthday it has virtually achieved full adult brain size. The average brain volume of the human three-year-old is 960 cubic



centimeters, while the brain volume of the human adult, attained at the age of twenty years, is 1,200 cubic centimeters; that is to say, after the end of its third year the human brain will grow by only another 240 cubic centimeters to attain its full size, and that 240 cubic centimeters will accumulate by small increments over the next seventeen years. In other words, at the end of three years of age the human child has achieved 90 percent of its brain growth. Significantly, the infant brain more than doubles in volume by the end of its first year to about 750 cubic centimeters, or 60 percent of its adult size. Almost two-thirds of the total growth of the brain is achieved by the end of the first year. It will take an additional two years to add almost another third to the volume attained at the end of the third year (see Table II). In its first year, therefore, the infant's brain grows more than it ever will again in any one year.

TABLE II. GROWTH IN BRAIN AND CRANIAL CAPACITY IN HUMANS (BOTH SEXES)

Age	Weight (grams)	Volume (cubic centimeters)	Cranial Capacity (cubic centimeters)
Birth	350	330	350
3 months	526	500	600
6 months	654	600	775
9 months	750	675	925
1 year	825	750	1,000
2 years	1,010	900	1,100
3 years	1,115	960	1,225
4 years	1,180	1,000	1,300
6 years	1,250	1,060	1,350
9 years	1,307	1,100	1,400
12 years	1,338	1,150	1,450
15 years	1,358	1,150	1,450
18 years	1,371	1,175	1,475
20 years	1,378	1,200	1,500

SOURCE: *Growth and Development of the Child, Part II*, White House Conference (New York: Century Co., 1933), p. 110.

It is important that most of the brain growth be accomplished during the first year, when the infant has so much to learn and do. Indeed, the first year of life requires a great deal of unobtrusive packing for a journey that will continue for the rest of the traveler's life. To perform this packing safely, the infant must possess a brain much larger than 375 to 400 cubic centimeters, but quite clearly he cannot wait until he has grown a brain of 750 cubic centimeters before being born. Hence, he must be born with the maximum-sized brain possible, and do the remainder of his brain growing after birth. Since the human fetus must be born when its brain has reached the limit of size congruent with its admission into and extrusion through the birth canal, such maturation or further development as other mammals complete before birth, the human mammal will have to complete after birth. In other words, the gestation period will have to be extended after birth.

When the uterogestation period is extended beyond the expected date of delivery for more than two weeks, the pregnancy is said to be postmature. Some 12 percent of births are delayed two weeks beyond the due date, and some 4 percent are delayed three weeks. All the evidence indicates that postmaturity is increasingly unfavorable for the fetus, as well as for its postnatal development. The perinatal mortality rate is more than twice as high for postterm infants as it is for term infants, and the incidence of primary cesarean section done because of head-pelvis disproportion is double that in term infants; severe congenital abnormalities occur in about a third more of these post-term children, and they are generally characterized by a reduced capacity to adapt. All of which underscores the importance of being born at term.

The human infant is almost, if not quite, as immature at birth as the little marsupial which, born in an extremely immature state, finds its way into its mother's pouch, there to continue its gestation until it is sufficiently matured. The human infant remains immature much longer than the infant kangaroo or opossum, but whereas the marsupial infant enjoys the protection of its mother's pouch during its period of immaturity, the

human infant is afforded no such advantage. However, the human infant comprises part of a symbiotic unit; the mother, having given it shelter and sustenance within the womb, is elaborately prepared throughout the period of pregnancy to continue to do so, once the baby is born, outside the womb, considerably more efficiently than the marsupial mother. The biological unity, the symbiotic relationship, maintained by mother and conceptus throughout pregnancy does not cease at birth; indeed, it is naturally designed to become even more intensively functional and mutually involving after birth than during gestation in the uterus.

If this interpretation of the gestation period is correct, then it would follow more than ever that we are not at present meeting the needs, in anything approaching an adequate manner, of the newborn and infant young, who are so precariously dependent upon their new environment for survival and development. Although it is customary to regard the gestation period as terminating at birth, I suggest that this is quite as erroneous a view as that which regards the life of the individual as beginning at birth. Birth no more constitutes the beginning of the life of the individual than it does the end of gestation. Birth represents a complex and highly important series of functional changes which serve to prepare the newborn for the passage across the bridge between gestation within the womb and gestation continued outside the womb.

Because the human infant is born in so precariously immature a condition, it is especially necessary for the parental generation of the human species fully to understand what the immaturity of its infants really signifies: namely, that with all the modifications initiated by the birth process, the infant is still continuing its gestation period, passing, by the avenue of birth, from uterogestation to exterogestation in a continuing and ever more complex interactive relationship with the mother, the one person in the world who is best equipped to meet its needs. Among the most important of the newborn infant's needs are the signals it receives through the skin, its first medium of communication with the outside world. In preparation for its

functioning in the postnatal world—to afford it, as it were, a womb with a view—the massive contractions of the uterus upon the body of the fetus play an important role. It is this that we have now to consider.

ON BEING STROKED THE RIGHT WAY. The relatively short labor experienced by nonhuman mammals is usually insufficient to activate such sustaining systems as the genitourinary and gastrointestinal systems, and in part the respiratory system; hence mothers must activate them by licking their young. This they are designed to accomplish by an inbuilt series of reactive behaviors to odors, wetness, touch, temperature, early experience, and the like. Such inborn reactive responses are feeble in human mothers. The human mother's responses to her newborn will to a large extent depend on her own early experience as an infant and child and to some extent upon learning and maturation. If the mother has not enjoyed such experience or learned how to behave as a mother she is very likely to prove inadequate, endangering the continued survival of her baby.\* Hence, a basic assurance that the baby will be adequately prepared for postnatal functioning must be physiologically automatic. This basic assurance must not be dependent upon any postnatal behavior such as "licking," necessary as that may be for further development in other species. This insurance in the human species is secured by the prolonged contractions of the uterus upon the body of the fetus. The stimulations thus received activate, or tone up, the sustaining systems for the functions they will be called upon to perform immediately after birth. In short, it is here being suggested that in the human species the prolonged uterine contractions during labor represent, in addition to their other vital functions, a series of massive cutaneous stimulations calculated to activate and ensure the proper functioning of the sustaining systems.

When we ask what the function is of the ordinary uncom-

\*For a further discussion of this subject see A. Montagu, *The Reproductive Development of the Female* (Littleton, Mass: PSG, 1978).

plicated process of labor and birth, the answer is: preparation for postnatal functioning. The process of preparation takes some time, for there are many changes which must be induced in the fetus about to be born if he is successfully to negotiate the brave new world of his immediate postnatal existence. The bridge the process of birth forms between prenatal and postnatal life constitutes part of the continuum of individual development. The initiation of the birth process is associated with a fall in oxygen saturation of the placenta and of the fetal circulation, followed by the onset of labor, that is to say, the beginning uterine contractions which average about one a minute, and the breaking of "the bag of waters." All this, and much more that is involved in these bare words, means that a baby is to be born, to which must be added that it is to be born prepared to adjust successfully to the next series of events in the developing continuum of its life. That series of events cannot be broadly subsumed under the words "postnatal existence," for "postnatal existence" refers to the whole of life outside the womb, and clearly no newborn is ever prepared to deal with the whole of that postnatal life over which, only after many years, if at all, it will achieve some sort of mastery. What the fetus must be prepared to deal with during the birth process is the *immediate* neonatal period of the first few hours, then days, weeks, and months of gradual adjustment and habituation to the requirements of early postnatal existence. Towards this end the neonate must be readied with all its sustaining systems, as well as its muscular system, prepared to function.

The sustaining systems are the *respiratory* system, which controls the intake of oxygen as well as the utilization and elimination of carbon dioxide; the *circulatory* system, which conveys the oxygen through the blood vessels to the capillaries to supply the cells, and, in turn, to take up the gaseous waste products and return them to the lungs; the *digestive* system, which is concerned with the ingestion and chemical breakdown of solid foods and liquids; the *eliminative* systems, which carry the waste products from the alimentary tract, from the urinary tract, and from the skin through the sweat glands; the *nervous*

system, which enables the organism to make the appropriate response to the stimuli it receives through that system; and the *endocrine* system, which, in addition to the important role it plays in growth and development and in behavior, assists in the functioning of all these systems. The response of the respiratory center to the biochemical changes induced by the lack of oxygen and the accumulation of carbon dioxide initiates the whole complicated process of respiration. The circulation becomes autonomous, the foramen ovale in the septum between the two atria of the heart which, in the fetus, permits blood to pass directly from the right into the left atrium, begins to close, and the ductus arteriosus, which connects the aorta with the pulmonary trunk directly below, begins to undergo occlusion. Blood is now carried by the pulmonary arteries to the lungs, there to be aerated, and returned to the heart by the pulmonary veins, and then from the left ventricle through the aorta into the general circulation. This is a very different arrangement from that which existed in the fetus. It now involves the functioning of the muscles of the chest and abdomen, the diaphragm, and the heart, as well as such organs as the lungs, and the whole of the upper respiratory tract in quite novel ways. In addition, the temperature regulation of the body now begins to be taken over by the newborn, the experience of birth initiating the stimulation of the temperature-regulating centers.

Contraction of the uterus upon the body of the fetus stimulates the peripheral sensory nerves in the skin. The nervous impulses thus initiated are conducted to the central nervous system where, at the proper levels, they are mediated through the vegetative (autonomic) nervous system to the various organs which they innervate. When the skin has not been adequately stimulated, the peripheral and autonomic nervous systems are also inadequately stimulated, and a failure of activation occurs in the principal organ systems.

It has been an age-old observation that when the newborn infant fails to breathe, a hearty slap or two on the buttocks will generally be sufficient to induce breathing. The profound physiological significance of this remarkable fact appears to have

escaped attention. Reasoning from the physiological relations already indicated, it seemed to me likely that under similar conditions, that is, when the baby failed to breathe immediately after birth, stimulation of the respiratory center and the respiratory organs could perhaps be achieved by subjecting the baby to immersion, alternately, in hot and cold baths. Upon inquiry I found that this was, indeed, an old-established practice. In such cases it would seem reasonable to assume that it is the cutaneous stimulation which activates the autonomic nervous system, with the autonomic nervous system acting in turn upon the respiratory centers and viscera. The effect of a sudden cold shower upon respiration is well known, and is indicative of a similar series of events.

The short, intermittent stimulations of the skin over a prolonged period of time that are produced by the contractions of the uterus upon the body of the fetus thus appear to be perfectly designed to prepare it for postnatal functioning.

How can we be sure that this is in fact one of the functions of the prolonged cutaneous stimulation? One of the things we can do is to inquire into what happens when there is inadequate cutaneous stimulation of the fetus, as in the case of precipitately born children. This often occurs in prematurity, and also in the case of many cesarean-delivered infants. In such cases what we should expect to find, according to our theory, would be disturbances in the gastrointestinal, genitourinary, and respiratory functions. Investigations made without any knowledge of or reference to our theory, but which are directly relevant to it, substantially support the theory. For example, Dr. C. M. Dril-  
lien studied the records of many thousands of prematures and found that during the early years of postnatal life they exhibited a significantly higher incidence of nasopharyngeal and respiratory disorders and diseases than normally born children. This difference was especially marked during the first year.

In 1939, Mary Shirley published the results of a study on premature children of nursery school and kindergarten age conducted at the Harvard Child Study Center in Boston. Shirley found that premature children exhibit a significantly higher

sensory acuity than term children, and in comparison are somewhat retarded in lingual and manual control, as well as in postural and locomotor control. Control of bowel and bladder sphincters, significantly enough, was found to be achieved later and with difficulty in the premature children. The attention span is short; such children are inclined to be highly emotional, jumpy, anxious, and usually shy. Summarizing her findings, Shirley observed that in the preschool period, the prematures present significantly more behavior problems than fullterm children. These problems include hyperactivity, later acquisition of bowel and bladder control, enuresis, excessive distractibility, shyness, thumb-sucking, negativism and hypersensitivity to sound. In interpreting this prematurity-syndrome Shirley pointed out that

premature births often are cataclysmic; unduly prolonged or precipitant, both of which conditions subject the baby to birth trauma. . . . Thus, it seems possible that, through a less favorable prenatal environment or through the too early loss of intrauterine media, or through the lack of adequate time for the birth preparatory responses, or through birth injuries that are sometimes so slight as to be unrecognized or through a combination of these factors, the premature may be predisposed toward the development of a higher degree of nervous irritability than the term child.

The "lack of adequate time for the birth preparatory responses" is the critical passage here, and the finding of the later and more difficult learning of control of bowel and bladder sphincters the significant observation.

Cesarean-delivered babies suffer from a number of disadvantages from the moment they are born. Their mortality rate, to begin with, is two to three times as great as that which follows vaginal delivery. At full term the rate is twice as great in cesarean-delivered babies as in vaginally delivered ones. In elective cesarean deliveries, that is to say, in nonemergency cesareans, the mortality rate is 2 percent higher than for vaginally delivered babies. In the emergency cesareans the mortality rate is 19



percent higher than in vaginal deliveries.

Death from the respiratory disorder known as hyaline membrane disease is ten times more frequent in cesarean-delivered than in vaginally delivered babies.

It may be conjectured that the disadvantages, among other things, from which cesarean-delivered babies suffer, compared with vaginally delivered babies, are to a significant extent related to the failure of adequate cutaneous stimulation which they have suffered.

Pediatricians have noted that cesarean babies tend to be characterized by greater lethargy, decreased reactivity, and less frequent crying than the vaginally delivered.

In the hope of throwing some light on the developmental history of the cesarean-delivered infant, Dr. Gilbert W. Meier of the National Institutes of Health conducted a series of experiments on macaque monkeys (*Macaca mulatta*). He compared thirteen cesarean-delivered with thirteen vaginally delivered infants for the first five days of their lives. He found that the vaginally delivered infants "were more active, more responsive to the situation, and more responsive to additional stimulation within that situation." Vocalizations, avoidance responses—the beginnings of true learning responses—and activity counts were on the average about three times more frequent in the vaginally delivered than in the cesarean-delivered infants.

Quite possibly, had the cesarean-delivered babies been given an adequate amount of caressing for some days after they were born, a significant change might have been observed in their behavioral and physical development. All the evidence clearly points in that direction.

Drs. Sydney Segal and Josephine Chu of the University of British Columbia studied twenty-six vaginally delivered and thirty-six cesarean-delivered babies, and found that the latter showed a smaller crying vital capacity than the former, a difference that persisted for the six days of their stay in the baby nursery.

A number of biochemical differences have been found between cesarean-delivered and normally delivered babies, such

as higher acidosis, lower serum proteins, lower serum calcium, and higher potassium in the cesarean-delivered.

A most significant finding relates to the production of sugar in newborn infants. Normally when a small amount of glucagon, a substance thought to be secreted by the pancreas, is introduced into the digestive system, the system responds by producing sugar. In cesarean-delivered infants the amount of sugar produced in response to this glucagon factor is much less than in vaginally delivered infants, *in the absence of labor*. When, however, labor occurs before cesarean delivery, this difference is obliterated. The basic importance of labor in the preparation of the infant for postnatal functioning is thus strikingly confirmed.

In contrast, in their studies of rats, Grotz, Denenberg, and Zarrow found no differences between cesarean-delivered and vaginally delivered young in survival until weaning, or in weaning, weight, and open-field activity.

Both Shirley and Drillien observed that prematures as children presented more frequent and greater feeding problems than children born at term. Such observations, abundantly confirmed by other observers, suggest the possibility that inadequate cutaneous stimulation plays a role here, and, in some cases at least, results in a greater susceptibility to infection and disorder of the respiratory, gastrointestinal, and genitourinary systems. Further contributory evidence is to be seen in the meconium plug syndrome. This is the condition in which a plug formed of loose cells, intestinal gland secretions, and amniotic fluid produces intestinal obstruction, resulting in a marked delay in the emptying of the stomach and the passage of food through the intestines. In such cases there is an apparent failure of the pancreas to secrete the protein-splitting enzyme trypsin, leading to inadequate peristaltic action of the intestines. Hence there is both a failure and a breakdown in the movement of the meconium. The whole syndrome strongly indicates a failure of action of the necessary substances upon the gastrointestinal tract.

Dr. William J. Pieper and his colleagues studied the case data

from the files of a state child-guidance clinic, which enabled them to compare 188 pairs of normally delivered and cesarean-delivered children matched for age, sex, ethnic group, ordinal position, and father's occupational level. Comparisons were made in 76 variables. In most of these variables these two groups of children were indistinguishably similar, but in a small number they were significantly different. Thus, cesarean-delivered males and all cesareans eight years of age or older were more likely to have a speech defect, to have a speech defect at the time of the diagnostic examination, and to have a mother rated as behaving inconsistently in the mother-child relationship. The other six differences were as follows: normally born males were found to have more unspecified other somatic complaints; cesarean-delivered males were more likely to be rated by the psychologist as showing evidence of organic involvement; cesareans under eight years of age were more likely to present the symptoms of fear of school and unspecified other personality difficulties; and cesareans over eight years of age were more likely to present the symptoms of restlessness and temper.

Clearly, the differences found by Pieper and his colleagues between cesarean-delivered and normally delivered children were largely of an emotional nature, the cesarean-delivered children being somewhat significantly more emotionally disturbed than the normally delivered children. It would be difficult to attribute such differences to the absence or inadequacy of a single factor in the development of these cesarean children, but, as we shall see, it is quite probable that inadequate cutaneous stimulation during the perinatal period, that is, the period shortly before and shortly after birth, may have been one of the factors involved.

Dr. M. Straker found a significantly higher frequency of emotional disturbance and anxiety in cesarean-delivered individuals than in normally delivered ones. Liberson and Frazier found that the electroencephalographic patterns in cesarean newborns show evidence of greater physiological stability than in the normally born. This finding, however, is difficult to evalu-

ate as an evidence of greater or lesser general physiological stability. It is referred to here simply to make it clear that the evidence does not all point in the same direction. One would hardly expect it to.

That postpartum cutaneous stimulation can to some extent compensate for a lack of skin stimulation during the birth process is supported by Dr. Donald H. Barron's observation of twin kids delivered without the occurrence of labor, by cesarean section. If one newborn kid is left wet in a warm room, while the other is completely dried off with a towel, cleaning it well, the kid that has been dried gets up before the other. This difference in response, Barron remarks, points to the great survival value of cutaneous stimulation. "I have the impression," he states, "that the drying, licking, and the grooming are important in raising the general level of neural excitability in the kid, and thereby hasten his ability to rise on his knees, to orient himself, and to stand."

Since the head of the human term fetus is, within the womb, larger than it has ever been, and since it lies in the head-down position in the narrowest part of the womb, the stimulations received from the contracting uterus by the face, nose, lips, and remainder of the head are very considerable. This facial stimulation corresponds to the licking of the muzzle and oral region given by other animals to their young, and presumably produces much the same effect, namely, the initiation of sensory discharge into the central nervous system and the raising of the excitability of the respiratory center. As Barron has shown, there is a rise in the oxygen content of the blood associated with licking and grooming, in the newborn of goats: "Raising the excitability of the respiratory center in turn increases the depth of the respiratory effort, increases the level of oxygenation of the blood, and so enhances the capacity for further muscular movement and strength."

Insofar as the higher oxygenation of the blood is concerned, these observations have been confirmed in the normally newborn human, as compared with the cesarean-delivered and the premature. McCance and Otley have shown that when the

newborn rat is removed from its mother immediately after birth its kidneys remain relatively functionless for the first twenty-four hours of its life. They suggest that normally the attentions of the mother cause an increase in the excretion of urea owing to some reflex change in the blood flow to the kidney.

The skin and the gastrointestinal tract meet not only at the lips and mouth, but also at the anal region. Hence it is scarcely surprising, in the light of what we have already learned, not only that gastrointestinal function will be activated by stimulating this region, but that respiratory function will also often be activated by such stimulation. This method of inducing respiration in the newborn often works when other methods fail.

That the skin and the gastrointestinal tract are often interactive has been suggested in clinical reports for many years. Disorders and diseases simultaneously affecting both the gastrointestinal tract and integument have been observed in many cases.

That the benefits of maternal-infant cutaneous contacts are reciprocal is evident from the fact that when the newborn is placed in contact with its mother's body the uterus will be stimulated to contract. This fact constituted part of the folk-wisdom of many peoples for centuries. It is, for example, reported from Brunswick, in Germany, that it is the custom not to allow the child, during the first twenty-four hours after its birth, to lie by its mother's side, "otherwise the uterus can find no rest and scratches about in the woman's body, like a large mouse." Folk-wisdom, while recognizing the fact, failed when it came to drawing the correct conclusion from it, namely, that the contractions of the uterus were beneficial to the mother.

The evidence surveyed in the preceding pages, sparse as it is, nevertheless lends strong support to the hypothesis that an important function of the prolonged labor and especially the contractions of the uterus, in the human female, is to serve much the same purpose that licking and grooming of the newborn serve in other animals. This purpose is to further the infant's development for optimum postnatal functioning of its sustaining systems. We have seen that in all animals cutaneous stimulation of the infant's body is in most cases an indispensable

bly necessary condition for the survival of the young. We have suggested that in a species such as *Homo sapiens*, in which gestation is only half completed at birth, and in which maternal behavior is dependent upon learning rather than upon instinct, the selective advantage would lie with a reflex initiation and maintenance of uterine contractions functioning for the fetus as an automatic, physiologically massive stimulation of its skin, and through its skin of its organ systems. The evidence, as we have seen, tends to support this hypothesis, that the uterine contractions of labor constitute the beginning caressing of the baby in the right way—a caressing which should be continued in very special ways in the period immediately following birth and for a considerable time thereafter. This we may proceed to discuss in the next chapter.

---

## THREE

---

# BREASTFEEDING

I will lift up mine eyes unto the hills:  
From whence cometh my help.

—PSALMS 121.1.

Whether or not we accept the psychoanalytic view that life in the womb is normally a supremely pleasurable experience, a blissful state rudely shattered by the ordeal of birth, there can be little doubt that the process of birth is a disturbing one to the birthling. Having spent its prenatal life in a supporting aquatic environment, within a medium in which the second law of thermodynamics is perfectly satisfied by the constancy of the temperature and the pressure, that is to say within the amniotic fluid surrounded by the amniotic sac, the fetus is said to live a Nirvana-like existence. This blissful existence is rudely interrupted largely owing to a fall in the levels of the pregnancy-maintaining hormone progesterone in the mother's bloodstream, resulting in the turbulent series of changes which the fetus begins to experience as the birth process. The contractions of the uterus in labor act as compressive forces upon its body, so that it is pushed against the birth canal where the repeated thrusts of its head against the maternal bony pelvis produce the swelling beneath its scalp known as the *caput succedaneum*. It is doubtful whether the fetus quite appreciates that this apparently gratuitous assault upon its person is designed entirely for

its benefit. Providentially, the oxygen available to it at this time is gradually undergoing reduction, so that such consciousness, such awareness of pain as it may be capable of, is probably reduced. This may well be the function of the anoxia or hypoxia, as this reduced state of oxygenation is called. The contracting uterus completes its parturitive functions with the expulsion of the fetus from the uterus. With birth the newborn moves into a wholly new zone of experience and adaptation, from an aquatic solitary existence into an atmospheric and social environment.

At birth, atmospheric air immediately rushes into the lungs of the newborn, thus inflating them, and causing them to press against and to produce gradual rotation of the heart. There is, as it were, a competition for space between the heart and the lungs. The ductus arteriosus between the arch of the aorta and the upper surface of the pulmonary trunk, which in the fetus made it possible to bypass the systematic circulation involving the lungs, begins to contract and close. The cupolae of the diaphragm begin to rise eccentrically up and down, the chest wall to expand, all of which could hardly be described as adding up to a pleasant experience for the newborn exteroestate. What the newborn is looking forward to, and has every right to expect, is a continuation of that life in the womb—to a womb with a view—before it was so catastrophically interrupted by the birth process. And what it receives in our highly sophisticated societies in the Western world is a rather dusty answer.

The moment it is born, the cord is cut or clamped, the child is exhibited to its mother, and then it is taken away by a nurse to a babyroom called the nursery, so called presumably because the one thing that is not done in it is the nursing of the baby. Here it is weighed, measured, its physical and any other traits recorded, a number is put around its wrist, and it is then put in a crib to howl away to its heart's discontent.

The two people who need each other at this time, more than they ever will at any other in their lives, are separated from one another, prevented from continuing the development of a symbiotic relationship which is so critically neces-



sary for the further development of both of them.

During the whole of pregnancy the mother has been elaborately prepared, in every possible way, for the continuation of the symbiotic union between herself and her child, to minister to its dependent needs in the manner for which she alone is best prepared. It is not simply that the baby needs her, but that both need each other. The mother needs the baby quite as much as the baby needs its mother. The biological unity, the symbiotic relationship, maintained by mother and conceptus throughout pregnancy does not cease at birth but becomes—indeed, is naturally designed to become—even more intensified and interoperative than during uterogestation. Giving birth to her child, the mother's interest and involvement in its welfare is deepened and reinforced. Her whole organism has been readied to minister to its needs, to caress it, to make loving sounds to it, to nurse it at the breast. From the breast it will not only take in the wondrous colostrum, the lemony-yellowish fluid which confers such immunological and other physiological benefits upon the child, but the child will also, by its nursing, confer vital benefits upon the mother. The psychophysiological benefits which mother and child, the nursing couple, reciprocally confer upon one another in the continuing symbiotic relationship are vitally important for their further development. This is a fact which is only very slowly coming to be recognized in our highly sophisticated, technologized, dehumanized Western world, a world in which breastfeeding is considered by many to be beneath human dignity. As one expensively educated young woman remarked to me when I asked her whether she was going to breastfeed her baby, "Why, only animals do that. None of my friends do." It is a world in which there are pediatricians who assure mothers that a bottle formula is every bit as good as, and even better than, breastfeeding. Indeed, as James Croxton has remarked, "Humans are the only mammals that raise their infants as though they were not mammals."

It is a world in which breastfeeding, except in private, is considered indecent. In May 1975 the Associated Press reported an incident from Miami, Florida, involving a group of

young mothers, some of them nursing their babies, who were ordered from the park by a park official who told them they could no longer use the park for picnics on the ground that the sight of women breastfeeding their babies was inappropriate, "especially in a public park where kids play." One of the breastfeeding mothers happened to be a leader of the La Leche League in Florida (the international organization which has been largely instrumental in encouraging a return to breastfeeding). When she and the president of the league appeared on a well-known TV show in June 1975, they were greeted with a surprising amount of hostility from some women in the audience who felt that nursing should only be done in private.

We live in the logical denouement of the Machine Age, when not only are things increasingly produced by machine but also human beings, who are turned out to be as machine-like as we can make them, and who therefore see little wrong in dealing with others in a similarly mechanical manner; an age in which it is considered a mark of progress when whatever was formerly done by human beings is taken out of their hands and done by machine. It is reckoned an advance when a bottle formula can be made to substitute for the contents of the human breast and the experience of the human infant at it, especially in an age when many women have so unhappily taken over the values of the masculine world.

In the widely read official manual *Infant Care*, issued by the U. S. Children's Bureau of the Department of Health, Education and Welfare, a work mainly edited by women, the 1963 edition refers to an apparently not uncommon negative attitude toward the tactile experience of breastfeeding. "You may feel," the editors write, "some resistance to the idea of such intimacy with an infant who, at first, seems like a stranger. To some mothers it seems better to keep the baby at arm's length, so to speak, by feeding plans which are not so close."

These sentences reflect a widespread failure to understand the meaning and importance of the intimacy which should exist, from the moment of birth, between mother and infant.

During the birth process mother and infant have had a some-

what trying time. At birth each clearly requires the reassurance of the other's presence. The reassurance for the mother lies in the sight of her baby, its first cry, and in its closeness to her body. For the baby it consists in the contact with and warmth of the mother's body, the support in her cradled arms, the caressing, the cutaneous stimulation it receives, and the suckling at her breast, the welcome into "the bosom of the family." These are words, but they refer to very real psychophysiological conditions.

Within a few minutes after the baby is born the third stage of labor should be completed; that is, the placenta should be detached and ejected. The bleeding of the torn vessels of the uterus should begin to be arrested, and the uterus should commence its return to normal size. When the baby is put to nurse at the mother's breast immediately after birth, and even before the cord is clamped, if the cord is long enough, the baby's suckling will serve to accelerate all three processes. By suckling at the breast the baby sets up changes in the mother; its suckling increases the secretion of oxytocin from the pituitary gland, producing massive contractions of the uterus, with the consequence that: (1) the uterine muscle fibers contract upon the uterine vessels; (2) the uterine vessels undergo constriction at the same time; (3) the uterus begins to undergo reduction in size; (4) the placenta becomes detached from the uterine wall; and (5) is ejected by the contracting expulsive uterus. In addition, the secretory functions of the breast are greatly augmented by the induced secretion of prolactin from the pituitary gland. Physiologically, the nursing of her babe at her breast produces in the mother an intensification of her "motherliness," the pleasurable care of her child. Psychologically, this intensification serves further to consolidate the symbiotic bond between herself and her child. In this bonding between mother and child the first few minutes after birth are crucial.

The benefits to the mother of immediate breastfeeding are innumerable, not the least of which after the weariness of labor and birth is the emotional gratification, the feeling of strength, the composure, and the sense of fulfillment that

comes with the handling and suckling of the baby.

For the newborn, what better reassurance can there be than the support of its mother and the satisfaction of suckling at her breast, what better promise of good things to come? The cutaneous stimulation the baby receives from the mother's caressing, from the contact with her body, its warmth, and especially the perioral stimulations, that is, the stimulations received during suckling about the face, lips, nose, tongue, mouth, are important in improving the respiratory functions and through this means the oxygenation of the blood. As an assistance in suckling, the newborn is equipped with a median papilla on its upper lip which enables it to gain a firm hold on the breast. At the same time, at the breast the baby is ingesting the valuable colostrum, the best of all the substances it could possibly imbibe. The colostrum lasts one to five days and, among other things, acts as a laxative; it is the only substance that can effectively clean out the meconium in the baby's gastrointestinal tract. Colostrum constitutes the most powerful insurance against the baby's development of diarrhea. Babies ingesting colostrum do not develop diarrhea. The fact, indeed, is that the only known successful treatment for diarrhea in babies is breastfeeding. Colostrum is richer than true milk in lactoglobulin, which carries the factors that immunize the baby against a number of diseases. Years ago Dr. Theobald Smith of New York showed that colostrum conferred upon calves immunity to colon bacillus septicemia. In 1934 Dr. J. A. Toomey demonstrated that similar immunizing factors against this bacillus were present in human colostrum, as well as immunizing factors against other bacteria that infect the gastrointestinal tract. Colostrum encourages the growth of desirable bacteria and discourages the growth of undesirable bacteria in the gastrointestinal tract of the newborn.

In many ways the newborn calf is more mature than the human newborn. Like the calf, the human newborn has an undeveloped immunological capacity at birth; that is, it has no antibodies and little ability to make its own as defenses against foreign invaders. The antibody-rich colostrum from its

mother's breast, which is some fifteen to twenty times richer in gamma globulin than maternal serum, provides the newborn with such antibodies, and confers a passive immunity upon him for the next six months, by which time he will gradually have acquired his own antibodies.

Thus breastfeeding provides a number of correlated benefits for the newborn, immunological, neural, psychological, and organic. Over the five or more million years of human evolution, and as a consequence of seventy-five million years of mammalian evolution, breastfeeding has constituted the most successful means of ministering to the needs of the dependent, precariously born human neonate.

While I am in this book principally concerned with the stimulation of the skin as an important factor in the development of the individual, and not with the immunological and nutritive properties of the substances ingested during breastfeeding, it is fundamentally important for us to understand that the colostrum which postnatally lasts for some five days, the transitional milk which lasts for some eight days, and the permanent milk which comes in about the fourteenth day, are all designed to meet the gradually developing metabolic needs of the infant in adjustment to its developing capacities to deal with the various substances it ingests. The baby's enzyme systems take some days to develop sufficiently to be able to deal with these substances, mostly proteins. The colostrum, transitional, and permanent milk, coming in as gradually as they do, are perfectly timed and adjusted to the physiological development of the infant's digestive system.

The facts, indeed, indicate that breastfeeding constitutes a fundamental requirement for the human newborn. Not that the newborn cannot survive in the absence of breastfeeding, but that he will not develop in as healthy a manner as the breastfed baby, and finally, that the breastfed baby, at any rate, will get a much better start towards healthy development than the non-breastfed baby.

The *development* of colostrum and of transitional milk will occur in the absence of a suckling baby, but the *giving* of these

substances to the baby will depend upon the suckling of the baby. The link between *making* milk and *giving* milk is called the *letdown reflex*. When the baby begins to suckle at the breast, the cutaneous stimulation the mother receives initiates nervous impulses that travel along neural circuits to the pituitary gland, which then releases the hormone oxytocin into the bloodstream. The oxytocin, reaching the glandular structures of the breast, stimulates the basket cells that surround the alveoli and milk ducts, resulting in expansion of the ducts. This, in turn, results in a greater flow of milk down into the sinuses behind the nipple, and from thirty to ninety seconds after the baby has begun to suckle the letdown reflex is completed, and the flow into the baby of the rich substances in the mother's breast will continue as long as she perseveres in breastfeeding.

That mother and child are designed for maximum contact in the early development of the infant has been convincingly shown by Blurton Jones. He cites such evidence as Ben Shaul's studies on the composition of milk in relation to feeding schedules in different species. In rabbits and hares, for example, feeding occurs every twenty-four hours, and they have milk with very high protein and fat content. The tree shrew, *Tupaia belangeri*, which feeds every forty-eight hours, has an even higher protein-fat milk content. Apes and humans, on the other hand, who have continuous access to the breast, have very low protein-fat milk content. The rule is that wide-spaced scheduled feeders have high protein-fat milk content, whereas short-spaced, on demand, almost continuous feeders have low protein-fat milk content. This indicates that the human mother, like the ape mother, is designed to carry her baby with her wherever she goes.

Ape and monkey babies who are so carried and fed on demand seldom or never vomit or burp. When, however, they are reared by hand and fed on a two-hour schedule, they frequently vomit. So the evidence suggests that frequent breastfeeding of the infant has more than a nutritional purpose, that it has the additional important purpose of bringing mother and child into as continuous physical contact as possible.

Albrecht Peiper has remarked that among civilized peoples the breastfed infant becomes a crib infant who, if he is breastfed at all, returns to his mother's body only at feeding times. He points out that among nonliterate peoples mothers carry their children around with them on their bodies, as monkey mothers do. "It is an unnatural achievement," he writes, "for the human baby to have to spend his life in a crib. He is in no way adjusted to the crib; rather, his wish to be carried around becomes clearly evident again and again. Calming by rocking or pacifiers is reminiscent of the time when mother and child were physically more closely associated."

It is from the breast that "the milk of human kindness" flows.

While breastfeeding is maintained, pregnancy will not usually occur for at least ten weeks after the birth of the child, and often much longer, depending upon the intensity of the breastfeeding—the greater the frequency the longer the contraceptive effect lasts. This is largely due to the anovulatory effect of prolactin which is released from the pituitary gland as a result of suckling. Thus during the breastfeeding period a kind of natural birth control will be in effect. The advantages of breastfeeding to the baby are enormous. In one pilot study of 173 children followed from birth to the age of ten years, including both breastfed and non-breastfed children, it was found that the children who had not been breastfed had four times as many respiratory infections, twenty times more diarrhea, twenty-two more miscellaneous infections, eight times as much eczema, twenty-one times more asthma, and twenty-seven times more hay fever.

Similarly, Drs. C. Hoefer and M. C. Hardy in a study of 383 Chicago children found that breastfed children were physically and mentally superior to those who were artificially fed, and that those fed from four to nine months were in these respects more advanced than those breastfed for three months or less. The artificially fed ranked lowest in all the physical traits measured. They were nutritionally the poorest, the most susceptible to the diseases of childhood, and slowest in learning to walk and talk.

Early weaning is a subject on which we have no data for the human species. But we do have some data on rats. Dr. Jiri Krecek of the Institute of Physiology of Prague, at an international symposium held at Liblice, Czechoslovakia, on "The Postnatal Development of the Phenotype," stated the thesis that the period of weaning in mammals is a critical one, inasmuch as several basic physiological processes are being reorganized at this time, particularly those involving salt balance, general nutrition, and fat intake. Defining weaning as withdrawal from breastfeeding at sixteen days of age, other workers reported that rats who were weaned early elaborated a conditioned reflex less rapidly than those weaned at thirty days of age, and also that the adult of these animals showed deficiencies in ribonucleic acid, a basic constituent of all cells. It was also found that the principal electrolyte-regulating steroid was detrimentally affected by early weaning, and that even the male hormones, the androgens, are adversely affected. At the same symposium Dr. S. Kazda described a pilot study of human adults indicating that reproduction and certain kinds of pathology may be affected by early weaning.

The advantages of breastfeeding during the first year of life on subsequent development and into adulthood have been demonstrated by a number of investigators. The evidence indicates that the infant should be breastfed for at least twelve months, and terminated only when the infant is ready for it, by gradual steps in which solid foods, which can begin at six months, commence to serve as substitutes for the breast. The mother will generally sense when the baby is ready for weaning.

Drs. Francis M. Pottenger, Jr., and Bernard Krohn, in a study of 327 children, found that the facial and dental development of children who had been breastfed for more than three months was better than those who had been breastfed less than three months or not at all. They conclude their report with the following words: "These findings in our 327 cases indicate that it is advisable to nurse a child at least 3 months, and preferably 6 months. This will stimulate optimal malar [cheekbone] development. We have also observed that patients who were well



nursed had better-developed dental arches, palates, and other facial structures than patients who were not nursed."

A breastfeeding mother holds the child at alternate breasts for feedings, thereby giving equal stimulation and exercise to both sides of the infant's face and head, as well as other parts of the body. On the contrary, the bottlefeeding mother tends to hold the child in whatever position is comfortable, and it has been generally observed that this tends to be almost always in the same position on the same left side. Holding the infant on one side most of the time may not be altogether to the advantage of the child. But this is a mere speculation, and requires researching. With the bottle instead of the breast, and with toys rather than its mother's caressing hands, the infant is encouraged to manipulate things rather than to "handle" people. As Philip Slater says, in his book *Earthwalk*, such training is useful for the mastering and relating to machines, rather than for interrelating warmly with others.

Sometimes a baby, when put to nurse at the mother's breast, will fail to suckle and appear unable to grasp the nipple. This usually occurs when the baby is wrapped in a towel or some other material. When it is removed and the baby's skin allowed to come into contact with the mother's skin, the baby will usually begin to suckle.

Suckling, it should be noted, is usually preceded by prolonged licking of the nipple and areola, lasting several minutes. The licking serves to ready the breast for suckling, to familiarize the baby with "that most sacred fountaine of the body, the educatour of mankind," as William Painter so aptly put it some four hundred years ago.

Frances Broad, in two surveys covering 319 white New Zealand children five to six years of age, found that the breastfed were in all aspects of speech development—clarity of articulation, tonal quality, reading ability, as well as general confidence—superior to the bottlefed. Girls have clearer speech than boys of the same ages. The improvement was especially marked in breastfed boys as compared with the bottlefed.

These findings are not surprising, for as Miss Broad points

out, the organs of suckling and articulation are the same, hence, it might be expected that conditions influencing the development of the suckling response would have an effect on the structures required for speech. Further, since the incidence of infections in infancy is reduced by breastfeeding and the ability to speak is adversely affected by infections of the respiratory tract that quite often lead to infections of the auditory apparatus, and since the ability to speak in turn depends upon the ability to hear, this may explain the greater incidence of defective speech qualities in bottlefed as compared with breastfed children. In which case the solution, she suggests, is a rapid return to breastfeeding.

Much else could be said on the advantages of breastfeeding accruing to both mother and child; the aim is, of course, to give the child something rather more than an adequate diet, to provide it, in sum, with an emotional environment of security and love in which the whole creature can thrive. Breastfeeding alone will not secure this. It is the mother's total relatedness to her child that makes breastfeeding significant.

The experience of breast and touch can be seen, within the framework of a concept drawn from gestalt psychology, as a figure/ground perception, with body always there as ground, and reaching for the breast as figured stimulus. This figure/-ground experience initiates not only the letdown reflex, but the ongoing process of socialization of two human beings.

It is highly probable that the development of the skin itself as an organ is greatly benefited by the experience at the breast. While I know of no experimental data on this, there does exist some evidence from other sources and on other animals tending to support this view. For example, Truby King, the distinguished New Zealand pediatrician, was much impressed with the statements on this subject made to him by a merchant dealing in wool and hides. The piece is worth quoting in its entirety. Truby King having spoken to the merchant of the advantages of breastfeeding, the latter replied, "I don't need convincing as to what mother's milk must mean for the child

—I know it already from my own business. *Why, I can tell you how your boots were fed!*” He then proceeded to elaborate.

In the trade we know the highest grade of calf-skins as Paris Calf. That is because calves reared on their mother’s milk to provide the finest veal for Paris, have also incidentally set the standard for the whole world as to what is best in the way of calf-skins for tanning.

Suppose the hair has not been removed, it is smooth and glossy, not harsh or dry, and it all lies the right way. Or take the leather, it isn’t patchy. The whole hide is more or less uniform, smooth and fine-grained. When you feel and handle it you find that it has a certain body and firmness, and yet it is pliable and elastic. It’s nice to touch and handle—there is a kindly feeling about it. Why (pausing to think of an illustration) it’s like the face of a sleek child that is doing well, compared with one that’s not flourishing.

“What about the other kind?” Truby King inquired.

“Oh, you mean the ‘bucket-feds,’ ” replied the merchant. “Of course there is every grade and degree; but speaking generally, the hide is patchy—it’s not all over alike. It tends to be harsh and dry, and has a more or less dead feeling. There is not the same body in it, and it hasn’t the fine grain and pliancy of Paris Calf. It’s not kindly to the touch. Why, look here, when handling a first-rate calf-skin we say to one another in the trade: ‘By Jove, that’s a good piece of stuff—why, that’s milk-fed.’ ”

While there can be small doubt that the “kindliness” of the milk-fed skin is in large part due to the nutrients ingested by the calf from its mother’s milk, some of its quality, we will not, I am sure, be far wrong in concluding, is probably also due to the cutaneous stimulation received by the calf from the mother.

The observation on “the face of a sleek child that is doing well, compared with one that’s not flourishing,” is significant, for while I know of no observations bearing on the matter there can be little doubt that the character of the skin of a breastfed infant differs in many ways from that of a bottlefed infant.

The quality of the tactile stimulation received stands in direct relation to the qualitative development of the organism in all its organ systems. As we have already noted, since the introduction of the mechanical milking of cows it has been observed that hand-milked cows give more and richer terminal milk than machine-milked cows. This appears to be true also in the lactating human female. Usually, as we know, the tactile stimulation provided by the baby's suckling at the nipple initiates the let-down reflex and the full flow of milk. But in cases in which the breast-milk is for some reason insufficient, systematic massage, starting at the abdomen and carried up to the breasts, is generally sufficient to stimulate an abundant flow of milk.

Sir Truby King states,

The value of massage of the breasts, and sponging them twice a day with hot and cold water alternately, has been abundantly demonstrated for some years at the Karitane Harris Hospital, New Zealand. It is found that these simple measures, along with an abundance of fresh air, bathing, daily exercise, due rest and sleep, regular habits, suitable feeding and drinking of extra water, rarely fails to re-establish breastfeeding in cases where the supply has been falling off—indeed where suckling has been entirely given up for days or even for weeks.

It is known that in the absence of suckling stimulation the hormone which initiates the secretion of milk, namely prolactin, will not continue to be produced by the pituitary gland in adequate quantities, and ovulation, failing to be inhibited, will resume. In order to test whether the production of prolactin would continue in the absence of suckling, but in the sight, sound, and body contact with the young, Moltz, Levin, and Leon surgically removed the nipples from female rats who were subsequently impregnated and allowed to give birth normally. When compared with unoperated control groups from whom the young had been removed twelve hours after birth, it was found that the control females began to ovulate after an average of seven days, a sham-operated group ovulated at sixteen days, while the experimental group ovulated at twenty days. The

exteroceptive stimuli of sight, sound, odor, and perhaps "feel" of the young, this investigation suggests, even in the absence of suckling, are able to promote the output of prolactin in amounts sufficient to inhibit ovulation for sixteen to twenty days.

The inter-cutaneous stimulation of the nursing couple has evolved quite clearly as a reciprocating developmental arrangement designed to activate and to keep tonally at their optimum the various bodily functions of both mother and child. The areola and the nipple possess very sensitive reflexogenic capacities. When uterine irritability is at its maximum, during and shortly after labor, stimulation of the nipple causes pronounced, often violent, contractions. The center of this reflexogenic mechanism is believed to be in the hypothalamus, which stimulates the release of the hormone oxytocin from the pituitary gland. It is this hormone that is involved in the onset of labor, and together with various other conditions, in the onset of the birth itself. As we have already seen, oxytocin is also the hormone which is released in abundance as a result of the baby's suckling at the breast, a reflex activity resulting in the letdown reflex and the flow of milk.

We see, then, how beautifully designed the suckling of the baby at the mother's breast is, especially in the immediate postpartum period, to serve the most immediate needs of both, and from this to grow and develop in the service of all their reciprocal needs. What is established in the breastfeeding relationship constitutes the foundation for the development of all human social relationships, and the communications the infant receives through the warmth of the mother's skin constitute the first of the socializing experiences of his life.

It is quite remarkable that in a pre-Freudian age, Erasmus Darwin—Charles Darwin's grandfather—in an extraordinary book entitled *Zoonomia, or the Laws of Organic Life*, first published in 1794, should have suggested a relationship between breastfeeding and subsequent behavioral development. In his book Darwin wrote as follows:

All these various kinds of pleasure at length become associated with the form of the mother's breast; which the infant embraces with its hands, presses with its lips, and watches with its eyes and thus acquires more accurate ideas of the form of its mother's bosom, than of the odor and flavor of warmth, which it perceives by its other senses. And hence at our maturer years, when any object of vision is presented to us, which by its waving or spiral lines bears any similitude to the form of the female bosom, whether it is found in a landscape with soft gradations of rising and descending surface, or in the forms of some antique vases, or in other works of the pencil or chisel, we feel a general glow of delight, which seems to influence all our senses; and if the object be not too large, we experience an attraction to embrace it with our arms, and to salute it with our lips, as we did in our early infancy the bosom of our mother.

It may well be that the psalmist who wrote the words, "I will lift up mine eyes unto the hills: From whence cometh my help," was responding to the influence of such early experiences.

Erasmus Darwin traces the origin of the smile to the experience of the infant at its mother's breast. He writes,

In the action of sucking, the lips of the infant are closed around the nipple of his mother, till he has filled his stomach, and the pleasure occasioned by the stimulus of this grateful food succeeds. Then the sphincter of the mouth, fatigued by the continued action of sucking, is relaxed; and the antagonist muscles of the face gently acting, produce the smile of pleasure: as cannot but be seen by all who are conversant with children.

Hence this smile during our lives is associated with gentle pleasure; it is visible on kittens, and puppies, when they are played with, and tickled; but more particularly marks the human features. For in children this expression of pleasure is much encouraged, by their imitation of their parents, or friends; who generally address them with a smiling countenance: hence some nations are more remarkable for the gaiety, and others for the gravity of their looks.

It is as good a theory of the origin of smiling as any that has been offered, and it is to be noted that it does not escape Dar-

win's attention that the readiness with which people smile is to a large extent culturally conditioned. The fact that the smile universally constitutes an evidence of pleasure, of friendliness, may at least partly be due to the origins of smiling in the infant's oral-tactile pleasures at the maternal breast.

The meaning of skin contact with the mother, especially at her breast, is recalled most beautifully by Kabongo, a Kikuyu chief of East Africa. He was eighty years of age when he spoke these words:

My early years are connected in my mind with my mother. At first she was always there; I can remember the comforting feel of her body as she carried me on her back and the smell of her skin in the hot sun. Everything came from her. When I was hungry or thirsty she would swing me round to where I could reach her full breasts; now when I shut my eyes I feel again with gratitude the sense of well-being that I had when I buried my head in their softness and drank the sweet milk that they gave. At night when there was no sun to warm me, her arms, her body, took its place; and as I grew older and more interested in other things, from my safe place on her back I could watch without fear as I wanted and when sleep overcame me I had only to close my eyes.

"Everything came from her." These are the key words. They imply warmth, support, security, satisfaction of thirst and hunger, comfort, well-being, the very satisfactions that every child must experience at its mother's breast.

It is through body contact with the mother that the child makes its first contact with the world, through which he is enfolded in a new dimension of experience, the experience of the world of the other. It is this bodily contact with the other that provides the essential source of comfort, security, warmth, and increasing aptitude for new experiences.

---

## FOUR

---

# TENDER, LOVING CARE

I was a child beneath her touch,—a man  
When breast to breast we clung, even I and she,—  
A spirit when her spirit looked through me,—  
A god when all our life-breath met to fan  
Our life-blood, till love's emulous ardours ran,  
Fire within fire, desire in deity.  
—D. G. ROSSETTI, "The Kiss," from *The House of Life*.

In that seminal book, *Psychosocial Medicine*, James L. Halliday writes:

As the first few months following birth may be regarded as a direct continuation of the intrauterine state, there is need for continuance of close body contact with the mother to satisfy the requirements of the kinesthetic and muscle senses. This requires that the baby be held firmly, nursed at intervals, rocked, stroked, talked to, and reassured. With the disappearance of the "shaley wife" and the introduction of the perambulator the need for adequate body contact is often forgotten. How readily the infant reacts to the absence of the contact is seen when a baby is laid on a flat surface such as a table without support. Immediately it reacts with a startle and a cry. Mothers who are anxious (from whatever cause) tend when holding a child to hold it loosely or insecurely instead of firmly and confidently, and this to some extent explains the saying that "anxious mothers produce anxious babies," the insecurity of the mother being, as it were,



sensed by the child. The absence of accustomed mother contact has a bearing on the problem of "fretting" such as is seen when an infant is removed from a hospital. Many of us who have been resident medical officers in a fever hospital used to be somewhat skeptical of the importance of fretting, but recent observations have shown its reality and its practical importance, in that infants deprived of their accustomed maternal body contact may develop a profound depression with lack of appetite, wasting, and even marasmus leading to death. As a result of these findings volunteer women now attend some of the children's hospitals to provide infants that are fretting with periods of handling, caressing, rocking, etc. (The results are said to be dramatic.)

The results are, indeed, dramatic—and thereby hangs a fascinating tale.

During the nineteenth century more than half the infants in their first year of life regularly died from a disease called *marasmus*, a Greek word meaning "wasting away." The disease was also known as infantile atrophy or debility. As late as the second decade of the twentieth century the death rate for infants under one year of age in various foundling institutions throughout the United States was nearly one hundred percent. It was in 1915 that Dr. Henry Dwight Chapin, the distinguished New York pediatrician, in a report on children's institutions in ten different cities made the staggering disclosure that in all but one institution every infant under two years of age died. The various discussants of Dr. Chapin's report, at the Philadelphia meeting of the American Pediatric Society, fully corroborated his findings from their own experience. Dr. R. Hamil remarked, with grim irony, "I had the honor to be connected with an institution in this city of Philadelphia in which the mortality among infants under one year of age, when admitted to the institution and retained there for any length of time, was 100 percent." Dr. R. T. Southworth added, "I can give an instance from an institution in New York City that no longer exists in which, on account of the very considerable mortality among the infants admitted, it was customary to enter the condition of every infant on the admission card as hopeless. That covered all

subsequent happenings." Finally, Dr. J. H. M. Knox described a study he had made in Baltimore. Of two hundred infants admitted to various institutions, almost 90 percent died within a year. The 10 percent that survived, he stated, did so apparently because they were taken from the institutions for short times and placed in care of foster parents or relatives.

Recognizing the emotional aridity of children's institutions, Dr. Chapin introduced the system of boarding out babies instead of leaving them in the chanel houses the institutions had become. It was, however, Dr. Fritz Talbot of Boston who brought the idea of "Tender, Loving Care," not in so many words but in practice, back with him from Germany, where he had visited before World War I. While in Germany Dr. Talbot called at the Children's Clinic in Dusseldorf, where he was shown over the wards by Dr. Arthur Schlossmann, the director. The wards were very neat and tidy, but what piqued Dr. Talbot's curiosity was the sight of a fat old woman who was carrying a very measly baby on her hip. "Who's that?" inquired Dr. Talbot. "Oh, that," replied Schlossmann, "is Old Anna. When we have done everything we can medically for a baby, and it is still not doing well, we turn it over to Old Anna, and she is always successful."

America, however, was massively under the influence of the dogmatic teachings of Luther Emmett Holt, Sr., Professor of Pediatrics at New York Polyclinic and Columbia University. Holt was the author of a booklet, *The Care and Feeding of Children*, which was first published in 1894 and was in its 15th edition in 1935. During its long reign it became the supreme household authority on the subject, the "Dr. Spock" of its time. It was in this work that the author recommended the abolition of the cradle, not picking the baby up when it cried, feeding it by the clock, and not spoiling it with too much handling, and, while breastfeeding was the regimen of choice, bottlefeeding was not discounted. In such a climate the idea of tender, loving care would have been considered quite "unscientific," so that it wasn't even mentioned, although, as we have seen, in places like the Children's Clinic in Dusseldorf, it had already received

some recognition as early as the first decade of the twentieth century. It was not until after World War II, when studies were undertaken to discover the cause of marasmus, that it was found to occur quite often among babies in the "best" homes, hospitals, and institutions, among those babies apparently receiving the best and most careful physical attention. It became apparent that babies in the poorest homes, with a good mother, despite the lack of hygienic physical conditions, often overcame the physical handicaps and flourished. What was wanting in the sterilized environment of the babies of the first class and was generously supplied to babies of the second class was mother love. Recognizing this in the late twenties, several hospital pediatricians began to introduce a regular regimen of mothering in their wards. Dr. J. Brennemann, who for a time had attended an old-fashioned foundling home where "the mortality was nearer 100 percent than 50 percent," established the rule in his hospital that every baby should be picked up, carried around, and "mothered" several times a day. At Bellevue Hospital in New York, following the institution of "mothering" on the pediatric wards, the mortality rates for infants under one year fell from 30 to 35 percent to less than 10 percent by 1938.

What the child requires if it is to prosper, it was found, is to be handled, and carried, and caressed, and cuddled, and cooed to, even if it isn't breastfed. It is the handling, the carrying, the caressing, and the cuddling that we would here emphasize, for it would seem that even in the absence of a great deal else, these are the reassuringly basic experiences the infant must enjoy if it is to survive in some semblance of health. Extreme sensory deprivation in other respects, such as light and sound, can be survived, as long as the sensory experiences at the skin are maintained.

Cases capable of throwing considerable light on the importance of cutaneous stimulation in the absence of other kinds of stimulation are represented by those few instances in which either the loss of such senses as vision and hearing occurred at or shortly after birth, or where the child has been kept in a dark room with a deaf-mute mother. The most dramatic instances of

the first sort are the cases of Laura Bridgman and Helen Keller. Their stories are too well known to be retold here, except to draw attention to the fact that, having lost both vision and hearing, these two children were, after much effort, reached through the skin and eventually learned to embrace the whole of the human world and to communicate with it upon the highest levels entirely through the skin. Until each of these children had learned the finger alphabet—in other words, communication through the skin—they were cut off virtually completely from interactive social relations with other human beings. They were isolated, and the world in which they lived held little meaning for them; they were almost completely unsocialized. But after the patient efforts of their teachers had succeeded in enabling them to learn the finger alphabet, the world of symbolic communication was opened to them, and their development as social human beings proceeded apace.

Equally interesting is the case of Isabelle. She was an illegitimate child, and for that reason she and her mother were secluded from the rest of the mother's family in a dark room where they spent most of their time together. Born in Ohio in April 1932, Isabelle was discovered by the authorities in November 1938. She was then six and a half years of age. Lack of sunshine and poor nutrition had produced severe rickets. As a result Isabelle's legs were so bowed that when she stood erect the soles of her shoes came nearly flat together, and she moved about with a skittering gait. When found, she resembled a wild animal more than anything else, mute and idiot-like. She was at once diagnosed by a psychologist as genetically inferior. However, a specialist in child speech, Dr. Marie K. Mason, put her through an intensive and systematic training in speech, and in spite of all prognostications to the contrary succeeded not only in teaching her to speak normally, but to achieve with speech all the usual associated abilities. In two years she covered the stages of learning that normally require six years. She did very well at school, participating normally in all school activities.

The case of Isabelle conforms to the type picture of the

isolated child with malnutrition, idiocy, and muteness, who nevertheless, under intensive training, became a thoroughly normal socialized being. Malnutrition did not do any noticeable damage to the nerve cells of her brain, and her development to perfectly normal social adjustment strongly suggests that she probably received a great deal of attention from her mother, mostly of a tactile nature, during the years of their isolation together.

Laura Bridgman and Helen Keller communicated through the sense of touch. We are told that Isabelle also communicated with her mother in this manner and by gesture. Isabelle's disabilities and her nonsocialization were entirely due to her prolonged isolation. Her ability to recover from its effects was almost certainly due to the fact that she had been adequately loved by her mother, handled, held, caressed, and fondled.

It is recorded of Frederick II (1194–1250), Emperor of Germany, in his own time called *stupor mundi*, “wonder of the world,” but referred to by his enemies in less flattering terms, that

he wanted to find out what kind of speech and what manner of speech children would have when they grew up if they spoke to no one beforehand. So he bade foster mothers and nurses to suckle the children, to bathe and wash them, but in no way to prattle with them, for he wanted to learn whether they would speak the Hebrew language, which was the oldest, or Greek, or Latin, or Arabic, or perhaps the language of their parents, of whom they had been born. But he laboured in vain because the children all died. For they could not live without the petting and joyful faces and loving words of their foster mothers. And so the songs are called ‘swaddling songs’ which a woman sings while she is rocking the cradle, to put a child to sleep, and without them a child sleeps badly and has no rest.

These are the words of the thirteenth-century historian Salimbene.

“For they could not live without the petting . . .” This observation constitutes the earliest known pronouncement on the importance of cutaneous stimulation for the development of the

child. Undoubtedly awareness of the value of caressing the child is much older than that.

As Dr. Harry Bakwin, among the earliest pediatricians to recognize the importance of mothering the hospital child, has written, "Most important to the young baby appear to be the skin sensations and the kinesthetic sense. Babies are readily soothed by patting and by warmth, and they cry in response to painful stimuli and to cold. The quieting effect of keeping babies outdoors may be due, in part, to the movement of the air on the skin."

The reference to warmth and to air points to some very important influences in the immediate postpartum experience of the newborn. The baby's temperature *in utero* is probably about the same as its mother's, but during the birth process and in the perinatal period the baby's temperature is somewhat higher than the mother's, varying between 97.5° and 102.0° Fahrenheit with a mean of about 100°. Temporary exposure to cold air will stimulate the baby to cry, but is in no way damaging unless the exposure to cold is prolonged. Babies respond pleasurably to warmth and with distress to cold. Neonatal cold injury can lead to death. Normally the warmth of the mother's body flowing through to the baby will comfort him, and the absence of the warmth will distress him. When, in later life, we speak of the "warmth" of a person, as compared with those who are "cold," these are not, we may suspect, mere figures of speech. As Otto Fenichel has said,

Temperature eroticism in particular is often combined with early oral eroticism and forms an essential part of primitive receptive sexuality. To have cutaneous contact with the partner and to feel the warmth of his body remains an essential component of all love relationships. In archaic forms of love, where objects serve rather as mere instruments for gaining satisfaction, this is especially marked. Intense pleasure in warmth, frequently manifested in neurotic bathing habits, is usually encountered in persons who simultaneously show other signs of a passive-receptive orientation, particularly in regard to the regulation of their self-esteem. For such persons, "to get affection" means "to get

warmth." They are "frozen" personalities who "thaw" in a "warm" atmosphere, who can sit for hours in a warm bath or on a radiator.

The human newborn, even if he is born before term, has considerable ability to regulate his own temperature, but the range of thermal environment in which he remains comfortable, his range of thermal neutrality, is of lesser amplitude than in the adult, because he has the disadvantages of a relatively large surface area from which to exchange heat and a small body mass to act as a heat sink (a mass which absorbs heat). Hey and O'Connell have examined the neutral thermal zone in clothed babies, and concluded that a draught-free environment of 75° F is necessary to provide neutral thermal conditions for most cot-nursed babies in the first month of life. The clothed baby is at an advantage over the naked baby. The bare face and head, and especially the face, will not only provide the important sweating areas for the dissipation of heat, when that becomes necessary, but will also serve to receive the cool air which will act as a stimulus to respiration. Glass and his co-workers have shown that blanketing symptom-free low birth-weight infants not only simplifies their management but also enhances their immediate and longterm ability to resist acute cold stress.

A source of warmth, as Dr. J. W. Scopes has remarked, not often considered in our sophisticated society is the baby's mother. Swaddling the baby against the mother's bare skin provides a warm and thermostatically controlled micro-climate.

The newborn baby produces its own heat from a series of sites distributed over various parts of its body. These sites are associated with a brown adipose tissue and occur on the back between the shoulder blades, in the posterior triangle of the neck, and around the muscles of the neck extending under the collar bones to the armpits, in islands around the trachea, esophagus, and the large vessels between the two lungs and the arteries accompanying the ribs and the internal mammary ar-

teries. In the abdomen the largest collection of brown adipose tissue is situated around the adrenal glands and kidneys, with smaller masses around the aorta. Blood draining from the interscapular pad into the vertebral plexus of veins around the spinal cord may play an important role in the temperature regulation of the newborn baby.

There is reason to believe that there exist two systems of temperature sensitivity, one for warmth and one for cold, and to these the newborn is particularly sensitive. Like adults, the infant tolerates high external temperatures better than he does low ones, and prefers warmth to cold, but precisely what role the early experience of differences in temperature plays in his subsequent development, except in the matter of cold injury, we do not know; we may surmise that it is not inconsiderable.

The temperature sense or senses present many complexities which are far from being well understood. The metabolic response to sudden changes in temperature can be very threatening. For example, as Hey and his co-workers have shown, while a baby may be born into a draught-free room warmed to a temperature of 82–86° F, when an exchange transfusion is performed under these conditions, the deep body temperature of the baby will fall progressively unless active steps are taken to warm the donor's blood. There is good reason to believe, as these investigators suggest, that the use of cold blood could precipitate circulatory collapse during exchange transfusion. The same is often true when it is necessary to give adults a rapid transfusion of stored blood.

Cold has a constricting effect upon the blood vessels and also tends to slow down the flow of blood, with resulting accumulation of deoxygenated blood in the capillaries, leading to cyanosis, that is, blueness of the skin, and this is greatly affected by temperature, being accelerated by warmth and decelerated by cold.

The practice of bathing babies shortly after they are born often exposes them to heat loss and cold, especially when the cheeselike coating, the *vernix caseosa* as it is called, is removed. The *vernix caseosa* is composed of sebum secreted from the



baby's own skin glands and shed epithelial cells from its skin. In the liquid medium of the womb, this serves as an insulating layer which protects the baby's skin from maceration. Following birth the vernix caseosa serves as an insulation against loss of heat and the penetration of cold. For this reason the practice of washing away this cheeselike substance is considered undesirable by some authorities. This would be particularly true where the surrounding temperature is less than 80° F. In general it might be a good idea to leave this substance undisturbed and the baby placed with the mother until she is ready to nurse it.\*

The baby's sucking pressure at the breast is lower at 90° F than at 80° F, according to the findings of Elder on twenty-seven fullterm healthy infants. Cooke found that caloric intake in infants decreased as environmental temperature increased from 81° F to 90° F, and that caloric intake increased when temperature decreased from 91° F to 80° F. Such findings suggest that the common hospital practice of heavily wrapping infants at feeding time might benefit from review.

The obvious efforts of mothers among the mammals to keep their young warm, and broody behavior among birds, sufficiently testify to the great importance of warmth for the development of the young. The strong drive of the young to huddle together in the absence of a broody or warming mother further serves to underscore the importance of a necessary condition which can best be produced in the young through body contact.

The suggestion has been made that the basic factor in changes induced by handling may be temperature. Schaeffer and his co-workers, for example, found that rats whose temperature had been lowered showed the same drop in ascorbic acid in the blood as handled rats. The conclusions of these investigators have been criticized on various methodological grounds, without denying that temperature may be a variable in producing manifold effects in different animals.

The touch of a cold hand is not pleasant—the touch of a

\*Since the vernix caseosa tends to dry rapidly upon exposure to air, it presents no particular problems.

warm one is, an observation which brings us to the consideration that cutaneous sensation cannot be a matter simply of touch or pressure, but must in part be a response to temperature. Caressing with an ice-cold hand would scarcely be received by the recipient as comforting, but rather as an unpleasant, if not outright painful experience. "Cold comfort" is something less than comforting. Clearly, it is the quality of cutaneous stimulation that conveys the message, and this is made up of a complex of different factors. A sharp, painful slap conveys a very different message from a tender, gentle caress, and differences in skin pressure may make all the difference between a painful and a pleasurable sensation. It is probably in something of this manner, by the evaluation of such factors as pressure, intensity, rhythm, duration, firmness, and the like, that infants are able to discriminate between those who, when holding them, care for them and those who do not.

It is the messages the infant picks up through its own muscle-joint receptors from the manner in which it is held, rather than mere pressure on the skin, that tell the infant what the holder "feels" about it. The skin belongs to the class of organs called *exteroceptors* because they pick up sensations from outside the body. Receptors that are stimulated principally by the actions of the body itself are called *proprioceptors*. It is both through its skin and the proprioceptors that the infant receives the messages from the muscle-joint-ligament behavior of the person holding it.

The infant makes the proper discriminations in much the same way that adults do when they draw inferences about the character of a person from the quality of his handshake. At least, those individuals who have not been desensitized in their capacity to do so are able to draw such conclusions with a high degree of accuracy. Every baby is clearly born with this kinesthetic sense, and the evidence we have—experimental, observational, experiential, and anecdotal—all tends to support the view that, just as we learn to speak by being spoken to, and will speak as we have been spoken to, so we learn to respond to exteroceptive skin stimulation and proprioceptive muscle-joint

stimulation largely as a function of our early experience or conditioning in these senses.

It is quite probable that something of the manner in which the individual comes to carry himself, to hold his head, his shoulders, and to move his limbs and torso, is related to his early conditioning experiences. It is well known, for example, that the anxious individual, whether infant, child, or adult, tends to rigidify his movements, to tense his muscles, to over-elevate his shoulders, and even to glare with his eyes. These conditions are not infrequently associated with pallor and dryness of the skin, not to mention other cutaneous disorders.

Thoughts and feelings are often communicated in nonverbal ways, through movements of the body. The study of this subject is known as *kinesics*. Kinesics is concerned with the exploration of the various adjustments, without their necessarily being aware of the fact that they are making them, which human beings are constantly engaged in in relation to the presence and activities of other human beings. Our leading student of kinesics, Ray L. Birdwhistell, is convinced that kinesic behavior is learned, systematic, and analyzable. "This," he writes, "does not deny the biological base in the behavior but places the emphasis on the *interpersonal* rather than the *expressional* aspects of kinesic behavior."

It is in the interpersonal relationship with the mother, exteroceptively and proprioceptively, as well as *interoceptively*, especially involving the receptors of the gastrointestinal tract—and this is very important—that the child establishes its first communicative relationships. Quite probably during this period conditioning conducive to the formation of hypertensive habits takes place. These hypertensive habits later show up in hypertensive conditions affecting the gastrointestinal tract in the form of colitis, hypermotility, ulcers, and the like, affecting the cardiovascular system in the form of psychogenic cardiovascular disturbances, affecting the respiratory system in the form of asthmatoïd conditions, and, of course, affecting the skin in a large variety of disorders.

Dr. P. Lacombe has described a remarkable case of a severely

neurotic female patient who manifested depressive violent behavior and neurodermatosis. The grandmother of the patient gave the latter's mother minimal tactile attention as a child, and the patient's own mother failed her in this respect also. Lacombe sees this patient's disorder as the expression of a loss of the infant-mother attachment resulting in a fixation on the mother. Loss of the mother equals loss of ego, and loss of maternal skin as point of contact reappears in the patient as weeping skin areas. The patient's pet dog also suffered from skin problems, which Lacombe interprets as due to the identification of the dog with its mistress. The ego, says Lacombe, "is the perception of the bodily self, and what one feels and knows of the body is the skin."

A striking example of specific cutaneous conditioning during the first two weeks of life, and subsequent regression to this very early age level, is illustrated by a case of trichotillomania, that is, pathological hair-pulling, reported by Dr. Philip F. Durham Seitz in a child under three years of age.

A 2½ year-old white, female child was referred for psychiatric study by a dermatologist because of scalp hair loss of one year's duration. Dermatologic examinations had failed to reveal an organic basis for the alopecia. The scalp exhibited an over-all thinning and shortness of hair, more marked on the right side.

During the initial psychiatric interview, it was observed that the child cuddled herself in the arms of her mother and sucked milk from a nursing bottle. While sucking the nipple of the nursing bottle, which was held in the left hand, she searched her scalp with the right hand for remaining hairs. When a hair or group of hairs was found, she pulled these out with a twisting motion of her fingers. The hairs were then carried in her fingers to her upper lip, where she rolled them against her lip and nose. This process was continued as long as she nursed from the bottle, but ceased promptly when the nipple was removed from her mouth. The mother pointed out that the child pulled her hair only when sucking from the nursing bottle, and that invariably sucking was accompanied by hair pulling and nose tickling. The author went to the home of this family in order to observe the child, and also observed her during play in his office. Hair pull-

ing and nose tickling were found to occur only, and then invariably, when the child sucked milk from a nursing bottle.

Further interviews with the mother elicited the following information: The girl was the first and only child of lower middle-class parents, both of whom exhibited somewhat precarious emotional adjustments. The father was a Salvation Army musician, and both parents were devoutly religious. They had been married for five years, considered themselves entirely compatible marital partners, and had both wanted the child at the time she was conceived. However, because of the difficulty they had experienced with her, they employed contraceptives to avoid further pregnancies. The girl was born at term, delivery being uneventful. For the first two weeks the mother nursed her baby at her breast, but discontinued this abruptly during the third week because she believed her lactation to be insufficient. The child's growth and development during the first year and one-half appeared to be normal. She sat at three months, stood at seven months, walked at ten months, began to talk at eighteen months. She was weaned from the bottle when she was one year old, after which she ate solid foods and drank liquids from a cup.

When the child was eighteen months old, a punitive program of toilet training was instituted, which involved scoldings and spankings whenever she soiled herself. In retrospect, the mother realized it was following onset of this toilet training program that the child began to refuse solid foods, insist upon milk from a nursing bottle, and pull out her hair and tickle her nose while sucking. In addition, she had become difficult to manage, resisted all efforts to teach her toilet habits, and cried a great deal, would not mind, and demonstrated a desire to splash water on herself.

From observation of the child Dr. Seitz reasoned that her refusal to eat solid foods and her continued nursing from a bottle suggested an unconscious desire to return to an earlier suckling stage. Her hair pulling and nose tickling suggested that somehow she wished in some way to duplicate the original suckling situation. This raised a question: Was her nose tickled while she was at the breast? The nose tickling suggested that hair on the mother's breast might have been responsible. With

this in mind the mother's breasts were examined and revealed "a ring of long, coarse hairs surrounding each nipple."

In order to test the hypothesis suggested by this association, a nipple was constructed with a ring of coarse human hairs projecting around its base. This arrangement provided an automatic tickling of the child's nose whenever the nipple was held in the mouth. When sucking at the nipple she would slowly turn the bottle, brushing the upright hairs against her nose and upper lip. Hair pulling did not occur. The automatic nose tickling apparently satisfied the need to regress to the early experience at the breast.

The importance of this fascinating case lies in its demonstration of early psychocutaneous conditioning, within the first two weeks of life. Nursed at the hairy breast of her mother for two weeks, and then abruptly withdrawn from it, this little girl attempted to reinstate the conditions at the breast by providing herself with hair from her own head with which to stroke her nose and lip while sucking at a rubber nipple at the end of a glass bottle.

"To what other neurotic traits," asks Dr. Seitz, "and psychosomatic reactions may an individual be predisposed in later life by specific cutaneous conditioning of this type? Psychocutaneous disorders of the nose? Nose picking? Hay fever, or allergic rhinitis?" These are good questions.

**NOSING, NURSING, AND BREATHING.** Psychocutaneous disorders of the nose should be a fertile field for exploration, but I know of no significant studies in this area. Yet it is clear from the many different ways in which people treat their noses that early conditioning may very well have played a part in determining or influencing their kinesic behavior towards this part of their anatomy. People pull at their noses, stroke them, flatten them, compress them, wrinkle them, put their bent fingers under them, place their index finger against them, scratch them, rub them, massage them, breathe heavily or lightly through them, or flare their nostrils. It would hardly be warranted to attribute all such habits to early conditioning, but there can be

little doubt that in many cases such habits are in some way related to early cutaneous conditioning. The nose, it has been said, is the gateway to life and death. This, of course, refers to its respiratory functions. As we have already seen, it is probable that the proper development of the respiratory function is to some extent dependent upon the amount and kind of cutaneous stimulation the infant experiences. It is not unlikely that persons who have received inadequate cutaneous stimulation in infancy develop as shallow breathers, and become more susceptible to upper respiratory tract and pulmonary disorders than those who have received adequate cutaneous stimulation. There is some reason to believe that certain types of asthmas are, at least in part, due to a lack of early tactile stimulation. There is a high incidence of asthma among persons who as young children were separated from their mothers. Putting one's arm around an asthmatic while he is having an attack may abort or alleviate it.

Margaret Ribble has pointed out the importance of tactile experience in breathing.

Respiration [she writes], which is characteristically shallow, unstable and inadequate in the first weeks after birth is definitely stimulated reflexly through sucking and through physical contact with the mother. Infants who do not suck vigorously do not breathe deeply and those who are not held in the arms sufficiently, particularly if they are bottle-fed babies, in addition to breathing disturbances often develop gastrointestinal disorders. They become air-swallowers and develop what is popularly known as colic. They have trouble with elimination or they may vomit. It seems that the tone of the gastrointestinal tract in this early period depends in some special way on reflex stimulation from the periphery. Thus, the touch of the mother has a definite biological implication in the regulation of the breathing and nutritive functions of the child.

To continue with the subject of breathing for a moment, before returning to the nose through which that breathing mainly takes place, it has already been pointed out that immediately following upon exposure to atmospheric air the newborn's

previously unexpanded lungs fill with air and the various changes in pressure which occur at the moment of birth help to initiate the postnatal type of respiratory movements that continue throughout the life of the person. The need to breathe is so compelling that a three-minute denial of it is often sufficient to cause death. The urge to breathe is the most imperative of all man's basic urges, and the most automatic. The process of learning to breathe is an anxious one. Every breath we take, even as adults, is preceded by a faint phobic stir. Under conditions of stress many persons go into labored breathing reminiscent of breathing at birth. Under such conditions the person often regresses to fetalized activities and assumes fetal positions. In fear or anxiety one of the first functions to be affected is breathing. Yet, in spite of its automaticity, breathing or respiration is under voluntary control and under conscious control for short periods of time, as any person who has ever taken singing lessons knows, and for very durable periods of time, as every Yogi knows. This control is actually exerted during the ordinary activities of everyday life, such as speaking, swallowing, laughing, blowing, coughing, and sucking. Breathing, indeed, is not simply a physiological process but a part of the way in which an organism behaves.

That many of the elements of breathing are learned is evident from the fact that there are significant class differences in the manner of breathing. Heavy or stertorous breathing, like noisy soup- or coffee-sipping, occurs very much more frequently among members of the lower classes than among members of the upper classes. Differences in the rate of breathing and oxygen-combining capacity of the lungs, as Dill has shown, are closely correlated with occupational status. Inadequate, shallow breathing, associated with chronic feelings of fatigue in later life, as compared with healthy deep breathing, are also for the most part learned habits, and may well have some connection with early cutaneous experiences.

To return to the nose: It could be that the various forms of handling the nose in later life, including nose picking, may be related to early experiences in the feeding situation, especially



the breastfeeding situation. In nursing at the breast the baby's nose is frequently in contact with the mother's breast, and it is quite possible that the rhinal experiences there enjoyed or unenjoyed may have something to do with these various later manipulations of the nose. Most monkeys and apes pick their noses, and often eat the debris they remove therefrom. Some small children do likewise, and even adults have been known to do so. The association of picking one's nose and eating in such cases suggests the possibility of some form of early conditioning, and that nose picking alone may be a form of self-gratification regressive to such an early period of experience. "The private life is above everything . . . just sitting at home and even picking your nose, and looking at the sunset," wrote V. V. Rozanov, the Russian writer.

Allowing for the fact that most people carry bacteria of various sorts in their noses and that these are often irritating, and therefore induce a great deal of handling of the nose, nevertheless nose handling and especially nose picking can scarcely be altogether attributed to pruriginous bacteria. It would be a matter well worth further investigation.

As the prominent peninsula it is, the nose affords a convenient piece of the main upon which to make a landfall with one's hand, and to which one can cling stroking or otherwise manipulating it with that reassured feeling that comes from being able to establish contact, even though it be only with oneself. The nose seems to be a particularly favored part of the body, for purposes of reassurance. We often recognize this kind of manipulation as a nervous gesture in others without being conscious of it in ourselves.

Why should "making a nose at" or "thumbing one's nose at" another be regarded as gestures of disdain?

From fish to humans the oral region is the earliest part of the body to become sensitive to cutaneous stimulation. The lips are established as erogenous zones, that is, as pleasure-giving structures, long before the baby is born. Fetuses at five months and earlier have been observed in the womb sucking their thumbs. The experience at the breast or the bottle, very different as it

is in each case, further reinforces the erogenicity of the lips. Sucking is the major activity of the baby during the first year of his life, and his lips, presenting the externally furled extension of mucous membrane that lines his mouth, constitute the instruments with which he makes his first most sensitive contacts, and incorporates so much that is vital to him of the external world. It is, therefore, not surprising that the lips should be more fully supplied with sensory nerve endings than any other part of the body, with the possible exception of the fingertips. Lips, mouth, tongue, the sense of smell, vision, and hearing, are all intimately bound up with each other and the experience of sucking. If it is at the breast, it constitutes suckling; if it is at the rubber nipple of a bottle, it is sucking—two very different kinds of experiences. Research findings are sometimes contradictory concerning the advantages of breastfeeding as compared with bottlefeeding and the effects of each kind of regimen upon subsequent behavior. What is, however, quite clear is that it is not so much the type of feeding that is important for subsequent behavior as the over-all behavior of the mother during the feeding. Cold mothers who breastfeed do not do as well in influencing the later behavior of their children as warm mothers who bottlefeed. Such, for example, were the findings in a study conducted by Dr. Martin I. Heinstein on some 252 Berkeley, California, children.

As we have already had occasion to see, the infant very quickly responds to the mother's behavior towards it, and what is most important to its own behavioral development is not so much the material with which it is fed as the manner in which it is fed. It is precisely this kind of experience that will be picked up by the skin and the specialized mucous membranous structure we call the lips. Whether children who have had cold mothers or inadequate nursing will seek further gratification in lip stimulation, and will exhibit more of it than those who have had warm mothers and have been adequately nursed, is a question for which I know of no research answers. The variability in this, as in other matters, is undoubtedly considerable and probably quite complex. Many children do spend a great deal

of time manipulating their lips with their fingers, often while making a humming-murmuring sound to accompany the manually stimulated lip movements. They obviously enjoy doing this. I suggest that in thumb-sucking or finger-sucking it is not simply the sucking that is gratifying, but that a certain amount of satisfaction is also obtained from the stimulation of the lips. The hand of the baby often rests on its mother's breast during suckling or upon the bottle during artificial feeding; the baby's eyes follow every movement of its mother's eyes and face, and it grows accustomed, as well, to the sounds that both she and it make in the nursing situation. It is not difficult to understand how all these factors become closely integrated in a developing neuro-psychic complex. Hence, when in later life the individual becomes a victim of the smoking habit, he may, again at least in part, be conjectured to have become so addicted as a regression to the complex of similar pleasures he experienced during the earliest period of his life. The sucking, the lip stimulation, the handling of the cigarette, cigar, or pipe, the pleasure of blowing and seeing the smoke, of inhaling it, of smelling and tasting it, it is all very gratifying—even though the longterm effects may be lethal. Part of the pleasure of chewing gum is probably derived from the constant oral-lip stimulation.

Many writers on the subject have considered that the early experiences at the lips and mouth constitute the gateway to much of our understanding of later developments. The distinguished American psychologist G. Stanley Hall believed the first center of psychic life to be the mouth and the sense of taste, accompanied by a "tactile pleasure truly aesthetic which arises from bringing smooth things to the lips and hard things to the toothless gums."

Freud makes the activity of the infant's lips at the breast a foundation stone of his theory of sexuality. He writes:

It was a child's first and most vital activity, his sucking at his mother's breast, or at substitutes for it, that must have familiarized him with this pleasure [of rhythmic sucking]. The child's lips . . . behave like an erotogenic zone, and no doubt stimulation

by the warm flow of milk is the cause of the pleasurable sensation. The satisfaction of the erotogenic zone is associated, in the first instance, with the satisfaction of the need for nourishment. . . . No one who has seen a baby sinking back satiated from the breast and falling asleep with flushed cheeks and a blissful smile can escape the reflection that this picture persists as a prototype of the expression of sexual satisfaction in later life. The need for repeating the sexual satisfaction now becomes detached from the need for taking nourishment—a separation which becomes inevitable when the teeth appear and food is no longer taken by sucking. . . .

Though much that has been attributed to the oral phase of development has not been adequately investigated, there can be not the least doubt of the existence of a profound relationship between oral experiences in infancy and later sexual competencies. Nor can there be any doubt of the intimate connection between the skin and all its appendages, including hair, glands, neural elements, and sexual behavior. A French wit has remarked that love is the harmony of two souls and the contact of two epidermes.\* And indeed, it is in the sexual act that, next to the perinatal experience of labor, the individual experiences his most massive cutaneous stimulations, with the lips and tongue and mouth usually actively involved. Nor can there be any doubt that eating and love become closely interwoven in such a manner that in later life eating often becomes a substitute satisfaction for love, obesity frequently constituting an evidence of a failure to obtain love. The offering of food is often more than a perfunctory evidence of the tendering of love.

The psychoanalyst Sandor Rado has suggested that an important element in early sucking lies in the achievement of a pleasant feeling of satiety and a diffuse feeling of sensual pleasure in which the whole organism participates, and he describes this as an "alimentary orgasm."

\*A variation of Chamfort's "Love as it exists in society is merely the mingling of two fantasies and the contact of two skins." S. R. N. Chamfort, *Products of the Perfected Civilization* (New York: The Macmillan, Co., 1969), p. 170.

That the mother experiences something akin to sexual stimulation by the baby's suckling is well known, and that the baby experiences sensations which, endowed with meanings, later become perceptions of something resembling sexual gratification, is highly probable. We have already noted on an earlier page that inadequate mothering may seriously affect the subsequent sexual behavior of the offspring. The Harlows, to whom we owe this observation, have also shown that while rhesus monkeys raised by live mothers were more advanced in social and sexual behavior than those raised by surrogate mothers constructed of terry-cloth covered wire, the surrogate-raised infants developed perfectly normal social and sexual behavior if they were permitted each day to play in the stimulating environment of other infant monkeys. The Harlows rightly point out that the role played by infant-infant relationships as determiners of adolescent and adult adjustments should not be underestimated. It is more than possible, the Harlows suggest, that the infant-infant affectional system "is essential if the animal is to respond positively to sheer physical contact with a peer, and it is through the operation of this system, probably both in monkey and man, that sexual roles become identified and, usually, acceptable."

It is, indeed possible, even probable, as the Harlows suggest, that infant-infant contacts are necessary for the full development of social and sexual competence, but that, in the absence of any kind of mother at all, such behavior would, even in the presence of other-infant contacts, not develop as well as in mothered infants. Certainly it is clear that, in humans, good mothering without peer contacts has not seriously detrimentally affected the social and sexual development of innumerable individuals. Indeed, there exists an extensive literature showing how enormously important the mother's behavior is for her infant's subsequent social and sexual development. We may be reasonably sure, when all the evidence is in, that however valuable the infant-infant affectional relation may prove to be, it will never equal the influence of the affectional relationship that exists between the nursing couple, always with the understand-

ing that the mother is genuinely affectionate. There can be little doubt that peer interaction in the social growth and development of the child is of considerable importance, for it is in the give and take between peers that children try out and learn many of the modulations of interpersonal behavior.

As Yarrow, in an excellent survey of the evidence, puts it, "The mother as a social stimulus provides sensory stimulations to the infant through tactile, visual, and auditory media, i.e., through handling, cuddling, talking and playing with the child, as well as by simply being visually present." Deprivation of such sensory stimulations from the mother are serious in their effects.

It was mentioned on the first page of this book that it is in the region surrounding the mouth that the human embryo first responds to tactile stimulation. It is not surprising, therefore, to find that the first communications with the outside world are established by the infant through the lips, and this very gradually. It has been shown that stimulation of the newborn in the lip region triggers the oral orientation reflex, that is, opening of the mouth and rotation of the head in the direction of the stimulus. This will occur when only one lip is stimulated. When both lips are stimulated the grasping or prehension of the stimulus will occur. This stimulus is normally the nipple and then the areola of the mother's breast. Rooting, that is, digging with the nose and mouth to find the breast, will occur thereafter whenever the baby is brought into contact with the breast or anything resembling it. These two reflex activities, oral orientation and lip grasping, are regarded as two stages in the development of rooting behavior. The integration of these two reflexes into "oral grasping" in suckling represents one of the first developmental advances made by the newborn toward grasping the world, in general as well as in particular. In other terms these two reflexes are known as the searching pattern on the one hand, and the orienting or suckling pattern on the other. The clinging behavior of the lips around the nipple and areola, and later the kneading, clinging, and resting of hands and fingers on

the breast, represent, as Spitz has pointed out, the precursors and prototypes of object relations.

"To smack one's lips" represents an old expression for satisfaction. It is interesting that lip smacking should be used by mother baboons to pacify their young as well as others. "The mother," writes Irvén DeVore, "makes almost no sound except that resulting from soft lip smacking as she grooms her infant. Lip smacking, initiated at birth by the mother, is one of the most frequent and important of all baboon gestures. For both sexes at all ages this gesture serves to reduce tension and promote tranquility in social interactions." Ordinarily the direct approach of an adult male is very frightening to other members of the troop; it is therefore of great interest to observe that when an adult male approaches an infant who is with its mother he will do so with vigorous lip smacking. To call the infant, who may have climbed a tree, the mother will stare intently in its direction and smack her lips loudly.

Human mothers will often make pacifying sounds to their babies in similar ways or by pursing their lips and producing a variety of sounds. Babies almost invariably respond with pleasure to such pacifying sounds. Making such sounds to babies, especially soft lip-sucking ones, constitutes one of the most effective means of inducing them to laugh through their tears, even to the point of hiccups. At six months or even earlier an infant's attention will be immediately arrested by such sounds, and in the absence of all else will exercise a tranquilizing effect upon him. This strongly suggests that the infant identifies the sounds and the lips from which they emerge with pleasurable experiences.

The mother's caressing, comforting, and bestowal of affection through kisses with the lips constitute experiences in which the infant is repeatedly conditioned.

Raven Lang's observation that mothers usually speak to their babies in a high-pitched voice has drawn attention to the fact that babies prefer sounds in the high-frequency range, and female voices to those of males.

TOUCHING AND FEELING. The baby's rooting behavior is exploratory, scanning, and has for its purpose and consummation the finding and engaging of the nipple and areola between the lips. While rooting will soon be abandoned for visual scanning, the rooting is nonetheless important in that it constitutes, among other things, a re-verification and a reaffirmation of the existence of a pleasure-giving other, pleasure-giving by virtue of nothing more than the other's existence, her tangibility. Her tangibility is the ultimate reassurance, for in the final analysis we do not believe in the reality of anything unless we can touch it; we must have *tangible* evidence. Even faith rests ultimately upon a belief in the *substance* of things to come or of past events experienced. What we perceive through the other senses as reality we actually take to be nothing more than a good hypothesis, subject to the confirmation of touch. Observe how often people will respond to a sign reading "Wet Paint." Quite frequently they will approach and test the surface with their fingers for themselves. The sign acts upon them as a signal to touch, to verify. Touch attests to "objective reality" in the sense of something outside that is not myself. As Walter Ong has written, "And yet, by the very fact that it attests the not-me more than any other sense, touch involves my own subjectivity more than any other sense. When I feel this objective something 'out there,' beyond the bounds of my body, I also at the same instant experience my own self. I feel other and self simultaneously." Dr. Abraham Levitsky has pointed out that by its very nature, "touch is close and sight is far. We permit contact with those things and people we trust and enjoy. We withdraw from contact with what we don't trust and what we fear."

Withdrawing from what we do not trust and from the things we fear reminds us that the dark often possesses a tangibility and an eeriness which the light never has. The very idea of a ghost or a monster during daylight is laughable, but with the loss of contact that ensues with darkness the world becomes the scene of possible improbabilities. The ghosts we deride in daylight provoke our skins to creep at night. The imagination renders the intangible tangible, and we draw the



bedclothes over us to keep the phantoms out.

"It is clear," observes Ortega y Gasset, "that the decisive form of our intercourse with things is in fact touch. And if this is so, touch and contact are necessarily the most conclusive factor in determining the structure of our world." And Ortega goes on to point out that touch differs from all the other senses in that it always involves the presence, at once and inseparably, of the body that we touch and our body with which we touch it. Unlike vision or hearing, in contact we feel things inside us, inside our bodies. In tasting and smelling the experiences are limited to the surfaces of the nasal cavity and palate. Thus, it comes about that our world is composed of presences, of things that are bodies. And this they are because they come into contact with the closest of all things to man, to the "I" that each man is, namely, his body.

From the tangible evidence of the mother's body, the clinging of the lips, of hands and fingers to the breast, with the world at his fingertips in a very real sense, the infant will develop an awareness of his own and his mother's body which will constitute his first object relations. And what cannot be too often emphasized here is that, while much else is involved, it is through the primacy of the skin in his experience that the infant gropes his way to this establishment of object relations.

Around suckling, as the cutaneous or tactile composite of experiences, the earliest perceptions are organized. As Ribble has remarked, "As a result of mothering the child gradually combines and coordinates sucking, or food intake, with sense intake—looking, listening, and grasping—and thus a fairly complicated behavior complex is established." Movements of lips upon the mother's breast, the developing scanning of her face and eyes, hand and finger movements in relation to the mother's body, the feeling tone associated with these experiences, enable the infant to establish in its mind a code by means of which it can reconstitute and reduplicate all these and the associated experiences, and by making the proper signals, as figure upon the ground of the maternal body, evoke the appropriate responses. What it has learned by the exploration of the

mother's body, through skin, lips, tongue, hands, and eyes, the infant utilizes as a basis for further learning about its own body, exploring it mostly with its hands. Indeed, the earliest strivings towards the reintegration of self are commenced through the oral experiences at the mother's breast. In these the tongue plays a prominent role, for the tongue is a significant tactile organ, in addition to the fact that the newborn is as capable as the adult of clearcut taste discriminations.

What is the meaning of sticking one's tongue out at another as a gesture of defiance? Can it be a signal of disappointed rejection, meaning "I don't love you," or "I don't care for you," the very opposite of the feelings enjoyed through one's tongue at one's mother's breast? Oral-genital contacts, however, replicate the breastfeeding experience.

It is of interest to note that in the brain the area devoted to the lips, on the central gyrus of the cortex, is disproportionately large by comparison with that devoted to other related structures. (See Figure 1, p. 9.) This is equally true of each of the four fingers and the thumb, which brings us to the consideration of the hand and fingers in the development of the sense of touch. The very phrase "the sense of touch" has come to mean, almost exclusively, feeling with the fingers or hand. Indeed, when one considers the various ways in which the word *touch* is employed in speech, it becomes apparent that the variety of meanings are for the most part extensions of the meaning "to touch with the hand or a finger or fingers." Interestingly enough, when one consults a dictionary for the various meanings of the word one finds that the entry under "touch" is likely to represent the most extensive in the volume. It is by far the longest entry—fourteen full columns—in the magnificent *Oxford English Dictionary*. This in itself constitutes some sort of testimony to the influence which the tactile experience of hand and fingers has had upon our imagery and our speech.

Originally derived from the Old French *touche*, the word is defined by the *Oxford English Dictionary* as "the action or an act of touching (with the hand, finger, or other part of the body); exercise of the faculty of feeling upon a material object."

*Touching* is defined as "the action, or an act, of feeling something with the hand, etc." The operative word is *feeling*. Although touch is not itself an emotion, its sensory elements induce those neural, glandular, muscular, and mental changes which in combination we call an emotion. Hence touch is not experienced as a simple physical modality, as sensation, but affectively, as emotion. When we speak of being touched, especially by some act of beauty or sympathy, it is the state of being emotionally moved that we wish to describe. And when we describe someone as being "touched to the quick," it is another kind of emotion that we have in mind. The verb "to touch" comes to mean to be sensitive to human feeling. To be "touchy" means to be oversensitive. "To keep in touch" means that however far we may be removed we remain in communication. That is what language was originally designed to do, to put and to keep human in touch with human. The experiences the infant undergoes in contact with his mother's body constitute his primary and basic means of communication, his first language, his first entering into touch with another human being, the genesis of "the human touch."

Of "touch" the *Oxford English Dictionary* says that it is "the most general of the bodily senses, diffused through all parts of the skin, but (in man) specially developed in the tips of the fingers and the lips." It is through the lips that the infant grasps reality, as well as the body-building substances that it ingests. It is for a time the only means of judgment the infant has. That is why, as soon as it is able, it puts things to its lips in order to judge them, and continues to do so long after it has arrived at other means of perception and judgment. The other means of perception and judgment at which it ultimately arrives are through the tips of its fingers and the palm of its hand, a hand that has rested upon its mother's palpably and recurrently reassuring breast. At birth none of the infant's senses are as well developed as its sense of touch. While all its senses are operative and play an increasingly significant role in its perception and communication with the external world, especially with the mother, none are as basic as touch. It is the sense of touch upon

which it depends: lips, and generalized body contact, and then fingertips to whole hand.

The beginning development of self commences with the responses to the conditions of life which the infant experiences. When, as he does, he takes action at the breast to get what he wants, this constitutes a decisively critical experience in his development. He feels encouraged to act on his own knowing that he will continue to reach his goal with the encouragement of the (m)other. As Bruno Bettelheim has pointed out, it is for this reason so potentially destructive to schedule feedings by the clock, not merely because they mechanize and routinize the experience of feeding, but because they deprive the infant of the feeling that it was his own signals that resulted in the satisfaction of his hunger. Disregard of his signals discourages, and he tends to lose the impulse to develop the mental and emotional techniques for handling the environment, and thus for the adequate development of self and personality. The signal, the gesture, the communication that goes unanswered at any age can be a painful experience. At an early age it is especially so, and may result in a virtually complete cessation of the attempt to communicate.

The baby who is adequately satisfied receives the feeling that the world is his for the asking. At the breast the world is at his fingertips, and while it may be an exaggeration to say, as Bettelheim does, that all his later ability to do things on his own may be the consequence of this early conviction, it is probably near enough, for all practical purposes, to the truth. Reva Rubin, chairman of the Department of Obstetrical Nursing at the University of Pittsburgh, found a definite progression and an orderly sequence in the nature and amount of contact a mother makes with her baby. She found that from small areas of contact the mother gradually moves to more extensive ones, at first using only her fingertips, then her hands including palms, and then much later her arms as an extension of her whole body.

The initial contacts made by the mother with her child are exploratory in nature. Fingertips are used also, but somewhat

stiffly. This is not necessarily a graceless gesture. At this point, the mother will usually run one fingertip over the baby's hair, rather than her hand, to discover that his hair is silky. She will trace his profile and contours with her fingertip. If she turns his head toward food, she uses fingertips; if she has to support his head in bathing, she uses the index finger and thumb (no palm); if she has to turn him over, she seems to contact parts of him with her fingertips. She does use her arms and her hands to passively receive him, but her arms are not active participators in touch at this stage. Later, her arms will hold firmly, but just now she carries the baby as though he were a bouquet of flowers, in arms held so stiffly that she becomes fatigued.

In fingertip exploration, Reva Rubin points out, involvement is tenuous. As in courtship, in making contact one is not sure how one will be received. This is true in the courtship stage of tentative advances, before the handholding stage of reciprocal confidence and commitment has been established. In maternal touch the fingertip stage precedes that of commitment.

Commitment seems to await some personally evocative response of the infant. Sometimes it is a burp, more often it is the particular way he cuddles or, still more often, the way he expresses unbounded pleasure (three months later). This response must come from the baby, no one else, if the sense of partnership, of mutuality, in this kind of relationship is to progress. The particular sign that satisfies the mother's requirements may vary. It should also be pointed out that she is very vulnerable at this time to signs of rejection. But if the young mother has an essentially strong ego, she will search out, somewhat optimistically, positive signs of mutuality for a progressive relationship.

The next stage of maternal touch arrives gradually and is superimposed on the earlier stage. The whole hand is now used for maximal contact with the infant's body. The mother is more likely to support the infant's buttock with the palm of her hand. The hand on its back will be in full contact with it. Both hands will be relaxed and comfortable, coinciding with her feeling about her child, a message which the baby receives with the

sense of security that is thus conveyed to it as its responsiveness to her firm comforting support creates a feeling it obtains through touch and the interoceptive sensations it experiences in this feedback relationship.

It is sometime between the third and fifth days that the mother will advance from fingertips to the whole cupped hand to stroke her baby's head. Her own body language progresses gradually from bathing its anogenital region at fingertip distance, that is, from the exploratory information-seeking phase to that of a more intimate involvement in the use of her whole hand.

Recalling here our discussion of cutaneous stimulation in mammals in the perinatal period as contributing to the improved maternal abilities of nonhuman mammals (pp. 22-23), Reva Rubin's remarks, following, are of the greatest interest.

Mothers who have had a very recent experience of appropriate and meaningful bodily touch from a ministering person, as during labor, delivery, or the postpartum period, use their own hands more effectively. This is true of both . . . firsttime mothers and . . . mothers who have had more than one child. Conversely, if the mother's most recent experiences of contact in relation to her own body have been of a remote and impersonal nature, she seems to stay longer at this stage in her own activities with the baby.

These are most important observations, which should lead us to consider seriously whether it would not be a good idea to institute the practice of regular body caressing by the husband of his wife during pregnancy, labor, and after the birth of the baby. On purely theoretical grounds this would appear to be advisable. We have in addition the experimental evidence and the backing of such observations as Reva Rubin's to suggest not only that such stimulation should be given by the husband to his wife, but that this might become standard obstetrical practice.

At a round-table meeting held in October 1974, Ms Raven Lang, lay midwife from Vancouver, said that she teaches the

husbands of pregnant women during delivery to massage the mother's perineum. This method she has found very effective in avoiding perineal tearing and the need for episiotomies.

In parenthesis it is interesting to learn what young nursing students think of touching the skin of pregnant women. Reva Rubin tells us that in most cases the students feel that touching the body of another constitutes an intrusion into areas that are not to be violated. Their inability to time the contractions of the mother in labor was due to their reluctance to apply more than their fingertips to the mother's abdomen. Nothing that the women in labor themselves or their instructors tried helped thaw the students' hands, which were, according to Professor Rubin, "stiff, awkward, cold, and useless." Skin, the students told her, is a strange thing; "it is soft and rubbery; smooth and firm like marble, only warm."

But with unhampered growth and experience beginning nurses, like the beginning mothers, will develop their skills of gathering information through touch as a means of discriminating diagnosis and a vehicle of personally meaningful communication.

They will be able to read and recognize, through touch, the amount of body heat produced by a local or general body task; the kinds of perspiration produced by physical or psychological work. They will discern skin textures and recognize change, favorable or unfavorable. They will recognize another's appeal for contact, controls, or guidance, and be able to provide appropriate dosages for touch for each of these. And since touch is always individualized, the interpersonal communications effected through touch will tend to be significant in a way that verbal language cannot achieve.

Klaus and his co-workers studied maternal behavior in twelve normal mothers at the first postnatal contact with their normal fullterm undressed infants one half hour to thirteen and a half hours after birth, and in nine other mothers during their first three tactile contacts with their premature infants. An orderly progression was observed in the mothers of fullterm

infants. They commenced with fingertip touching of the infants' extremities and proceeded in four to eight minutes to massaging, and encompassing palm contact on the trunk. The rapid progression from fingertip to palm-encompassing contact within a period of ten minutes does not quite agree with Rubin's observation to the effect that palm and close contact develop only after several days. In the first three minutes fingertip contact was 52 percent, with 28 percent palm contact. In the last three minutes of observation fingertip contact decreased to 26 percent and palm contact increased to 62 percent. An intense interest in eye-to-eye contact was observed at first contact.

The mothers of normal infants permitted to touch them in the first three to five days of life followed a similar sequence, but at a much slower rate.

Dr. H. Papoušek has stated that mothers who did not want their pregnancy touch more and longer with the fingertips, and this correlates with the amount of crying in their babies. In wanted pregnancies the mothers choose more palm contact and the babies are calmer in the first days.

The observations of Rubin, Klaus, Kennell, and others suggest that there exists a species-specific behavior in human mothers at first contact with their infants. "Because this period of life appears so critical," write Klaus, *et al.*, "modern social and hospital practices which now separate the mother from her sick or premature infant for prolonged periods require a very thorough re-evaluation." Indeed, such reevaluation is long overdue, for the evidence now available renders it clear that separation is permanently damaging to the premature and fullterm infant as well as to the mother. Early events have long-lasting effects.

There is good evidence that premature babies do much better when their mothers are allowed to handle them, after proper instruction in handwashing, masking, and gowning. Barnett and his co-workers at the Stanford University School of Medicine encouraged forty-one mothers to handle their premature infants at any time of the day or night, with considerable benefit to everyone involved: infants, mothers, nurses, and doctors. There was no increase in the much feared infections and no



complications of any sort. Similar observations have been made by other observers. In commenting upon these findings, an editorial in the *British Medical Journal* (6 June 1970) observes:

It may well be that the immediate postpartum period is the most important time for the initial contact between mother and child, as it is in animals. Many (but certainly not all) mothers feel the urge to have skin contact with the baby immediately he has been born; they think that it is important that they should be fully conscious, and not under an anaesthetic at the time of delivery; and they want to put the baby to the breast immediately.

No one has proved that it is desirable for the mother or the premature baby that this close contact should be established immediately after birth or later during the period in hospital or that absence of contact does any harm. One cannot prove everything, and not everything is worth trying to prove. Great expenditure of time and effort may go into trying to prove something for the sake of proving it: something which, though important in itself, is not worth trying to prove, perhaps because the answer seems obvious. There are occasions when one has to make medical decisions on the basis of common sense and on what seems natural and normal.

Enlightening in this connection is a report, published in 1975, on 614 drug-induced labors, all of which were unnecessary, and most of which resulted in untoward effects either upon infant or mother or both. Sheila Kitzinger, who wrote the report, states that

It was not only the sight or sound of the baby, but physical contact, which was a clear signal in the bonding that took place between mother and neonate, and which in those accounts which described the meeting-through-touch of mother and baby obviously initiated a rush of feeling. A mother who had had a cesarian section woke up to find the baby waiting to be put in her arms, and holding her baby, "washed him in tears of joy." Another woman said, "I didn't feel any emotion when I first saw Catherine lifted out and heard her cry, but as soon as they gave her to me to hold a few seconds later I thought she was fantastic." The mothers themselves often wanted touch most of all: "I

did so want to cuddle and touch her before she was wrapped." Denial of the opportunity for this seemed not only the greatest hardship, but was interpreted as an aggressive act on the part of authority. Women described how they tried to put the baby to the breast, for example, but how it was "grabbed" or "snatched away," or how the midwife "did not believe in it" or "was shocked," or took the baby away because she must not do it as it would "make the baby sick," or took the baby away because she said it was necessary to weigh, bathe, Apgar-rate, clothe it, put it under a heater, or give it to the paediatrician. Other mothers said they were not permitted to hold their babies immediately because "they were too busy with the placenta." These mothers clearly surrendered their babies reluctantly, and some experienced helpless anger.

As a result of the drugs administered, especially analgesics which are injected into the epidural space in the lower back, the mother frequently does not feel the cutaneous contact between herself and the baby as it is being born. The child is "delivered," born, and experienced in an unfeeling way, so that it is not to be wondered at that the mother fails to develop any feeling for the child. As more than one woman has remarked under such conditions, "If the baby hadn't been brought back to me, I wouldn't have missed him." A quite frequent remark heard from such mothers when the baby is first returned to them, after an absence of twenty-four hours in the "nursery," is, "Hello, little stranger."

Klaus and Kennell have observed that when the newborn is separated from its mother, the mother frequently tends to be noticeably hesitant and clumsy when she begins to take on the infant's care. It takes her several visits to learn the simple mothering tasks of feeding and diapering that most mothers pick up rapidly. "When the separation is prolonged," they write, "mothers report that they sometimes forget momentarily that they even have a baby. After a premature baby has gone home it is striking to hear how often the mother reports that, although she is fond of her baby, she still thinks of him as belonging to someone else—the head nurse in the nur-

sery or the physician—rather than to herself.”

*The maternal sensitive* period, as Klaus and Kennell have termed the period immediately after birth, is crucial for that bonding which locks not only mother and child together, but also would lock mother, father, child, and other children together, if they were but given the opportunity to participate in welcoming the new member into the bosom of the family. As things only too often are in hospital deliveries, the baby is separated from the mother, the father does not participate in the birth of his child, and such emotions as the mother is left with she all too frequently projects upon the obstetrician or whatever other helpful figure may have been present . . . or else is left grievously frustrated, a candidate for the development of postpartum blues. It is reported that well over 80 percent of women delivered of babies in hospital suffer from postpartum blues. The position of helplessness in which the mother is put when the baby is separated from her is exceedingly depressing, especially when all her drives are readied to make her the most active participant in the continuing sustenance of the child outside the womb that she was to it inside the womb. When she is denied this, the mothering of her infant, she may come to look upon him as a foreign body, or even, as Dr. E. Furman has stated, to maltreat him because his demands interfere with the fulfillment of her own needs.

Dr. Marjorie J. Seashore and her colleagues investigated the effects of denial of early mother-infant interaction on maternal confidence in the context of the premature birth situation. One group of twenty-one mothers of prematures were denied physical interaction with their infants in the first two weeks following birth, and a contact group of twenty-two mothers were allowed to care for their premature infants in the hospital nursery during this period. Separation resulted in lower self-confidence for primiparous mothers, but not for multiparous mothers; however, even in their case separation had a negative effect on those who were initially low in self-confidence.

A year later it was found that mothers who had not been separated touched their infants more than separated mothers

touched theirs. Mothers of nonseparated male infants laughed with, smiled, and talked to their infants more than mothers in other corresponding groups. Mothers of separated female infants behaved like the mothers of nonseparated male infants. Primiparous mothers spent much more time with their infants in nonspecific play and distal attachment behaviors such as looking, talking, smiling, and laughing. Proximal attachment behaviors such as touching and holding were primarily affected by the sex of the infant. Mothers touched their male infants more, but female infants were held a greater amount of the time.

Klaus and Kennell have summarized the findings of eight studies on the amount of contact between mothers and their newborn infants, and of seven other studies of a similar sort, as well as a number of others. The significant conclusion to be drawn from all these studies is that the groups with early contact, usually within the first thirty minutes, showed significantly more attachment behaviors. Typically, De Chateau in Umea, Sweden, found that in the early contact group three months later mothers fed their babies twice as long as did the controls (after thirty minutes); they also spent more time looking face to face at their infants, whereas the control mothers were more often involved in cleaning them. As Klaus and Kennell remark, "The two groups appear to focus on different ends of the baby. One group was busy cleaning up whereas the other was giving love." Early contact infants cried less and smiled and laughed more than control group infants. Breastfeeding in the early contacts was 175 days, in the later contacts 108 days.

In an endeavor to understand how the normal mother-infant relationship works, Dr. Myron A. Hofer of the Department of Psychiatry, Montefiore Hospital, and Albert Einstein College of Medicine, Bronx, New York, studied the effects of maternal separation in two-week-old rats, when survival without the mother is possible. After one day those that have been separated show clear differences from those that have been normally mothered. The separated infants show less locomotor and self-grooming behavior and are generally less active, and their body

temperatures have fallen 1–2 C below normal levels. When heat is supplied they become more active; indeed, they show more locomotor, exploratory, self-grooming, defecation, and urination, and are slower to fall asleep than normally mothered littermates. It would seem that the separation experience in an unfamiliar environment leads to a state of increased excitability which normal mothering tends to regulate.

Over the first twelve to eighteen hours cardiac and respiratory rates led to 40 percent reductions in the separated rats. These rates could be returned to normal levels by strong tactile stimulation, a tail pinch, for example. The rates could also be maintained at normal levels in the absence of the mother for some twenty-four hours if enough milk was given to produce normal weight gain. Subsequent work supports the view that at this developmental age the central nervous system is “informed” of the amount of nutrient in the gut and regulates cardiac rate accordingly.

“What,” asks Dr. Hofer, “does this tell us about the transfer of information within the mother-infant relationship?” And he answers, “Apparently the mother functions as an external physiological regulatory agent for the infant, through the milk she supplies.” The mother maintains a certain level of responsiveness in the tone of the heart by the milk she supplies, of behavioral responsiveness by her thermal input, and also tends to reduce longterm levels of excitability by tactile and olfactory stimulation. Dr. Hofer concludes that the effects of early separation from the mother are the effects of sudden loss of information. From these studies it is clear that functional organization depends on certain kinds of specific sensory stimulation early in life, the chief of these being tactile and olfactory.

Finally, in a most important statement, Dr. Hofer emphasizes that insofar as the longterm effects of early experience are concerned we would do well to recognize the coexistence of several discrete behavioral and physiological processes set in motion by the early experience, each of which interacts with subsequent developmental processes. Because of the different developmental schedules followed by individual behavioral and

physiological subsystems, the resulting pattern responses may be very different at different ages.

Much research remains to be done on the nature of the physiological changes that occur in mother and infant during the various periods, the sensitive periods, of their reciprocal development. But whether premature or full term it is clear that the mother needs her baby immediately after birth quite as much as the baby needs her. Each is primed to develop their own potentialities—the maternal role in the one case, that of developing human in the other. The crucial timing within this sensitive period is the first thirty minutes after birth. Any interruption in the physical contact between mother and infant at this time detrimentally affects both. Physiologically, the physical interaction between mother and child activates and enhances those essential hormonal and other changes in each which contribute to their optimum functioning. Psychologically, the involvement in each other is profoundly deepened. The presence of each to the other constitutes a continuous reenforcement of their mutual strengths, their reciprocal involvement.

Nonetheless, a large proportion of obstetricians, the hospitals with which they are associated, and pediatricians, seem to be unaware of these facts. During a round-table discussion held in 1974 on maternal attachment, one of the women participants (Ms. Suzanne Arms) “expressed exasperation with the general reluctance to accept the importance and benefits of early mother-infant contact. Dr. Klaus agreed that obstetricians had not accepted it, and Dr. Quilligan added that pediatricians have, in fact, enhanced separation, ‘the first thing the pediatrician does is to put the baby in an isolette and get it out of the delivery room.’ ”

There is clearly urgently important work to be done in reforming the attitudes of obstetricians and pediatricians towards the care of mother and child.

Among the things we need to understand more fully than we have yet done is that the baby takes its cues from the mother’s behavior towards it. Bateson and Mead, writing of Bali, state:

The Balinese child is carried either loosely on the hip, as in most of the plains villages, or in a sling, as in Bajoeng Gede, but even where the hand of the mother is substituted for the sling, the child's adaptation is the same, passive, adjusting itself by complete limpness to the movements of the mother's body. It may even sleep with head wobbling to the timing of the mother's rice pestle. The baby receives its cues as to whether the outside world is to be trusted or feared directly from contact with the mother's body, and though the mother may have schooled herself to smile and utter courtesy phrases to the stranger and the high-caste, and may display no timorousness in her artificially grimacing face, the screaming baby in her arms betrays the inward panic.

The kinesic means which enable the child to respond to its mother's inward states, no matter what her outward ones may appear to be, have already been discussed. The observation is universally confirmed that the child is able to do so in response to the messages he receives from his mother's muscle-joint behavior.

**GRASPING AND LEARNING.** It is evident from the child's exploratory movements with its hands that they play an important role in discovering the lineaments and boundaries of the world in which it lives. Also fascinating to observe is the way young infants will clap the palms of their hands together, at first very much as a reflex, later in obvious enjoyment. It is possible that this constitutes the origin of later clapping in pleasure or approval.\*

During the first two or three months the infant's grasping is largely reflex. It is not until about twenty weeks of age that it is voluntarily able to grasp an object, and even that grasping has to develop through several stages, from the ulnar grasp (on the little-finger side) in the early months to the radial grasp (on the thumb side), and then to the finger-thumb grasp at about nine months of age. At six months the infant transfers objects from

\*For a discussion of the problem thus raised see M. Mead and F. C. Macgregor, *Growth and Culture* (New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1951), pp. 24-25.

hand to hand. It plays with its toes and, as it were by way of validation, everything goes to its mouth, an activity which it abandons at about the end of its first year. After that the child's progress is one of increase in manipulatory precision so that by the time it is three years old it can fully dress and undress itself.

These are skills achieved principally by means of the learning that has gone on through the skin and joint-muscle senses in the feedback interaction between mother and child and the associated experiences she provides. Learning is defined as the increase in the strength of any act through repetition, the child being constantly reinforced by the pleasurable rewards it receives in relation to its mother; the greater the satisfaction, the greater the strengthening of the bond between the stimulus and the response. The opposite is also true, namely, the greater the discomfort, the greater the weakening of the bond.

The manner of learning through these senses is illuminatingly described by Margaret Mead in her account of the Balinese child. In Bali the child spends most of its first two years first within the arms and then on the hip of another human being who is lightly conscious of its presence. The baby is carried very loosely wrapped in a cloth that is sometimes laid over its face when it is carried indoors, and suspended in a sling around the shoulder of mother or father or of a young adolescent. Sleeping and waking occur without the baby moving out of the arms of its mother. At about two months of age, still in the sling, the infant is set astride the hip, now securely fastened to the carrier's body. The mother feels free to pound her rice without further attention to the infant, and the latter learns to adjust to her every movement. If it falls asleep it may be laid down on a bed-platform inside the house, but when it awakens it is immediately picked up. Practically the only occasion when a child under five or six months is out of someone's arms is when it is bathed. Since the child is almost invariably carried on the left hip its right arm is pinioned under the carrier's arm or extended around the carrier's back, so that when it reaches out with the left hand for something offered it, the carrier pulls the left hand back—for it is forbidden to receive things in the



left hand—and pulls the right hand out. In this manner the child's reaching behavior occurs in a supervised, culturally patterned situation. In the course of its first year the child is carried by all sorts of people, male and female, young and old, skilled and unskilled. The child enjoys a rather varied experience of the human world, of different skin surfaces, different odors, different tempos, different ways of being held, and a correspondingly narrow experience of objects. The only objects that it habitually touches are its own ornaments: a beaded necklace with a little silver box attached, on which it teethes, and its own silver bracelets and anklets.

"So the child learns life within human arms. It learns to eat, with the exception of the experience of being fed in its bath, to laugh, to play, to listen, to watch, to dance, to feel frightened or relaxed, in human arms." The child urinates in the arms of its carrier, and feels the urination disregarded. It defecates, and feels the low concern with which a dog is called to tidy up the scene, the baby, the sling, and the body of the carrier. The child is relaxed and the carrier habitually inattentive. Since the infant spends many hours on the mother's hip while she is pounding rice, it is of great interest to learn that Colin McPhee, the leading authority on Balinese music, found that the basic tempo of Balinese music is the same as the tempo of the women's rice pounding. Ethnomusicologists do not appear to have concerned themselves with the possible relation between childhood experiences and the character of a particular culture's music. But clearly this would appear to be a promising field of inquiry.

The early conditioning the Balinese child receives in relation to its mother's body is apparently connected with the ease with which older children fall asleep leaning against other people. Some people fall asleep while standing in the midst of a tightly packed audience at a theatrical performance, relaxed and slightly swaying. The expected environment for sleep is the close proximity of other bodies. During ceremonies of various sorts people may be crowded together in a space no larger than a double bed, sitting, sleeping, dozing.

Clothing for the child means something that binds the child

and its mother together. This is quite different from the meaning clothing has in the Western world, where it is used to separate child and mother. In Bali the mother's shawl serves as a sling, a wrapper for the infant, a diaper, and a pillow folded under its head. When it is frightened the mother draws the cloth over the child's face; she may also do this when it sleeps. The child is attached to its carrier by a cloth that is neither distinctively its own nor the carrier's, and since children are neither dressed nor undressed at routine times each day, neither clothes nor sleeping habits differentiate night from day for the Balinese. They develop no internalized time pattern, waking and sleeping at any hour, as impulse or interest dictates.

During infancy the child is fed in the bath, and mother and father often splash and manipulate the genitals of the male baby; thus the bath becomes a situation of heightened bodily pleasure. It is, however, a mixed kind of pleasure during which the child is manipulated as if it were a puppet capable of obstructive but not of human movement, an attitude which contrasts strongly with the closer contactual relationship with the carrier in suckling and eating snacks in the arms. When, significantly enough, the child is old enough to walk to the spring, he bathes himself, and bathing becomes from then on a solitary pleasure, performed in company but in a withdrawn manner.

In this account of the early cutaneous experiences of the Balinese child we may see, as it were in high relief, the effects of certain kinds of experiences, for which the skin represents a most important sensory receptor, upon the later behavior of the individual, even to the act of sleeping in bodily contact with another. In this connection the question may here be raised whether the increasing modern practice of husband and wife occupying separate beds may not be related to the decreasing tactile relationships between the modern mother and her child.

Separating mother and baby, dressing the baby in clothes, and similar dissociative practices certainly serve to reduce the amount of intercutaneous contact and communication between mother and infant. Instead of sleeping in another human being's arms, as the Balinese infant does, the infant of the

Western world spends the greater part of its waking hours and all of its sleeping hours alone and apart from others. One will spend the whole of one's sleeping life before marriage in a bed by oneself, and when married may find it impossible to adjust to sleeping in the same bed with another, except for the purposes of making love. Hence, the popularity of twin beds may be positively correlated with child-rearing habits in which from an early age the child is conditioned to "go" to sleep alone. It "goes" to sleep. Its separation contributes to a later feeling of separateness, and to the separateness of each of the members of the family.\*

To be tender, loving, and caring, human beings must be tenderly loved and cared for in their earliest years, from the moment they are born. Held in the arms of their mothers, caressed, cuddled, and comforted, the familiar human environment, to which Balinese children can always return, is found in "the known arms of parents and siblings, where fright and comfort, interest and sleep, have already been experienced. Bodies are always there, other people's bodies to lean against, to huddle together with, to sleep beside."

The close contacts and the rhythmic tactual stimulation accompanying the carrier's bodily movements, the patting, stroking, and caressing the child receives in this way or from the hands or other parts of the body of the carrier, are soothing, assuring, and comforting. The rhythm of this kind of tactual stimulation that the mother conveys to the child in her arms is almost universally reproduced in the lullabies sung or hummed to lull children to sleep. Children who are unhappy, frightened, or otherwise disturbed may usually be soothed and restored to a sense of security when taken up in the arms of a comforter. To put one's arms around another is to communicate love to the other, for which another word is security. To rhythmically rock the body when emotionally disturbed is comforting.

The cradle was an admirable invention, many thousands of

\*For an early discussion of this subject see A. Montagu, "Some Factors in Family Cohesion," *Psychiatry*, vol. 7 (1944), pp. 349-352.

years old, which sophisticated societies have discarded. Why? The answer to this question constitutes a case history in itself. It serves to illustrate how our ignorance of the most elementary facts concerning the needs of infants permits us, in the name of progress, to abandon the most valuable of practices and substitute the worst for them. The answer will also serve to shed some additional light on the functional activities of the skin in maintaining physical and mental health.

THE NATURAL HISTORY OF THE CRADLE AND THE SKIN. The story of the decline and fall of the cradle is a typical one of fads, fashions, fallacies, and of ill-informed and misguided authoritarianism. During the 1880's the view developed among physicians and nurses that there was danger in overindulging the child. It was thought that many of the complaints from which babies suffered were due to the well-meant interference of fond parents. It soon came to be "authoritatively" held that the clearest and first evidence of this spoiling of the baby was the cradle. Hence the cradle had to go. Dr. John Zahovsky of St. Louis, recalling this period, writes,

I had the opportunity to follow this attack on the cradle during my early professional career. It seemed to me then that the greatest influence emanated from the babies' hospitals in New York, Philadelphia, and Chicago, since many of the writers in the prominent women's magazines had received their training there. In the nineties all these magazines published numerous articles on the care of the baby. Many of these contained vicious attacks on the use of the cradle.

The well-known educator of nurses, Lisbeth D. Price, in her textbook on nursing published in 1892, emphasized (in italics) that the baby "*should never be rocked nor hushed on the nurse's neck.*" And this, of course, meant that mothers should desist from such practices also.

In America during the 1890's the attack on the cradle was widely extended through articles on child care, for the most part published in the leading women's magazines of the day.

The greatest influence in the campaign against the cradle was exercised by the pediatrician to whom reference has already been made in a similar connection, namely Dr. Luther Emmett Holt (p. 78). For more than a generation Dr. Holt kept up his attack on the cradle. In the first edition of his widely used textbook on pediatrics (1897), Holt wrote, "To induce sleep, rocking and all other habits of this sort are useless and may be harmful. I have known of an instance where the habit of rocking during sleep was continued until the child was two years old; the moment the rocking stopped the infant would awake."

It was Holt who was responsible for writing what became the most popular guide to the rearing of children for almost fifty years. This was entitled *The Care and Feeding of Children: A Catechism for the Use of Mothers and Children's Nurses* and was first issued in 1894. This booklet was read by millions of mothers and mothers-to-be. In it, replying to the question, "Is rocking necessary?", Holt wrote, "By no means. It is a habit easily acquired, but hard to break and a very useless and sometimes injurious one." Again, writing in 1916, Holt advised that the crib should be one that does not rock in order that "the unnecessary and vicious practice may not be carried on." One does not have to imagine the effect that that word *vicious* had upon so many mothers.\*

This sustained attack on the cradle, led by one of the most

\*The reader who may wish to know what manner of man could have entertained such ideas may be referred to a profile written by one of his last assistants together with another pediatrician: Edwards A. Park, and Howard H. Mason, "Luther Emmett Holt (1855-1924)," in B.S. Veeder (ed.), *Pediatric Profiles* (St. Louis, Missouri: C. V. Mosby Co., 1957). A few excerpts may be quoted. "His manner was more than serious, it was earnest. There was nothing about him which could be called impressive, due perhaps to the absence of any outstanding feature; rather he appeared a highly efficient, perfectly coordinated human machine. He seemed to us austere and unapproachable." He is not known to have said "good morning" to his secretary in the many years she worked for him, nor is he known ever to have praised anyone or anything (p. 58). Finally, of *The Care and Feeding of Children*, the writers remark, "It is only fair to point out that in recent years some pediatricians have felt that through its rigid philosophy of upbringing the booklet had had a harmful influence" (p. 53).

influential pediatricians of his day, eventually succeeded in rendering the cradle obsolete, and the outmoded model was turned in for the new one: the stationary prison-like crib. The very fact that, from the earliest days of human history, mothers had rocked their babies to sleep in their arms was taken to mean that the practice was archaic, and that rocking babies in cradles was equally antiquated, certainly not "modern." Alas, in the headlong rush to be "modern" worthwhile institutions and ancient virtues may be abandoned and lost. With so many authoritative voices raised against the cradle as "habit-forming," "unnecessary and vicious," "spoiling," and even ruinous of the child's health, no mother who genuinely loved her child could conscientiously disregard the injunction to discontinue so "detrimental" a practice.

All this was made easier for the mother to accomplish because it was during this period (from 1916 to the 1930's) that the newest and most influential psychology of the day was beginning to make itself felt. This was the "Behaviorism" of John Broadus Watson, Professor of Psychology at Johns Hopkins University. "Behaviorism" held that the only sound approach to the study of the child was through its behavior. The basic contention was that only the objectively observable can constitute the data of science. What could not be observed—the child's wishes, needs, and feelings—was excluded from the behaviorist's interest and was therefore treated as if it did not exist. The behaviorists insisted on treating children as if they were mechanical objects that could be wound up any which way one pleased; children were at the mercy of their environment, and parents could by their own behavior make them into anything they wished. Sentimentality was to be avoided, because any show of love or close physical contact made the child too dependent upon its parents. What one should aim for, urged the behaviorists, was the encouragement of independence, self-reliance, and the avoidance of any dependence upon the affections of others. One must not spoil children with affection.

It was through his book *Psychological Care of Infant and Child*, published in 1928, that Watson and his disciples were

able to compound the errors of Luther Emmett Holt. Mothers were enjoined to keep their emotional distance from the child, to desist from kissing, coddling, or fondling it. They were not to respond too readily to their children's cries for food or attention. Their capacities, Watson said, should be trained towards conquering the world. In order to do so, children must be taught to master their feeding schedules, toilet training, and other tasks, according to a strict regimen. It is the problem-solving techniques and boundless absorption in activity with which the child must be prepared that will enable him to cope with the demands of American society. Such a child will be "as free as possible of sensitivities to people and one who, almost from birth, is relatively independent of the family situation."

It is perhaps not altogether surprising that with such beliefs it was not long before Watson was persuaded to leave the academic world to spend the greater part of his remaining life as an executive in a large advertising agency.

This unsentimental, mechanistic approach to child rearing greatly influenced psychology for a time and exercised a profound effect upon pediatric thinking and practice. Pediatricians advised parents to maintain a sophisticated aloofness from their children, keeping them at arm's length, and managing them on a schedule characterized by both objectivity and regularity. They were to be fed by the clock, *not* on demand, and only at definite and regular times. If they cried during the intervals of three or four hours between feedings, they were to be allowed to do so until the clock announced the next feeding time. During such intervals of crying they were not to be picked up, since if one yielded to such weak impulses the child would be spoiled, and thereafter every time he desired something he would cry. And so millions of mothers sat and cried along with their babies, but, as genuinely loving mothers obedient to the best thinking on the subject, bravely resisted the "animal impulse" to pick them up and comfort them in their arms. Most mothers felt that this could not be right, but who were they to argue with the authorities? No one ever told them that an "authority" is one who *should* know.

Giving the child too much attention, it was repeatedly emphasized, was calculated to spoil it, while the practice of rocking the baby to sleep, either in a cradle or in one's arms, was considered to belong to the Dark Ages of child rearing. And so the cradle was finally banished to the attic or lumber room and the baby consigned to a crib. In this way, it was felt, at one stroke was eliminated an old-fashioned way of caring for babies and an "archaic" piece of furniture. Mothers were resolved to be modern and unsentimental. It is sad to have to record that wherever other nations have "gone modern" they, too, have discarded the cradle.

In India and in Pakistan, for example, where the most "enlightened" people have begun to introduce Western ways, the cradle is also beginning to be considered "old-fashioned," and is being threatened with a fate similar to that which it suffered in the Western world. Dr. Brock Chisholm, the distinguished psychiatrist and former director of the World Health Organization, tells of an occasion when he was being shown over a large general hospital in Pakistan. He writes:

As we were going along a corridor which was a sort of balcony on the side of the building, we passed the screened door of a ward. Suddenly someone pointed out to me, with great enthusiasm, something away off on the horizon in the opposite direction. Now, to any old Army inspecting officer, the situation was perfectly clear; there was something nearby they didn't want me to see. Therefore I was quite sure that whatever was hidden behind this screened door I should see. If you see only what people want you to see you will never find out anything.

So I insisted, at some risk of offense, on seeing this ward, and when I insisted, my guides began apologizing, saying that I really wouldn't like to see it at all. It was of a very old pattern; they were ashamed of it; they hoped to get it changed; they hoped that the World Health Organization might help them get the money to adopt modern and new patterns for this particular ward, because it was very bad indeed. It was a pattern hundreds of years old.

However, I still insisted that even as an antiquity I would like



to see it. I went in to see this ward, with the reluctant accompaniment of the train of people with me, and I saw the best maternity ward I have ever seen in any country, far better than I have ever seen in North America. Here was a big maternity ward with beds down both sides. The foot posts of each bed were extended up about three feet or so, and slung between the foot posts was a cradle. The baby was in the cradle, and I noticed as I looked down the ward that one squeak out of the baby and up would come the mother's foot, and with her toe she would rock the cradle. On the second squeak, which showed that the baby was really awake, she would reach into the cradle and take the baby into her arms, where a baby is supposed to be most of the time.

Dr. Chisholm adds:

They wanted to get rid of that perfectly beautiful arrangement, to put their babies under glass the way we do, and to keep them in inspection wards where they can be seen at a distance by their loving fathers whenever they visit, and taken to their mother if she is good and does as the nurse tells her! They wanted to do all that because we Westerners had given them the impression that all our methods are superior to theirs.

This is a sad story, for in their idolizing drive towards the achievement of Western "progress" and "advancement" the peoples of the East and other technologically developing countries, who until recently had preserved many of their ancient virtues, are slavishly bent on catching up with us, even to the extent of imitating our worst errors.

Among ourselves the cradle went out of existence when the notion became fashionable that to fondle a child, to caress or to rock it was to endanger its development as an unspoiled independent person. To rock it in a cradle came to be regarded as especially backward and reprehensible.

Unsound as this kind of thinking is, and damaging as it has been to millions of children, many of whom later grew up into disturbed persons, the behavioristic, mechanistic approach to child rearing is still largely with us. Hospital "deliveries," the technologization of obstetrics, the removal of babies from their mothers at birth, the failure to feed them soon after they are

born, the elimination of breastfeeding and the substitution and encouragement of bottlefeeding, the demotion of the pacifier, and so on, constitute some of the melancholy evidences of the dehumanizing approach to the making of people, as opposed to human beings.

Having spent the whole of its preceding life snugly ensconced in its mother's womb, the baby would certainly feel more comfortable cosily tucked into a cradle than abandoned to a large crib in which it lies, either on its front or on its back, exposed to the dull and uninteresting flat white surface of either the sheet or the ceiling, with only the prison bars at the side of its crib to break the monotony of this bleak, one-dimensional landscape. As Sylvester has said,

Small infants raised in oversized cribs are frequently very frightened infants because they are too far removed from sheltering surfaces. They often appear inhibited in their courage to experiment and explore. Infants disturbed by new situations or by the prodrome [a premonitory symptom] of physical illness often draw closer to protective shelter (the mother's arms, the sides of the crib), giving spatial expression to their need to constrict the boundaries of their pre-ego protectively.

One cannot help wondering whether the unexplained occurrence of "crib death," or "the sudden infant death syndrome," that is, the finding dead in its cot of a baby who has been perfectly healthy and for whose death no cause can be found, may not, at least in part, be due to inadequate sensory stimulation, particularly tactile stimulation. Inadequate sensory stimulation may not be the only factor involved in crib deaths, but it may well be a predisposing factor. It is rare for a child over one year to be found dead unexpectedly. Most crib deaths occur in infants between one and six months. It would be interesting to know what the incidence of sudden infant death would be in cradle-raised as compared with cot-raised babies.\*

\*A reader of this paragraph sent me an account from her local newspaper of a nurse who, recognizing the symptoms of sudden infant death in her own seven-month-old girl, wired her to an alarm that monitors her heartbeat.

In a crib the baby is weighed down by a set of coverings tucked in at the sides and foot of the crib, and thus left partially surrounded by air; this is not quite what it wants or needs. What it does want and need is the supporting contact of a snugly comforting environment, as reassurance and security that it is still in contact with the world and not airily suspended in it. The baby assures itself that all is well largely through the messages it receives from the skin. The supports it receives in the enveloping environment of the cradle are very reassuring to it, for the cradle affords it something of a replication, a continuation, of the life it led so long in the womb, and this is good and comforting. When the baby feels uncomfortable or insecure it may whimper, and if its mother or anyone else rocks the cradle this will have a soothing effect. Rocking reassures the baby, for in its mother's womb it was naturally rocked by the normal motions of her body. To be comfortable means to be comforted, and for the infant this comfort is largely derived from the signals it receives from its skin. The greatest of all comforts is to be cradled in the mother's arms or lap or supported on her back. There is, as Peiper has remarked, "no better sedative." As he says, "It is necessary to rock a healthy young infant in his cradle or in the arms or baby carriage only once when he is on the verge of crying: He immediately quiets down and starts to cry again as soon as the movement stops momentarily. He will surely not cry if it is done right."

It is absurd to suggest that the cradle is harmful because the infant will develop the habit of having to be rocked before it will be able to fall asleep. If cradle rocking is habit-forming, so is breastfeeding or bottlefeeding. Yet children are weaned from breast or bottle, unless it is done too suddenly, without any serious difficulty or after effects. Millions of babies who had been rocked to sleep in cradles grew up to be adults who were able to fall asleep without needing to be rocked. Children out-

---

When her heart stops the alarm goes off, and the mother simply by touching the little girl starts her breathing again—"About People," *The Sacramento Bee*, 15 January 1974.

grow the cradle as well as they do their baby clothes.

Rocking chairs are still popular among older folks, especially in unsophisticated rural areas, where "modernity" has not made such complete inroads as it has in the more worldly-wise urban areas. It is strange that no one has ever suggested that the rocking chair is "unnecessary and vicious" in adults, or that adults will be unable to relax unless they can do so with the assistance of a rocking chair. Rocking chairs, in fact, for adults, and especially the aging, are to be highly recommended for reasons similar to those which make the cradle so highly recommendable for babies. Rocking, in both babies and adults, increases cardiac output and is helpful to the circulation; it promotes respiration and discourages lung congestion; it stimulates muscle tone; and not least important, it maintains the feeling of relatedness. A baby, especially, that is rocked, knows that it is not alone. A general cellular and visceral stimulation results from the rocking. Again, especially in babies, the rocking motion helps to develop the efficient functioning of the baby's gastrointestinal tract. The intestine is loosely attached by folds of peritoneum to the back wall of the abdominal cavity. The rocking assists the movements of the intestine like a pendulum and thus serves to improve its tone. The intestine always contains liquid chyle and gas. The rocking movement causes the chyle to move backward and forward over the intestinal mucosa. The general distribution of chyle over the whole of the intestine undoubtedly aids digestion and probably absorption. Writing in 1934, Zahovsky stated that "young infants who are rocked after nursing as a rule have less colic, less enterospasm [intestinal spasm] and become happier babies than those who are laid in the crib without rocking. In fact, I have several times availed myself of this physical therapy even in recent years to relieve the dyspeptic young baby. . . . I firmly believe that the cradle assists maternal nursing." Dr. Zahovsky concludes with the words, "Someday, I believe, it will be no disgrace to rear the young baby in a cradle and even sing him to sleep by a lullaby."

More than a generation has had to elapse before anyone

could be found to echo Dr. Zahovsky's words. The cradle should be restored to the infant. It should never have been discarded in the first place. The reasons that were given for its banishment were completely unsound and wholly unjustified, based as they were on misconceptions concerning the nature and needs of the child and the ludicrous notion that cradle rocking is detrimental to the child.

The benefits of rocking are considerable. When the infant is too warm the rocking has a cooling effect, hastening evaporation from the skin. When the infant is too cold the rocking helps to warm him. The warming has a hypnotic effect on the infant, and it is soothing to his nervous system. Above all, the rocking motion produces a gentle stimulation of almost every area of his skin, with consequential beneficial physiological effects of every kind.

As a first step in the ultimately possible, and much to be desired restoration of the cradle to its rightful place,\* rocking chairs have been introduced into some hospitals. For example, at Riverside Hospital, Toledo, Ohio, rocking chairs have been in use as a regular part of the infant-care program. In 1957 a mahogany rocking chair was introduced as a Christmas gift from Riverside nurse aides, who pooled money to buy what they voted as "most needed new equipment" at the hospital. In each of the three nurseries a rocking chair is available, including one for premature infants. Mrs. Herbert Mercurio, obstetrical supervisor, states that the old rocking chairs are always used by nurses and aides at infant feeding time. "It's the best way to feed a baby and put him to sleep at the same time. It's relaxing for the nurse, too." The rocking chairs are used to pacify crying babies. Mrs. Mercurio feels strongly that rocking chairs are useful and practical and encourages their use at home. "A rocking chair," she remarked, "won't spoil a child. This is something they enjoy, but outgrow rapidly."

Quite possibly the rocking chair used in this manner has

\*For those who are handy with simple tools cradle patterns may be ordered for \$1.00 each from Craft Patterns, Dept. L, Elmhurst, Illinois, 60126.

some advantages over the cradle. I think both might well become standard equipment in the home with a small infant—in this manner at once satisfying the need for rocking of both infant and adult.\*

Studies on the effects of rocking on human infants indicate their considerable benefits. Neal studied the effects of rocking on two-to-three-month prematures. These were rocked for the number of days they were premature, and it was found that the rocked prematures were significantly superior to the nonrocked prematures in the development of tracking behavior to visual and auditory stimulation, head lifting, crawling, muscle tone, strength of grasping, and weight gain. In addition no edema ever developed in the rocked prematures, whereas it did in some of the nonrocked ones. Ms. Neal suggests that rocking stimulation provided by the mother during pregnancy constitutes an important sensory input for normal development, and that prematures are unduly handicapped, following deprivation stimulation, by their premature birth.

Woodcock observed the effects of rocking newborn female babies in a mechanical bassinet for one hour a day for six days. On the sixth day they were tested for heart-rate response to a buzzer as a measure of reactivity. It was found that the rocked babies had significantly fewer responses and took a shorter time to finish their acceleration response than the unrocked newborns. The decreased heart-rate and acceleration responses in the rocked infants suggest an increased maturational development.

A fascinating account of the serendipitous discovery of the benefits of rocking for seriously disturbed mental patients is reported by Dr. Joseph C. Solomon. Dr. Solomon observed that patients taken from their rooms in hospital for transfer to another town by train, though they had earlier needed to be

\*On the advantages of the rocking chair see R. C. Swan, "The Therapeutic Value of the Rocking Chair," *The Lancet*, vol. 2 (1960), p. 1441; J. Yahuda, "The Rocking Chair," *The Lancet*, vol. 1 (1961), p. 109. For an amusing account of a club devoted to the cultivation of the rocking chair see T. E. Saxe, Jr., *Sittin' Starin' 'n' Rockin'* (New York: Hawthorn Books, 1969).

restrained in straitjackets and muffs, became very quiet and calm as soon as the train was in motion. Solomon reasoned that, since in the womb the child is subjected to considerable passive motion, part of the human contact these patients may have missed as children was the active rocking in the mother's arms which would, among other things, stimulate the vestibular apparatus. Purposive active motions, Solomon suggests, develop with facility and pleasure when the passive motion imparted by the mother has been satisfactorily internalized as an integrated inner function.

Conversely, when there is little chance for the internalization of the passive movements derived from the mother, the active rocking becomes a habitual device for self-containment. It is a method of defending the formative ego against the feeling of being abandoned. This follows the principle of Newton's Second Law. If you actively push against something, it is as though something is pushing against you. In this way the infant accomplishes the goal of not feeling completely alone. It is as though somebody is always there. As such it is another self-containment device similar to thumbsucking, the security-blanket, nail-biting, or masturbation.

Dr. William Greene, Jr., in the course of studying a group of patients suffering diseases of the lymphatic and blood vessels, found that a large proportion of them had developed their illness following a loss, usually of the mother or mother substitute. The association of vascular ills with the loss of maternal support suggested to Dr. Greene that the fetus, far from being a passive recipient of nourishment, was really a working member of a going partnership. Within the uterus, Greene suggests, the fetus may feel and respond to "vibrations, pressures and sounds provided by the mother's vascular pulses, and emanating chiefly from the aorta, and perhaps other abdominal blood vessels." The growing fetus, stimulated by the mother's internal functions, may be aware of the presence or absence of these, their constancy and change. Intra-uterine activity, for the fetus, may constitute the "outside environment," just as, somewhat

later, the functioning of its own digestive system will constitute, for the newborn, its outside environment. Within the womb the fetus may perceive the mother's internal functions as a kind of outside object, and become aware of itself as a being separate from such stimuli. Dr. Greene suggests that the infant, separated from the mother at birth, is "exposed to new stimuli . . . different, less persistent, exotic, and, most important, relatively random." The change, however, need not be total. The rocking and patting a mother gives her newborn may provide it with "a kind of object perception which bridges birth and . . . is the model for all those perceptions to come later." Rocking "tends towards synchrony with the mother's and/or baby's respiratory rate," while patting "approximates the mother's and/or baby's cardiac rate." The mother, in other words, who rocks and pats her baby may in some measure recreate the stimuli of her breathing and pulse rhythms, rhythms that were significant to it before birth, and thus give the baby the reassurance of a familiar environment that it so much needs.

In this connection, the findings on premature babies, that is, on babies of low birth weight, are extremely interesting. For example, Freedman, Boverman, and Freedman in a study of five co-twin control cases found that the rocked twin, after an upward weight trend was established some seven to ten days after birth, gained weight at a greater rate per day than the unrocked control twin in every instance, although the advantage of the rocked group was only a temporary one. The experimental twin was rocked for thirty minutes twice daily.

A variety of deficits is likely to be exhibited by many prematurely born infants in later life. However, one factor that has received insufficient attention in previous research is the possibility that sensory deprivation may contribute to such impairments. The possible adverse effects of life in the controlled, monotonous environment of an isolette where the premature infant remains, receiving minimal emotional and tactile stimulation for several weeks, have been the subject of a pilot study by Sokoloff, Yaffe, Weintraub, and Blase. These investigators



studied four boys and one girl of low birth weight and compared them with a similar group. The experimental group were stroked five minutes every hour of the day for ten days, while the control group were provided with routine nursery care. The handled infants were found to be more active, regained their initial birth weight faster, appeared to cry less, and after seven to eight months were found to be more active and healthier as measured by growth and motor development. Though the sample is very small these findings agree with those of Hasselmeyer, who found that premature infants who received increased sensory, tactile, and kinesthetic stimulation were significantly more quiescent, especially before feedings, than unstimulated controls.

Klaus and Kennell on the basis of their own studies and a thoroughgoing examination of the work of others have concluded that early contact between mother and premature is vitally important for both of them. Mothers who early touched and explored the bodies of their infants showed increased commitment to the infant, greater confidence in their mothering abilities, and greater stimulating and caretaking skills, as compared with the mothers who did not have early contact with their infants. In fact the studies had to be discontinued because the nurses found them too painful, observing as they did how unfavorable the outcome was for the later contact couples as compared with the early contact ones.

When the children reached age three and a half, mothers who had had early contact with their prematures spent more time looking at them during feeding, and the children had significantly higher I.Q.s, 99 as compared with 85 for late contact children.

The studies revealed that if a small premature is either touched, rocked, fondled, or cuddled daily during his stay in the nursery, he has fewer nonbreathing (apneic) periods, enjoys an increased weight gain, as well as advances in central nervous system functioning.

Over many years of observation Klaus and Kennell gained the distinct impression that the earlier the mother comes to the

premature unit and touches her baby, the more rapid is her recovery from the pregnancy and birth. Their survey of the subject confirms that impression impressively. The importance of the father's participation in these close contacts with the premature should be given greater attention than it has yet received, for it is at this time that a profound bonding is initiated between infant and father, the value of which cannot be overestimated.

What is most needed, indeed, in all our hospitals, as Dr. A. J. Solnit has put it, is "a warm, receptive, flexible environment that is people centered rather than technique centered."

The self-rocking commonly seen among patients in mental hospitals has often been remarked, and is frequently observed as an act of self-comfort in grief among individuals who do not otherwise rock. Among many Semitic-language-speaking peoples, including orthodox Jews, body-rocking often accompanies prayer, grief, and study. It is quite clearly a comforting form of behavior.

The behavior and motivations of all mammalian infants are directed towards maintaining contact with the mother. Contact seeking is the foundation upon which all subsequent behavior develops. When such contact seeking is frustrated, the infant resorts to such behaviors as self-clasping, finger-sucking, rocking, or swaying. These behaviors constitute a regression to the passive movement-stimulation experienced in the womb, the swaying, rocking motions, and the sucking of fingers with forearms pressed against the body. Self-rocking and similar repetitive activities represent substitutes for passive movement-stimulation, just as self-clasping and finger-sucking substitute self-stimulation for social stimulation. Dr. William A. Mason and his colleague Dr. Gershon Berkson, then at the Delta Regional Primate Research Center of Tulane University, New Orleans, tested the presumed relationship between self-rocking and the quality of maternal stimulation. They compared two groups of rhesus monkeys, both separated from their mothers at birth. One group was reared with a cloth-covered social substitute that moved freely about the cage on an irregular

schedule; the other group was reared with a device identical to the moving dummy, except that it was stationary. The three monkeys reared with stationary dummies all developed stereotyped rocking as a persistent pattern, whereas those reared with the moving robots showed no evidence of such behavior.

Thus it would seem probable that self-rocking represents a form of substitute satisfaction of the need for passive movement-stimulation which would normally be obtained from a mother to whom one could cling or who carried one in contact with her body.

Solomon's view that the rocking motion stimulates the vestibular apparatus is undoubtedly sound, but misses the point that, in rocking, the skin itself undergoes a complex series of motions, not to mention the motions of proprioceptors and interoceptors, and the motions of internal organs. All of this is eroticizing. Rocking or swaying represents a kind of self-caressing, a self-comforting, and as such it is often observed in grief and mourning. It is significant that the region of America in which the rocking chair remains most popular should be New England—the land of the cod and the cold fish.

#### ROCKING, MUSIC, AND THE DANCE.

*But O for the touch of a vanish'd hand  
And the sound of a voice that is still!*

Was Tennyson, when he wrote those poignant words, unconsciously or consciously recalling his early experiences of his mother? It has been said that music utters the things that cannot be spoken. In much music there is a very pervasive tactile quality. Wagner's *Liebestod* is said to represent a musical version of coitus leading to orgasm and postcoital subsidence. Debussy's *L'Après-Midi d'un Faune* conveys the most tactile of sexual nuances. In the "rock" music of our day, so aptly named, for the first time in the history of the dance in the Western world the participating couples no longer touch each other at any time but remain separated throughout the dance, dancing most of the time to deafeningly loud music of which the lyrics,

usually addressed to one's parents, or generally to the older generation, only too often say, "You do not understand," "Where were you when I needed you?" or words to that effect.

As Lawrence H. Fuchs has noted, these songs are sharply critical of the older generation, they stress the hypocrisy of society, the loneliness of the good in an unloving world, and the evils of its social injustice. "They constituted not just a manifesto of rebellion but an admission of loneliness and confusion, as in Dylan's words when he tells us that his existence is tied to 'confusion boats.'"

Sounds of various sorts may be experienced and appreciated for their tactile qualities, as, for example, when one says of someone's voice that it is "smooth," like "velvet," or "caressing." Music may be similarly experienced. Sally Carrighar, in her autobiography, tells us that when at the age of six she heard a distinguished violinist play, she "seemed to receive this magnificent sound through not my ears alone but through the skin all over my body."

"Singers," Edmund Carpenter tells us, "determine pitch by feel. The experience is not unlike rock music which one feels, often through the entire body."

Lawrence K. Frank, in a brilliant paper on tactile communication, writes, "The potency of music, with its rhythmical patterning and varying intensities of sounds, depends in large measure upon the provision of an auditory surrogate for the primary tactile experiences in which . . . rhythmic patting, is peculiarly effective in soothing the baby."

Can it be that dances like the Twist and later ones of the same rock variety, together with rock music, represent, at least in part, reactions to a lack of early tactile stimulation, to a deprivation suffered in the antiseptic, dehumanized environments created by obstetricians and hospitals? Where but in such a setting should we enact this most important of all dramatic events: the birth and welcoming of a new member into "the bosom of the family"?

The most involved and the larger part of the constituency of the rock groups are adolescents. This is not surprising. For it

is they who remain closest to the conditions they are protesting through their music, their dances, and their other forms of expression. Under the circumstances it is highly desirable that the young should protest in these ways against the conditions they find so intolerable. But unfortunately the young are not always clear as to the nature of all the things that need to be changed. This would be too much to expect. However, in the areas in which they are most perceptive, child rearing, education, and human relations, they often see far beyond their elders. *Love* is a word which has come to be meaningful to them, to signify a great deal more than it does to most adults, and if they will demonstratively act it out, they may yet succeed in remaking the world.

It is interesting that, in February 1974, George Thiess, president of Arthur Murray, Inc., commenting on the 20 to 35 percent increase enrollment in his dance studios, said that men were no longer embarrassed about dancing. Couples were doing things together. Hostile dancing—his term for rock dancing—“doesn’t work anymore, because couples are relating to each other differently than in the sixties.” He referred to his dance groups as “touch-go-theques.”

The tactual sensitivity with which the baby is born has already undergone much preparatory development in the womb. We know that the fetus is capable of responding both to pressure and to sound, and that the beating of its own heart at about 140 beats per minute and the beating of its mother’s heart, with a frequency of 70, provides it with something of a syncopated world of sound. Given the knowledge that the baby is laved by the amniotic fluid to the symphonic beat of two hearts, it is not surprising to learn that the soothing effect of rhythmical sounds has been connected, in the hypotheses of some researchers, with the feeling of well-being assumed to exist *in utero* in relation to the mother’s heartbeat.

Dr. Lee Salk has shown that, both in monkeys and in the human species, the mother has a marked preference for holding her infant on the left side. Because the apex of the heart is more exposed on the left side, it is reasoned that the preference which

these primate mothers show for holding the baby's head against that side is related to the need of the baby to continue to hear the solacing rhythm of its mother's heartbeat. Since, however, most mothers are right-handed, they are most likely to hold the infant in the left arm, thus leaving the right hand free and putting the infant's head opposite the apex of the heart. This may be the real explanation for the manner in which most mothers hold the infant on the left side.

On the assumption that exposure to a normal heartbeat sound immediately following birth would tend to buffer the trauma of birth by providing the infant with the continuity of a familiar security-giving stimulus, Dr. Salk exposed a number of babies in a hospital nursery to the tape recording of normal authentic heartbeat sounds at 72 paired beats per minute. The results were most interesting. A significantly larger number, 69.6 percent of babies who were exposed to the heartbeat sounds, gained weight after the first twenty-four hours of age, whereas only 33.0 percent of the unexposed group gained weight. One or more babies were crying 38.4 percent of the time during the heartbeat phase of the experiment, but 59.8 percent of the time when the sound was not present. Breathing was deeper and more regular among the heartbeat babies than among the controls. Respiratory and gastrointestinal difficulties decreased during the heartbeat period.

Dr. Salk concluded that the sound of a normal heartbeat during the early days and weeks of its postnatal life may well contribute to the infant's better emotional adjustment later in life. Because of its deep-rooted biological significance as the first sound, the constant security-giving sound, the sound experienced when closest to the mother, the heartbeat sound or its equivalent later succeeds in allaying fear where all else might fail.

What connection, if any, does the mother's heartbeat and that of the fetus have to the beat and rhythms of music? *Zwei Herzen in Dreiviertel Takt—Two Hearts in Three-quarter Time*, was a highly successful film in the early thirties. Its theme song, from which the film took its title, was a waltz written, as are

all waltzes, in three-quarter time, 1. 2. 3—the baby's heart having beaten, most of its time *in utero*, twice for every one beat of the mother's heart. Is it possible that such a juxtaposition of meanings represents a reverberation of uterine or infantine experiences? Dr. Joost Meerloo thinks it likely.

Every mother [he writes] intuitively knows that in order to put her baby to sleep she has to rock it, thereby repeating the nirvanic dance [of the fetus in the womb]. The lullabye "Rock-a-bye Baby" unobtrusively takes the child's memory back to the world it has just left. Rock 'n' Roll does the same for older children. It is just as simple as that! Rhythm and whirling around take each of us back to reminiscences of nirvanic equanimity.

But listen well. This does not imply that the dance means no more than a regressive reminiscing, even though in many of us syncopated rhythms, music and counterpoint at regular intervals cause a deep oceanic yearning and a longing for maternal protection, which once was the happy world we lived in.

Dr. Meerloo also draws attention to what he calls "The Milk Dance," the rhythmic interaction between mother and child during the baby's suckling at the mother's breast. The kind of experience the infant has had at the breast, Dr. Meerloo believes, will influence the individual's later rhythmic interests and moods. Nursing deprivations, being brought too late to the breast or getting no breastfeeding at all, may cause the repressed rhythms to come to the fore inappropriately. "As a result of this so-called early oral frustration these children may withdraw desolately in a corner, spontaneously showing the milk dance, while rocking and rolling in a void. These are the children whom doctors give the sophisticated label of being early schizophrenics. Indeed, some of these children can remain such dancing zombies for the rest of their lives, always searching, in a frozen rhythm and unrest, for the lost Nirvana."

Dr. Meerloo considers it important to describe these early biological roots of the dance, because in his clinical practice he has met "many a dance student who used her or his dance aspirations not only to create beauty of gesture and movement,

but also as a means to return unobtrusively to frustrated, desperate moods carried over from childhood."

"The charm," he adds, "and the seduction imposed on us by these vibrant reminiscences can drag us into the despair of continuous repetition of sad memories just as easily as they can lead us into the highest triumph of freely creating a new counter-gesture: the dance. From then on our movements become lighter than air, ethereal gestures into space, away from all heaviness."

In the dance, Dr. Meerloo thinks, man's earliest existence is revealed. "Whenever rhythm, cadence, syncopation reach ear and eye man is unobtrusively dragged back into the very beginning of his existence; together with others he undergoes a common regression. The clue of mental contagion is the inadvertent common regression *all* people undergo when special sounds and rhythms reach their ears. That is the reason why tapping, rhythmic calling, musical shouting, jazz, etc., are so infectious."

There is no genetically determined predisposition to tap, or for rhythmical calling or music or the dance. The manner in which all these things are developed is culturally determined, learned. For example, keeping time to music by tapping with the foot is a culturally learned activity, mostly as a result of unconscious imitation. Most of us are unaware that we are beating time in this way to the music. Apropos of this point I remember, many years ago, reading the autobiography of the great Hungarian philologist Arminius Vambery. Vambery was an extraordinarily gifted linguist. His Arabic was perfect. This enabled him, in disguise as an Arab, to make the pilgrimage to Mecca when that was still a forbidden city to infidels like him. In Mecca he was honored with a feast by one of the local chieftains, as a visiting Arab dignitary from distant parts. While music was being played the chieftain approached Vambery, and good-humoredly said to him, "You are a European." Vambery was astonished. "How did you find out?" he inquired. "I observed," the chieftain replied, "that during the playing of the



music you beat time with your foot. No Arab ever does that.”\*

There does appear to be a natural predisposition for rhythmical movement in man. The manner of that movement is, however, culturally conditioned. The body contact characteristic of ballroom dancing represented a formalized closeness in rhythm which would not in other situations be permitted except between husband and wife or parents and children. Then in the twenties in America, cheek leaning was added to body contact in dancing. Again, this was a formalized act which would not otherwise have been allowed except between relatives. Did this cheek leaning represent an attempt to achieve the cutaneous contact that had been denied the cheek leaners earlier in life? May it not also be that rock ‘n’ roll and other popular contemporary varieties of music and the dance represent a like response? At least in part, but in a very fundamental way, may not these forms derive from a periphrastic response to an early insufficient experience of comforting, rocking, rolling, and cutaneous stimulation?

In the cradle-rockingless, lullabyless, strife-torn world of the twentieth century, rock ‘n’ roll music and plaintive lullabies, often very beautiful, sometimes stridently percussive, possibly represent compensatory effects for the lack of solicitude which parents have in the past exhibited for their children’s cutaneous needs. Ignorance concerning the experience of such needs is widespread. But this does not mean that it is uncorrectable. The music of a segment of the population and of a period may sometimes bear a direct relation to the kind of early conditioning experiences, or lack of them, the individual has undergone in his early life. Whether or not this is true in the present instance, in relation to the skin, cannot be decided until a great deal more research has been done on this engaging subject. It is an interesting conjecture, and it is worth pursuing if only for the light it might throw on the micro-mechanics of human

\*I quote the story from memory. It will be found in Arminius Vambery, *The Story of My Struggles* (London: Fisher Unwin, 1904).

development, which is to say the light it might throw on human nature.

CLOTHES AND THE SKIN. Our discussion has considered the possible relation of the kinds of experiences of early cutaneous stimulation and the kinds of music and dance that may develop, especially in response to the lack of adequate rocking and cutaneous stimulation. This brings us to another interesting question, namely, the relationships of clothes, skin, and behavior.

Irwin and Weiss have found that activity was significantly less in infants when they were clothed than when they were unclothed. This raised the question whether the reduced activity was due to mechanical restraint by the clothes or possibly the elimination of self-stimulation, or perhaps the alleviation of hunger contractions, or finally, whether the clothing perhaps reduced or offered insulation against incoming stimuli.

The correct answer to these questions is probably that all four factors are operative, but that the last is the most important—the insulation that clothing produces against incoming stimuli.

It is difficult to say whether or not the habit of dressing the infant in clothes early in his life bears any relation to the development of behavioral differences, distinguishing those behaviors from behaviors found in cultures in which neither children nor adults wear clothes. Clothes, and different kinds of clothes, probably affect the skin differently enough to result in behavior directly traceable to the effects exercised through the skin. It may be conjectured that the remarkable innovations in dress worn by young people, and such phenomena as long hair, beards, and other hispid facial embellishments in the male, have some connection with early kinds of tactile or lack of tactile experiences. Hair is an important appendage of the skin, and indeed constitutes the avenue through which much of its stimulation is initiated. Possibly the hair that young men began to sport on their heads and faces in the late 1960's in some measure represents an expression of the need for love which was earlier denied them because of the stroking and patting and

caressing they failed to receive in infancy. The highly successful musical play *Hair* was emphatically, among other things, devoted to long hair and, for a bit, to nudity. Perhaps it would not be putting too great a strain on the imagination to offer the exegesis that what the play was pleading for is more love, for being stroked the right way rather than being rubbed the wrong.

During World War I, when women began to bob their hair and shorten their skirts, Eric Gill, the distinguished English type designer, typographer, and sculptor, penned the following quatrain:

*If skirts should get much shorter  
Said the flapper with a sob,  
There'll be two more cheeks to powder  
And one more place to bob.*

One wonders what he would have thought of miniskirts, topless waitresses, see-through blouses, and bikinis.

Allowing for the demise of Anthony Comstock, Mrs. Grundy, and the Censor, as well as for the increasing amplitude of our enlarging freedoms, it is possible that the exposure of the skin and its integumentary specializations may be related to the needs for cutaneous satisfaction of those who in their earlier lives failed to receive such satisfactions.

The increasing popularity of "skinny dipping" and "nude beaches" may not be altogether unrelated to this. The waterbed, which in recent years has enjoyed some popularity, appeals, presumably, because of its "cuddly" sensual qualities. Instead of the statically "indifferent" qualities of the ordinary bed, it provides a constantly stimulating series of hugs and caresses as one moves in its embrace, and an encompassing support when one sleeps in it reminiscent of that time we fell asleep on our mother's body. Many young couples with an infant or two have spoken enthusiastically of the virtues of the waterbed. In addition to making a fine bed it also makes a good rocker-cradle. The waterbed has to be filled nearly to capacity and set within a frame, in order to save stress on the seams. Because the infant

may manage to find his way between the bed and the frame, he should never be left unattended on the waterbed. Padding and bedclothes help to protect the bed from puncture. Parents can sleep together with their infants on the bed in comfort, and with much less interruption than when the infant is in a crib. Infants and their siblings love to run and jump about on a waterbed, and one never has to worry about spills ruining the mattress. Failing a waterbed, a regular bed can be lowered to a safe level or the mattress placed on the floor as a safety precaution to keep young ones from tumbling out.

Clothes largely cut off the experience of pleasurable sensations from the skin, hence, the actual or symbolic shedding of clothes may represent attempts to enjoy experiences that had been earlier denied. Natural skin stimulation, the play of air, sun, and wind upon the body, can be very pleasurable. Flügel, who conducted an inquiry into the matter, found that such natural skin stimulation was often described in "glowing" terms, as "heavenly," "perfectly delightful," "like breathing in happiness," and in similar expressions of pleasure. The growth of the nudist movement almost certainly reflects the desire for more freedom of communication through the skin.\*

This, interestingly enough, takes the form of visual communication through the inspection of the nude body. All nudists agree that this greatly reduces sexual tension, and is of general therapeutic value. Touching, even between husband and wife, was strictly forbidden in all nudist camps, but that rule is today tending to be somewhat relaxed. Hartman, who has made a serious study of nudists, expresses his pleasure in seeing "nudists engaged in various games involving physical contact but not involving any suggestive activities. I had heard so much about the no-touch rule but had been warmly embraced by both males and females during the period of the research and found

\*One of the earliest serious discussions of nudism and the disadvantages of clothes is to be found in Maurice Parmelee *The New Gymnosophy* (New York: Hitchcock, 1927). See also the book that introduced nudism to America, by F. Merrill and M. Merrill, *Among the Nudists* (New York: Garden City Publishing Co., 1931).

that such cordiality had nothing to do with sexual arousal. This contact was one of the more pleasurable experiences of the research." Hartman points out that American culture has been regarded as a no-touch one. His observations on nudists lead him to believe that nudists may unwittingly have aggravated the situation. "I believe," he writes, "that much more personal growth would take place among individuals where there is some kind of affectionate touch contact, especially with closely related individuals and generally between all persons. It was my observation that the no-touch rule is on its way out."

The association of nudity with sex is, of course, so strong that where touching of the clothed body is permissible, the same part of the body is taboo to touch when it is unclothed. This rule, however, does not apply to parents and their small children. As the children grow older, physical contact becomes more restrained, and by adolescence is completely terminated, so that adolescents who touch each other while clothed cease to do so when in the nude in camps.

One of the consequences of the habit of wearing clothes from early infancy is that the skin fails to develop the sensitivity it would have done had clothes not been habitually worn. It has been observed, for example, that among nonliterate peoples the skin is very much more responsive to stimuli than it is among Europeans. Kilton Stewart, in his book *Pygmies and Dream Giants*, reports of the Philippine Negritos that they "are very sensitive to creeping things, and were amazed that an ant could crawl up my leg without my being aware of it."

The differences between individuals in skin sensitivity are quite remarkable. There are some who when they touch another feel "a sort of electrical current" passing between them, whereas others experience nothing of the sort. It is also of interest to note that while some individuals retain this sensitivity into old age, others tend to lose it in middle age. Quite possibly in these latter cases hormonal changes may be involved.

The "electricity" that is often, metaphorically speaking, said to pass between people when touching one another may be

something more than a mere metaphor. The skin is an especially good electrical conductor. Electrical changes may be measured at the skin surface in a variety of ways, one of the best known of these being the psychogalvanometer or, as it is commonly miscalled, "the lie detector." Emotional changes acting through the autonomic nervous system usually produce an increase in the electrical conductance of the skin (a decrease in resistance) across the palms of the hands or feet. There can be little doubt that in tactile stimulation electrical changes are transmitted from one individual to the other.

Finally, it is worth noting that the skin usually contains little moisture, and that cold dry skin is a good insulator and constitutes the principal protection against electric shock.

"DERMO-OPTICAL PERCEPTION." Some persons claim to possess skins so sensitive that they are able to "see" with them. Since the skin is derived from the same embryological ectodermal layer as the eyes, several investigators have maintained that in such individuals the skin has retained some primitive optical properties, and it is this that enables them to see with the skin. This view was forcibly argued by the French novelist Jules Romains in 1919 in his book, *Vision Extra-Rétinienne*. At regular intervals the idea makes its appearance in the press, when some individual is reported with "eyeless sight," or as being able to see from the socket from which his eye was removed, or through his fingers, or through the skin of the face following a thorough sealing of the eyes.

There is, in fact, no evidence whatever that will withstand a moment's critical examination that anyone has ever been able to see with the skin. What appear to be impressive performances are usually due to trickery. Martin Gardner has discussed these alleged cases of dermo-optical perception, and thoroughly disposed of them. The sensory capacities of the skin are remarkable enough to render the making of exaggerated claims for it quite unnecessary. The ability of blind persons like Laura Bridgman and Helen Keller, and Madame de Staël, who used to pass her hands over the faces of her visitors in order to

gain some idea of what they looked like, are a matter of record. But no one ever claimed that these ladies were seeing through their skin. We all have stereognostic ability—that is, the ability to perceive objects or forms by touch—and in a metaphoric sense most human beings can almost “see” the form of the object they have touched. The tips of the fingers are the parts of the body that are characterized by the greatest sensitivity in “reading,” that is in stereognizing, the form of objects by touch. The Braille Alphabet, three dots high and three dots wide, makes it possible for blind people to read the most complex works in any language. In Braille the reader does not “see,” but interprets the dots in the brain as read through the fingertips. This code was the invention of a blind boy of fifteen, Louis Braille (1809–1852).

If any evidence were required to demonstrate the mind of the skin it could rest on the sensory capacities of the fingertips alone. Those capacities, in the form of sensory receptors that pick up the stimuli, in turn transmit them to the brain in the form of complex nervous impulses. Through repetition, that is by learning, capacities become abilities enabling the individual to make the fine discriminations that endow the particular sensations with particular meanings. An ability is a trained capacity, and every human being has to learn how to make such fine discriminations. Just as he has to learn the ability of stereognosis so, too, he learns to develop the sensitivities inherent in his skin, or he does not. That particular variety of learning is almost entirely determined by the cutaneous and related experiences he has undergone during infancy and childhood.

**DERMOGRAPHIA.** *Dermographia* or *dermatographia* is skin writing or the raising of wheals by pressure, usually upon the broad expanse of the back. One may write on the skin with a blunt instrument. When the wheals show up red, hyperreactivity of the vagus nerve (vagotonia) is involved; when the wheals are predominantly white the sympathetic nervous system is involved. The wheals themselves are produced by oozing of fluid from capillaries into the surrounding tissue, the oozing

in turn, apparently, resulting from local dilation of the blood vessels. Everyone's skin will wheal if stroked sufficiently often or struck sufficiently hard, but in the abnormal cases mild stroking is sufficient to produce dermatographia. Whether or not dermatographia has any relation whatever to early childhood cutaneous experience is at present quite unknown.

Children have for generations played at tracing letters on each other's backs, competing with each other for the highest number of correct identifications. Adults can play this game with varying degrees of competence. The brain, clearly, is capable of translating patterns of stimulated touch receptors into letters and simple images. No one, so far as I know, has ever studied the variability in translating such dermatographic messages in different individuals. It would not, I think, be too rash to predict that significant correlations would be found between such dermatographic skills and early cutaneous experience.

Drs. Paul Bach-y-Rita and Carter C. Collins of the Smith-Kettlewell Institute of Visual Sciences of the University of the Pacific Graduate School of Medical Sciences in San Francisco, basing themselves on the knowledge of the ability of the brain to translate dermal messages, have found that such translation also occurs when the stimuli come from arrays of electrodes or vibrating points connected to a camera. After a few hours of training, blind subjects can recognize geometric figures and objects like chairs and telephones. Additional training produces the ability to judge distance and even to recognize faces.

The skin and the retina of the eye are unique in that their sensory receptors are laid out in a pattern. This enables both the retina and the skin to pick up regularities and patterns of stimuli and to convert them readily into images in the brain. Using an array of electrodes mounted in an elastic matrix, which can be worn on the back or abdomen, under regular clothes, a camera is mounted on the blind person's head like a miner's lamp. This camera can transmit to the electrodes the information it picks up, which the electrodes in turn transmit to the skin. The information is then translated in the brain for what it is. During the course of this research it was found that



the abdominal skin "sees" better than that of the back or forearms.

The spatio-temporal perceptive capacities of the skin are quite remarkable. Time is handled almost as well by the skin as by the ear. The skin can pick up a break of about 10 thousandths of a second in a steady mechanical pressure or tactile buzz. Eye discriminations are about 25-35 thousandths of a second. The skin picks up the location of distances on its surface very much more efficiently than the ear is able to locate sounds at a distance. Utilizing this information Dr. Frank A. Geldard of the Cutaneous Communication Laboratory at Princeton University has worked out an opthohapt alphabet which can be flashed to the skin rapidly and vividly. The symbols are easy to learn and read, in a language that may be called "body English." Geldard has shown that Rousseau's envisionment, in 1762, in his treatise on education, *Émile*, of the possibility of communicating through the skin was, indeed, a remarkable piece of prescience. The skin, Geldard has demonstrated, is capable of receiving and reading rapid and sophisticated messages. "There is every likelihood," he says, "that skin languages of great subtlety and speed can be devised and used."

Dermo-optical perception is a myth, but perception through the skin by means of its other properties is a reality. The skin possesses the ability to respond to a large variety of modalities. Already electronic devices are available which vibrate in an outline identical to the letters of the alphabet, enabling a blind person, after a little practice, to see. In addition to vibrotactile communication, research is proceeding on coding alphabets through electropulses. B. von Haller Gilmer and Lee W. Gregg of the Carnegie Institute of Technology have been pursuing this approach. They point out that the skin is rarely if ever "busy," a fact which enables it to learn, to become habituated to codes that cannot be interfered with under any conditions. The vibrotactile or electrotactile signal cannot be shut out. Nor can the skin close its eyes; it cannot even hold its ears—in this respect it more closely resembles the ear than the eye. Von Haller Gilmer and Gregg postulate that by its very nature the

skin is not handicapped with excess verbiage, as is the written and spoken word. Perhaps the skin has possibilities of codes, they suggest, even superior to other channels because of its "simplicity." The skin may be unique in combining the spatio-temporal dimensions of hearing and vision, the ear being best in the temporal, and the eye in the spatial dimension.

With an apparatus designed by J. F. Hahn to deliver and measure square wave pulses to the skin and its resistance, von Haller Gilmer and Gregg have made exploratory studies on both normal and blind subjects. Given areas of the skin may be stimulated at the rate of one pulse per second with a duration of one milli-second, for up to two hours without report of pain. A pulse language, therefore, becomes possible once the pulses for the code have been worked out. Such an artificial language, the elements of which are defined by cutaneous sensations, has remarkable possibilities. Placing the cutaneous sensations in one-to-one correspondence with the elemental sounds of speech (phonemes), these investigators will be using a programmed computer (the code interpreter) as an analog to the human communications receptor. With the aid of this computer they hope to construct a system that may yield the necessary information upon which a good code can be based.

Touch as interval has never been properly investigated. By an *interval* in music is meant the difference in pitch between any two notes. The great variety of intervals experienced in touch carries the signals to the brain, which gives them meaning. As in music, so also in tactile experience, intervals can be either concordant or discordant. The psychophysics of the subject has yet to be explored.

ITCHING AND SCRATCHING. Itching is an irritating cutaneous sensation which provokes the desire to scratch or rub the skin. Scratching, the usual means of relieving itching, is done by scraping with the fingernails. The psychosomatics of itching and scratching are well known. That distinguished polymath William Shakespeare put it this way in *Coriolanus* (I. i. 162), where he makes Caius Marcius say,

*What's the matter, you dissentious rogues,  
That, rubbing the poor itch of your opinion,  
Make yourselves scabs?*

An "itch" in the mind, as it were, will often express itself as an itch in the skin. Musaph, who has written a fascinating monograph on the subject of itching and scratching, describes these as derived activities, that is to say, as activities which are derived from the "sparking over" or transduction into a skin response of experiences related to and prepared by the individual's early life. For example, in frustrating situations angry emotions may be converted infra-symbolically into itching and scratching. The various forms of psychosomatic pruritis—that is, functionally induced itching of the skin—often represent the unconscious striving to obtain the attention that was denied in early life, especially the attention that was denied to the skin. Unexpressed feelings of frustration, rage, and guilt, as well as the strong repressed need for love may find symptomatic expression in the form of scratching even in the absence of itching.

Seitz has drawn attention to the clandestine scratching of many persons who feel ashamed because the practice causes them to experience pleasurable sensations of an erotic quality. For example, Martin Berezin has described the case of a woman of forty-eight who suffered from a severe pruritis ani, so severe that she induced excoriations of the perineum by scratching. During the course of psychotherapy it was discovered that the scratching of her anus represented a masturbatory equivalent, a discovery confirmed when she shifted her scratching to her external genitalia. With the resolution of her conflict the pruritis disappeared altogether.

The erotic quality of much scratching is fairly obvious. An old proverb has it, " 'Tis better than riches to scratch where it itches." Montaigne, in his essay "Of Experience," writes, "Scratching is one of nature's sweetest gratifications, and nearest at hand." While no less a person than James I of England declared that "No one but kings and princes should have the itch, for the sensation of scratching is so delightful." And that

choleric character Thomas Carlyle went so far as to say, "The height of human happiness is to scratch the part that itches." The relief from emotional tension offered by scratching has been portrayed by Samuel Butler (1612-1680) in *Hudibras*,

He could raise scruples dark and nice,  
And after solve 'em in a trice:  
As if Divinity had catch'd  
The itch, on purpose to be scratched. [*I. I. 163*]

Ogden Nash sums it all up succinctly in his quatrain, "Taboo to Boot,"

*One bliss for which  
There is no match  
Is when you itch  
To up and scratch.*

Brian Russell points out that deprivation of love often results in itching, an itch to be loved. "The patient with widespread eczema whose skin relapses on the very suggestion of discharge from the hospital, regresses to an infantile stage of dependency with the mute appeal, 'I am helpless; you must care for me.' "

Scratching may be simultaneously a source of pleasure and of displeasure, expressing guilt and a tendency towards self-punishment. Disturbances in sexuality and hostility are almost always present in patients with pruritis.

The reciprocal benefits implied in the old saying, "You scratch my back, and I'll scratch yours," convey something more than a metaphor.

In August 1971 closed circuit TV was installed in the Tribune Tower in Chicago in order to protect the offices against would-be thieves. But before word got around of the existence of the TV monitors they revealed, writes Clarence Petersen, "something very significant about human nature. The nature of the human is, more than anything else, to itch. It is simply astonishing how many people itch and, of course, that is counting only those who are uninhibited enough to scratch." Indeed, itching and scratching are forms of behavior so often indulged

that almost all of us would be astonished were we to become aware of the frequency with which we resort to them.

The pleasures of back scratching are phylogenetically very old; even invertebrates are soothed by gentle back rubbing, and it is well known that all mammals enjoy it. Also, like man, other mammals enjoy back scratching in the absence of itching even more than they do in its presence. The instrument known as a back scratcher or scratch-back is a very ancient device; the latest electric models are advertised as being "better than a friend, with a hand that jiggles up and down like the real thing." Thus, the sheer pleasure-giving qualities of the appropriately stimulated skin testify to its need for pleasurable stimulation. In this sense almost every kind of cutaneous stimulation that is not intended to be injurious is characterized by an erotic component. Under the appropriate circumstances even a touch on the hand can be sexually exciting. It is highly probable that the differences in the degree of cutaneous sensitivity that different individuals exhibit to the pleasures derivable from stimulation of the skin in all states and conditions of being are largely influenced by early experiences of cutaneous stimulation. Certainly the experiments of the Harlows and others abundantly testify to that fact in monkeys, apes, and other mammals, while psychiatric research fully supports the relationship in humans.

**BATHING AND THE SKIN.** The delight that infants take in a warm bath, their joyful splashing and gurgling, and their great reluctance to leave the water testify to the pleasure they derive from this hydrous stimulation of the skin. It is perhaps not surprising, therefore, that the bathroom has become the temple of the American household, and the daily bath a ritual celebration of the hymn to self-laving. Women find the bath relaxing; men find the shower stimulating. And both men and women often spend considerably more time in the bath than one would think necessary for the mere purposes of cleanliness. Can it be that in addition to enjoying the pleasures derived from the cutaneous stimulation which each sex obtains in its own way, these pleasures in part represent a ritual revival of pleasures

originally enjoyed in the aquatic environment of the mother's womb, and in the early experiences of bathing during infancy?

It is of great interest that men, and sometimes women, who seldom otherwise sing will break out into song in the bathtub or under the shower. What can be the explanation of this? Also, a high proportion of masturbatory activities take place in the bath or shower. Why? Clearly the stimulation of the skin by the water is very different in the shower from what it is in the tub. The sudden and continuing stimulation of the skin by the shower water induces active respiratory changes which in the appropriate subject are likely to result in song. This is much less likely to happen under the more gentle stimulation of the water in the tub. In both cases, however, the rubbing of the skin is likely to induce erotic sensations leading to masturbatory activities.

The heightened pleasure derived from tactile stimulation in water is a serendipitous discovery that many a couple of lovers has made. In water the skin appears to assume new properties, it becomes excitingly smooth, much more pleasant to the touch, and greatly enhances the pleasures of sexual communication.

The enormous increase in the number of private swimming pools, and the rush to the beaches in summer, with bathing incidental to exposure to sun and gentle breezes, further serves to testify to the great pleasure taken in the sensory excitements provided by shedding one's clothes and exposing one's skin to the elements. Years ago Dr. C. W. Saleeby in his book entitled *Sunlight and Health* made eloquent comment on this. Referring to the skin, he wrote,

This admirable organ, the natural clothing of the body, which grows continually throughout life, which has at least four distinct sets of sensory nerves distributed to it, which is essential in the regulation of the temperature, which is waterproof from without inwards, but allows the excretory sweat to escape freely, which, when unbroken, is microbe-proof, and which can readily absorb sunlight—this most beautiful, versatile, and wonderful organ is, for the most part, smothered, blanched, and blinded in clothes and can only gradually be restored to the air and light

which are its natural surroundings. Then and only then we learn what it is capable of.

Virtually everyone, from the time of Plato to the present day, who has ever written on the subject has sung the praises of nudity over the clothed body; but contemporary man, and especially woman, quite fail to understand the needs of the skin, and from this ignorance often do themselves great and irreparable damage. The sun-worship in which increasing numbers of people indulge today not only results in drying, wrinkling, and other damage to the skin, but in many cases initiates the development of skin cancer. Most visible signs of skin damage attributed to aging, as Dr. John M. Knox has pointed out, are actually a result of sunlight exposure. Moderate exposure to sunlight is not only desirable but necessary. Immoderate exposure to sunlight is not only unnecessary but dangerous. It is a rather sad reflection on human folly when one thinks of the billions of dollars women spend on the cosmetic care of their skin in the form of lotions, balms, creams, and the like, while at the same time overexposing their skins to the very worst of possible damaging influences, namely, excessive sunlight. Twenty minutes of exposure to the midday summer sun can result in sunburned redness of the skin. Most people will spend hours on a beach exposed to the sun, an exposure which may result in painful blistering sunburn. It is interesting that the notion of tanning as a sign of health came into being in the 1920's. This corresponds to the period when the heavy-handed teachings of the behaviorists were causing parents to approach their children as if they were automata, and caressing and other forms of cutaneous stimulation of the child were being reduced to a minimum. Possibly, here, too, there is a connection. The tanning may symbolically mean, "You see, the sun has continued to smile upon me, and I have basked freely and uninhibitedly in its embracing rays. I have been well and warmly loved."

SKIN AND SLEEP. The skin remains the most alert of the senses in sleep, and is the first to recover on awakening. Sense organs in the skin and the deeper interoceptive sense organs appear to be involved in bringing about the movements of sleep. Skin that is lain on for too long becomes overheated through lack of ventilation, and as a result messages which result in a change of position are communicated to the appropriate centers. Analysis of heartbeat records in normal sleep have shown that some six minutes before the sleeper stirs his heart begins to beat faster. With the change in sleeping position the heartbeat slowly returns to its normal rate.

Anna Freud has commented on the close interrelation between the needs for sleep and for cutaneous contact, "falling asleep being rendered more difficult for the infant who is kept strictly separated from the mother's body warmth." Miss Freud also draws attention to interrelation between sleep and passive body movement, that is, rocking. The relaxed child sleeps, the troubled child suffers from disturbed sleep. Normal sleep is a stimulus barrier. Disturbed sleep is a condition of vulnerability to internally originating excitements. Children who have been briefly separated from their mothers will, during the period of separation, suffer from disturbed sleep. As Heinicke and Westheimer state in their book on the subject, "We find that not only is the most intense fretting for the parents concomitant with the maximum sleep disturbance, but . . . disturbances in sleep are directly connected with longing for the parents." After the third day there would be a pronounced decline in the sleep disturbances of these children, but difficulties in falling asleep and fear of being left alone were noticeably frequent. Furthermore, "more of the children had persistent sleeping difficulties during the period following reunion (or its equivalent) than did those who had not been separated." The separations of these two-year-old children lasted from two weeks to twenty weeks. At some point during the first twenty weeks after reunion, seven of the ten children who had experienced separation had noticeable difficulty in falling asleep or remaining asleep, or both. The duration of the sleeping difficulties persisted from one to



twenty-one weeks with the median at four weeks.

Such findings strongly suggest that early interference with the normal mothering process, not only after the infant has made strong identifications with the mother, but even before, may seriously affect the individual's ability to fall asleep or remain asleep. And that, in early infancy especially, the mother's holding, carrying, cuddling, and rocking of the infant constitute acts which play a significant role in the development of later sleep patterns that may persist throughout life.

Deprivation of the tactile need, like deprivation of any other need, causes the infant distress. It will therefore sound the distress signal designed to compel attention to its need, by crying. Aldrich and his co-workers found that among the less generally recognized causes of crying in infants is the need for fondling and rhythmic motion. These investigators found a constant relationship between the amount and frequency of crying and the amount and frequency of nursing care: the more care, the less crying. Infants will continue to cry even when they see that they are being approached or when the mother calls to them. Such infants, however, will cease crying immediately when picked up and fondled. Affectionate tactile stimulation is clearly, then, a primary need, a need which must be satisfied if the infant is to develop as a healthy human being.

And what is a healthy human being? One who is able to love, to work, to play, and to think critically and unprejudicedly.

---

## FIVE

---

# SKIN AND SEX

For touch,  
Touch, by the holy powers of the Gods!  
Is the sense of the body; whether it be  
When something from without makes its way in,  
Or when a thing, which in the body had birth,  
Hurts it, or gives it pleasure issuing forth  
To perform the generative deeds of Venus.

—LUCRETIVS (c. 96 B.C.—c. 53 B.C.), *De Rerum  
Natura*, II, 434.

The true language of sex is primarily nonverbal. Our words and images are poor imitations of the deep and complicated feelings within us. Unsure of touching as a way of sharing with others, we have allowed our fears and discomforts to limit the rich possibilities for nonverbal communication. Sexual expression has a power most of us are still beginning to explore.

The French wit (quoted in an earlier chapter) who defined sexual intercourse as the harmony of two souls and the contact of two epidermes, elegantly emphasized a basic truth: the massive involvement of the skin in sexual congress. The truth is that in no other relationship is the skin so totally involved as in sexual intercourse. Sex, indeed, has been called the highest form of touch. In the profoundest sense touch is the true language of sex. It is principally through stimulation of the skin that both male and female are brought to orgasm in coitus, in the case of

the male largely through the sensory receptors in the penis, and in the female through the sensory receptors in the vagina and circumvaginal areas of the skin. Both in the male and in the female the pubic and suprapubic areas, which are covered with hair, are highly sensitive, the *mons veneris*, however, being much more sensitive in the female than the corresponding area in the male. In correlation with this it is interesting to note that in the female the hair of the suprapubic region tends to be crinkly, forming a pad, in contrast to the male in whom the hair tends to be longish and uncurled. Also the *mons veneris* is more abundantly padded with fatty tissue than the suprapubic region in the male. These differences are probably adaptive in response to the male's assumption of the prone horizontal position atop the female in intercourse in relation to the latter's supine horizontal position.

Several functions are served by these anatomical arrangements. In both sexes chafing or bruising of the skin is thus avoided as well as excessive pressure on the bony pubis, while sexual excitement is enhanced. The suprapubic hairs at their bases, when stimulated, serve to produce those chemo-conductor changes in the nerve endings which, together with the nerve endings directly supplying the skin, induce a heightening of sexual excitement. The perineal region, that is the region extending from the base of the external genitalia to and including the anus, is also supplied with hair and sensory nerves that are highly erotogenic. Indeed, the anogenital region in both sexes is supplied with the most highly innervated tactile sensitive hair follicles of almost any part of the body. The nipples in both sexes are similarly highly sensitive, as are the lips. Stimulation of the nipples is sexually exciting. Both in nonpregnant and in pregnant women, as also in men, stimulation produces a significant increase in secretion of the pituitary hormone prolactin, the hormone that maintains lactation and inhibits ovulation. The lips and the external genitalia are especially well supplied with concave, dislike branched sensory nerve endings, each in contact with a single enlarged epithelial cell. Such nerve endings are scarce in hairy skin. In the female, orgasm may be

produced by rubbing the *mons veneris*. A similar effect is seldom achievable in the male by rubbing the suprapubic region. Thus, the female may masturbate without stimulating the vagina directly, whereas the male masturbates by direct stimulation of the penis.

For both sexes the most urgently sexually arousing stimuli are tactile. In sexual foreplay, as well as during intercourse, manual and oral stimulation of erogenic zones greatly intensifies the sexual experience. A little reflection will suggest that there may be some relation between such sexual experiences and those we spent—or did not spend—at our mother's breast. This is especially true of the exploration of the body which the infant makes through its fingers. Interestingly enough the fingertips themselves are erogenous. Reciprocal stimulation of the fingertips between two mutually sexually interested persons can be sexually quite arousing. During coitus breathing is deepened, and this has the effect of washing the CO<sub>2</sub> from the blood; this, in turn, changes the ionic balance of the body fluids, with a resulting increase in nerve excitability, expressed in a tingling of the skin especially at the fingertips.

The question we have to ask is: Do individuals who are maternally adequately cared for differ from those who are not, in the manner in which they respond to cutaneous stimulation in sex relations, in petting, and coitus? Cardinal Newman once said that any fool can ask unanswerable questions. The question we have asked is not unanswerable, but unfortunately not much scientific research has been done that would enable us to answer it. We have seen that the Harlows, in their studies of rhesus monkeys, have got as near that research as anyone. It will be recalled that none of the Harlows' motherless mother-animals ever showed normal female sex posturing and responding. "They were impregnated, not through their own effort, but because of the patience, persistence, and perspicacity of our breeding males." Apparently adequate mothering is necessary for the development of healthy sexual behavior. And what, in our present connection, "adequate mothering" means is the complex of cutaneous stimulations, among other things, which

activates the tactile response systems of the infant, and thus early in its life experience prepares it for later adequate functioning in all situations involving tactility. This appears to be especially true of sexual behavior. Just as the individual learns his or her gender role, so, too, each learns or fails to learn the behavioral responses one makes as a result of conditioning originally initiated through the skin.

René Spitz, in a film he made of the nursing couple, showed how the nursing mother communicates a kind of vital sex education to the infant as it feeds at the breast. This is seen best in the way in which she gives the breast to the infant, the quality and amount of direct intimate contact she encourages between herself and the child, the presence or absence of restless, frigid, or irritated behavior during the feeding or other care of the child, all of which constitute the first preverbal lessons in sex education. Nursing mothers will frequently describe the breast-feeding experience as "sexy," and the quality of this "sexiness" it may be conjectured is not without its lasting influence upon the erotic development of the adolescent of such breastfed infants.

"At the beginning of life," writes Anna Freud,

being stroked, cuddled, and soothed by touch libidinizes the various parts of the child's body, helps to build up a healthy body image and body ego, increases its cathexis with narcissistic libido, and simultaneously promotes the development of object love by cementing the bond between child and mother. There is no doubt that, at this period, the surface of the skin in its role as erotogenic zone fulfills a multiple function in the child's growth.

The mother's holding and cuddling of the child plays a very effective and important part in its subsequent sexual development. A mother who loves her child enfolds it. She draws the child to her in a close embrace and, male or female, this is what as adults they will later want and be able to do to anyone they love. Children who have been inadequately held and fondled will suffer, as adolescents and adults, from an affect-hunger for

such attention. Dr. Marc H. Hollender of the Department of Psychiatry of the Vanderbilt School of Medicine, Nashville, Tennessee, has reported, as part of a larger study on the need for body contact, on thirty-nine women with relatively acute psychiatric disorders, the most common of which was neurotic depression. In the larger study, Dr. Hollender and his collaborators found that the need to be held and cuddled, like other needs, varies in intensity from person to person and in the same person from time to time. For most women, it was found, body contact is pleasant but not indispensable. However, at one extreme they found women who considered body contact disagreeable and even repugnant, while at the other extreme were women who experienced it as a desire so compelling that it resembled an addiction.

The need for body contact, like oral needs, may become intensified during periods of stress. But while oral longings may be readily satisfied alone, with food, tobacco, alcohol, or the like, body-contact longings can scarcely be satisfied without the participation of another person.

Of the group of thirty-nine women patients, twenty-one, or slightly more than one-half, had used sex to entice a male to hold them. Twenty-six of the women had made direct requests to be held. Nine women who had made a direct request had not used sex, and four women who had used sex had not made a direct request.

Clearly, then, such women may offer men sex when their real desire is to be held or cuddled. As one of these women put it, in describing her desire to be held, "It's a kind of an ache. . . . It's not like an emotional longing for some person who isn't there; it's a physical feeling."

Hollender quotes a former call girl who said, "In a way, I used sex to be held." The resort to sexual intercourse as a means of obtaining body contact has been referred to by Blinder in a discussion of depressive disorders. "At best," he writes, "the sexual experiences of these intensely unhappy people seem more an attempt to make some sort of human contact, however incomplete, than to achieve physical satisfaction." Malmquist

and his co-workers, in reporting on twenty women who had three or more illegitimate pregnancies, state, "Eight of the 20 reported that they were consciously aware that sexual activity for them was a price to be paid for being cuddled and held. Pregenital activity was described by these eight as more pleasurable than intercourse itself, which was merely something to be tolerated." Similar observations have been made by other investigators.

Hollender and his co-workers comment, "The desire to be cuddled and held is acceptable to most people as long as it is regarded as a component part of adult sexuality. The wish to be cuddled and held in a maternal manner is felt to be too childish; to avoid embarrassment or shame, women convert it into the longing to be held by a man as part of an adult activity, sexual intercourse" (p. 190).

If one asks why being held by women would not be even more desirable for these patients, the answer is that they do often use various devices to persuade women friends to hold them, but when this is achieved they quickly become uncomfortable and draw away, a withdrawal reaction that never occurs with men. Most of these women linked their desire for being held with "adult" sexuality, as unequivocally unrelated to anything suggesting homosexuality. Overtly, at any rate, they do not want to be taken for lesbians. One woman stated that when she was held by a woman her face reddened and she became afraid that whoever might see her would think she was a homosexual. A third woman said, "I don't want any woman to touch me. I think of lesbians."

Hollender and his co-workers believe that for some women the need to be held or cuddled is a major determinant of promiscuity.

It may well be that such women often have a strong unconscious drive to be held by women, who represent the mother, a need which has been repressed and causes them to seek body contact with men and women on a heterosexual basis, paying the men with their disinterested sexuality, and withdrawing from too close contact with the women for fear that their true

motives may be discovered even to themselves. The face-red-dening of the one woman is perhaps significant in this connection. Some of the patients in this study were so averse to sexual intercourse with their husbands or anyone else that they would forego the strong desire to be held rather than submit to intercourse.

What is being observed in the great longing of these women to be held and cuddled is a response to a need which was largely left unsatisfied in infancy and childhood. This is made evident in cases in which women as young girls had turned to their fathers in the hope of receiving the warmth and love they failed to receive from their mother. They turned to their father not as a father but as a mother-substitute. As women they used sex as a means of obtaining maternal gratifications. In many of these women the nonverbal message is: being held is being loved. It is Hollender's view that the more intense the wish to be held, the more likely it is to stem from the seeking of security, a response conditioned in infancy.

In a further study, in which the original group of 39 women participating in the first project was enlarged to 112, all between the ages of eighteen and fifty-nine, information was gathered on the correlations between the wish to be held and various behavioral patterns and subjective reactions. It was found that a strong desire to be held or cuddled correlated with a general leaning towards openness in emotional expression. Such women were interested in and derived much pleasure from orality, they were comfortable with or accepting of sexuality, felt free to feel and express hostility, responded in a friendly or affectionate manner after imbibing alcohol, responded positively to another form of body contact, ballroom dancing, and found pleasure in tactile behavior of other kinds.

In a study of the wish to be held during pregnancy Hollender and McGhee found the variability rather interesting. In many cases there was a distinct increase in the need to be held; this was associated with a need for reassurance and security. In some women, who felt themselves physically unattractive, there was a decrease in the need to be held. Such women, the inves-



tigators suggest, may be expressing an actual diminution of that need, or they may be reacting against an underlying wish that they either cannot accept or cannot expect to have gratified. The latter might be the case in women who have no regular partners or who regard themselves as very unattractive. The wish may then be blocked before reaching awareness or it may be denied.

How do the sexes compare in the desire to be held and the wish to hold? Hollender and Mercer investigated this question. The subjects were thirty men and forty-five women ranging in age from eighteen to fifty-four. They were patients in two small psychiatric units or were seen as outpatients in the same institutional settings. It was found that quite a significant number of men long to be held, and some don't even have sex in mind; while others feel that it is more masculine to hold than to be held. Apparently, while men can acknowledge their longing to be held, its intensity either does not reach the height it achieves in some women or, if it does, is not reported.

In order to discover what role, if any, cultural differences might play in influencing the desire to be held among women, Drs. L. T. Huang, R. Phares, and M. H. Hollender investigated the matter among five groups of Asian women living in Kuala Lumpur, Malaysia. Altogether 190 women were investigated:

- 24 Chinese-educated Chinese
- 65 English-educated Chinese
- 25 Malay-educated Malays
- 34 English-educated Malays
- 42 English-educated Indians.

All subjects were married, most in their twenties and thirties. The findings are striking. The Chinese-educated Chinese showed the least desire to be held, and regarded the wish as something to be kept secret. At the opposite extreme were the liberated English-educated Chinese, who preferred to be held and were not inclined to keep their wish secret. English education does not have a similar effect on the Malay women among whom, if anything, the effect is opposite, for the Malay-

educated women express the need to be held and are less inclined than the English-educated Malay women to deny the wish. These findings appear to be consistent with the greater relative freedom to express sensual feelings and to enjoy sex among the Malay-educated. The authors conclude that their study demonstrates that cultural factors as well as psychological ones exert a profound influence on the wish to be held. The influence, they add, is similar to that of culture on sexual responsiveness.

Lowen has published a number of case histories of women who suffered a lack of tactile stimulation in infancy, and who in later life engaged in sexual activities in a desperate attempt to gain some contact with their own bodies. "This compulsive activity," writes Lowen, "may give the impression that these persons are oversexed. They are, if anything, undersexed, for the activity stems from a need for erotic stimulation rather than from a feeling of sexual charge or excitement. Sexual activity of this kind never leads to orgasmic satisfaction or fulfillment, but leaves the person empty and disappointed."

These are important points, for they draw attention to the fact that in the Western world it is highly probable that sexual activity, indeed the frenetic preoccupation with sex that characterizes Western culture, is in many cases not the expression of a sexual interest at all, but rather a search for the satisfaction of the need for contact. As Lowen remarks, "An ego that is not grounded in the reality of body feeling becomes desperate."

It is significant that almost universally there is a close identification between touch and sex. In the special case of members of the English-speaking world, as Bruce Malver has said of most Americans (unable to feel comfortable about touch as a friendly or affectionate statement) they see physical contact between adults almost exclusively as a prelude to sex, and hence, subject to the usual range of sexual taboos. Intimations of sexual interest are readily communicated by a touch of the hand or a limb, by a gentle squeeze of hand, arm, or shoulder. And without intercourse each may bring the other to orgasm by the gentle touching, caressing, or stroking, of loving hands.

Intercourse should mean what the word once implied: communication between two people in which coitus plays a part, and does not constitute the whole of the experience of making love. Without tactile communication—what the body feels and says nonverbally—the experience of sex can only be at most incomplete.

Strictly speaking, as Freud pointed out, the whole body is an erotogenic zone, and as Fenichel has stated, touch erotism is comparable to the sexual pleasure derivable from looking (scopophilia). Both are brought about by sensory stimuli of a specific kind in particular situations. In the development from pregenital oral and anal satisfactions to genital primacy, in which sexual excitations become genitally oriented and dominant over the extragenital erogenous zones, the sensory stimulations normally “function as instigators of excitement and play a corresponding part in forepleasure. If they have been warded off during childhood they remain isolated, demanding full gratification on their own account and thus disturbing sexual integration.”

The authors of the chapter on “Sexuality” in that admirable book *Our Bodies, Our Selves* quote a woman in a group discussion who remarked that although she didn’t want intercourse, she did want to be physically close to someone and be held and touched, and she felt “they all go together.”

While the need to held may be experienced as something quite apart from intercourse, nevertheless it is almost always a major component of the need for sex, and in many cases, as we have seen, may be even more compelling. As the authors referred to above say, “From the moment we were born we all began making ourselves feel good by touching and playing with our bodies. Some of these experiences were explicitly sexual.” It is these early tactile experiences and the pleasure they have given that we seek to experience, to reexperience, with a chosen other, throughout life.

A tragic example of the search for physical contact through sex as a reassurance of love and alleviation of anxiety is the case

of the late popular singer Janis Joplin. Myra Friedman, in her biography of the singer, tells it all.

Janis breathed, thought, felt, acted at a primitive level that was nearly absolute. Even in her twenties, she was still like a hurt and pleading child who wants exactly that very love complete in the physical embrace, and sex, in a way, was a valid synonym for what she was in search of. It wasn't love as an adult knows it: no sharing, no interest, no commitment, no giving, none of those things at all. But it really was love to *her*. In her hunger for affection, she was nearly amok. Her constant pursuit of physical contact resonated with echoes of infant longing, and frustration of such a need could not help but produce an unbearable anxiety. In that sense, sex was a palliative, an escape from tension that could not be endured, thus making sexual relief of inordinate, overbearing importance.

In Hollender's and in Lowen's women the need for being held was almost certainly warded off, and has therefore remained isolated and pressing and quite separated from their disturbed and unintegrated need for sexual relations. The only real need they know is the pregenital one of being held and cuddled, and principally loved in this manner. The high intercorrelation between maternal behavior and later child behavior in other variables renders a causal connection between early parental failure and the later longing to be held highly probable.

As Jurgen Ruesch has written,

We know that to secure healthy development any person has to be supplied with the right kind of stimulus at the right time and in the right amount. This is particularly true of children. Quantitatively inappropriate responses of the parents to the infants' primitive messages, such as "I am cold," "I am wet," "I am tired," or "I have had enough" establish deviant feedback circuits. . . . Qualitatively inappropriate responses can produce disturbances which are in no way different from those produced by the quantitatively inappropriate responses. To offer food when thirst is prominent, to offer fluids when excessive cold has to be managed, are self-explanatory examples.

The warding off or separation between the need to be held and the need for sexual satisfaction in Hollender's women may be accounted for by the recognition (made as long ago as 1898 by Albert Moll) of the sexual impulse as divisible into two components, the one limited to bodily and mental approximation to another individual, the *contractation impulse* (from *contractare*, "to touch," "to think about"), and the other insofar as it was confined to the peripheral organs, as the *detumescence impulse* (from *detumescere*, "to stop swelling," "to subside"). Moll makes it quite clear that each impulse at first operates quite independently of the other, as we may observe in children who are highly tactile but who have no accompanying sexual interest in others until further development has occurred. Should failure to develop contractation occur as a consequence of inadequate tactile experience, the individual may become fixated on the satisfaction of this need, with consequent exclusion of the development of the need for detumescence.

TOUCH AND COMMUNICATION. It has been remarked that in the final analysis every tragedy is a failure of communication. And what the child receiving inadequate cutaneous stimulation suffers from is a failure of integrative development as a human being, a failure in the communication of the experience of love. By being stroked, and caressed, and carried, and cuddled, comforted, and cooed to, by being loved, the child learns to stroke and caress and cuddle, comfort and coo, and to love others. In this sense love is sexual in the healthiest sense of that word. It implies involvement, concern, responsibility, tenderness, and awareness of the needs, sensibilities, and vulnerabilities of the other. All this is communicated to the infant through the skin in the early months of his life, and gradually reinforced by feeding, sound, and visual cues as the infant develops. The primacy of the infant's first perceptions of reality through the skin can no longer be doubted. The messages he receives through that organ must be security-giving, assuring, and pleasurable if the infant is to thrive. Even in food intake, as Brody has shown in her excellent study of mothering, "save under

conditions of body security and comfort no infant, however hungry, appeared to enjoy his feeding."

Such evidence as we possess strongly suggests that inadequate communication with the baby through its skin is likely to result in inadequate development of later sexual functions.

Freud's view of the skin as an erotogenic zone differentiated into sense organs and special erogenic zones such as the anal, oral, and genital really refers to erogenized tactile zones, and what he calls infantile sexuality appears to be, as Lawrence Frank has observed, largely tactuality. As growth and development proceed, this tactile sensitivity is gradually transformed into interpersonal relations, autoerotic activities, and eventually into sexual activities. It is to be regretted that in Freud's emphasis, some would say overemphasis, on the erotogenic character of the skin it should have come to be seen principally and almost exclusively as significant for sexual development alone. This erotogenic view of the skin has somewhat hindered the recognition of its role in the development of other behavioral traits.

In this area it would be foolish to pretend to more knowledge than we possess, for while thousands of researches, monographs, books, and articles have been written on virtually every aspect of sex, the role of early cutaneous experience in the mothering situation has been largely neglected. Brody raises the question of "whether earliest skin and muscle erotism has received less than due recognition for the part it plays in gratifications derived from oral erotism and feeling in the first months of life" (p. 338). The answer is that it has, indeed. Hence we are dependent here to a large extent upon conjecture and inference rather than upon the solid ground of research.

The fact that males have projecting external genitalia, penis and scrotum and gonads, makes their handling by the mother, the infant itself, and others, a great deal more inviting and easier than is the case in the female. It is, therefore, likely that male infants in all cultures undergo considerably more genital stimulation than females. This difference in sexual anatomy may also, at least in part, explain the greater frequency of

masturbation—self-gratification through skin stimulation—in boys than in girls. The early stimulation of the external genitalia in boys by the mother, or other persons, or both, may have all sorts of later developmental behavioral effects.

“It is notable,” wrote Lawrence Frank,

that in our discussions of personality development in children and of sexuality, so little attention has been given to the tactual cutaneous experiences of the infant. Like all young mammals who are licked, nuzzled, cuddled and kept close to the mother, the human infant likewise has apparently a similar need for close bodily contacts, for patting and caressing, for tactual soothing which calms him and restores his equilibrium when hurt, frightened, or angry.

This tactual sensitivity is especially acute in the genitals.

This infantile tactuality, like his other organic needs, is gradually transformed as the child learns to accept mother's voice as a surrogate, her reassuring words and tones of voice giving him an equivalent for his close physical contacts, or her angry scolding voice serving as punishment and making him cry as if hit. Caressing becomes the chief form of intimacy and expression of affection, with appropriate words and tones of voice. All physical contacts become meaningful and colored by emotion.

Frank then goes on to point out that during the so-called latency period—the period from about four or five years to about twelve during which interest in sex is sublimated—girls and especially boys are less likely to seek and receive tactual contacts from parents. Tactual sensitivity, however, reappears more strongly than ever at puberty or shortly thereafter, and becomes a major need-objective, to touch and to be touched, not merely as an impersonal sensory stimulation, but as a symbolic fulfillment of the search for intimacy, acceptance, reassurance, and comforting or, in some who have been failed, a continual avoidance of such contacts.

With further development, the need for tactuality

becomes one of the chief components in sexual approaches and intercourse, where the individual's early infantile experiences of adequate tactuality or deprivation may govern his or her capacity for response. The tactual-cutaneous sensitivity of the genitals at puberty becomes more acute and in the male becomes the major focus of his sexuality, while the female seems to retain more of the larger overall tactuality of infancy while exhibiting especial sensitivity in breasts, labiae and clitoris. Auto-erotic practices may serve as both vicarious fulfillments and/or preparation for coitus. [pp. 134-135]

The enormous variety of meanings which sex may have for different individuals, a language which has the kinds of things to say to the other that can be said in no other way, an exchange of love, a means of hurting or exploiting others, a mode of defense, a bargaining point, a way of self-denial or self-assertion, an affirmation or a rejection of masculinity or femininity, and so on, not to mention the abnormal or pathological expressions which sex may take, all, more or less, are influenced by early tactile experience.

As Lowen points out,

The quality of the physical intimacy between mother and child reflects the mother's feelings about the intimacy of sex. If the act of sex is viewed with disgust, all intimate body contact is tainted with this feeling. If a woman is ashamed of her body, she cannot offer it graciously to the nursing infant. If she is repelled by the lower half of her body, she will feel some revulsion in handling this part of the child's body. Each contact with the child is an opportunity for the child to experience the pleasure of intimacy or to be repulsed by the shame and fear of it. When a mother is afraid of intimacy, the child will sense the fear and interpret it as a rejection. The child of a woman who is afraid of intimacy will develop a feeling of shame about its own body.

Dr. Andrew Barclay of Michigan State University has drawn attention to the fact that at birth among the ways in which boys and girls differ from each other are: (1) Boys keep their eyes open more than girls; (2) boys move more; and (3) girls stop crying when picked up. As a consequence boys are held more



during the first six months, and since they do not stop crying when picked up they are walked and rocked for longer periods. After six months the girls are held more since they are not so active and are receptive to holding and cuddling when boys are more likely to resist this in favor of moving about on their own. These differences may serve to explain why males are more easily aroused by visual stimuli and females by tactile ones. Barclay concludes that the changeover from being held to not being held in boys, and from not being held to being held in girls, leads to differences in gender roles.

During the first six months, as Erikson has pointed out, the child is learning about trust and mistrust, and changes in the sequence in patterns of holding male and female infants may influence trust-mistrust in ways which influence and shape gender roles. Since boys are relatively deprived in passing from being held to being less held, males should tend to be more mistrustful of others. Since girls are relatively enhanced by being held more over time, females should be more trusting of people in general. Everyday experience confirms this.

Among the myths with which parents in the Western world have endeavored to condition their children are: (1) "Little men don't cry," and (2) "Nice girls don't do that." By repeating the first myth often enough males learn that to deny their feelings is to be "grown up." By subscribing to this myth we have been producing adults who have denied their feelings for so long that they no longer know what they are feeling, who they are, and therefore are not sure how they should behave. These people require extreme stimulation, such as the explicit sex movies or the "football frenzy" to really feel anything.

Persuading girls to believe that "Nice girls don't do that," is to train them to deny their sexuality. "Nice" girls don't touch themselves, or let boys touch them, and so on. Some females after years of travail manage to free themselves from such early conditionings, some, alas, never do.

Any display of physical affection or contact tends to be interpreted as sexual. This in itself is highly significant because tactility is in fact closely related to the development of sexual

behavior and almost always retains something of that character. However, in the tactile-deprived individual the sexual component of tactility remains confused and anxiety-ridden. Hence, such individuals tend to avoid touching others and resent being touched, except under special conditions.

Early deprivations of tactile experience may lead to behavior calculated to provide substitutes for such tactile deprivations in the form of self-manipulation of various kinds, masturbation and toe-, finger-, or thumb-sucking, pulling or fingering the ears, nose, or hair. It is an interesting fact that among nonliterate peoples who generally give their children all the tactile stimulation they require, finger-sucking or thumb-sucking seldom occurs. Moloney, for example, writes, "My observations in Africa, Tahiti, and the islands around Tahiti, the Fiji Islands, Islands in the Carribean, Japan, Mexico and Okinawa confirmed for me the fact that most babies in these areas are breast fed and carried on the person of the mother. In these areas I noted that thumbsucking was practically non-existent."

Moloney believes that the thumb becomes a substitute for the mother, just as the pellets of paper do, which schizoid or schizophrenic children so often roll between their fingers. As Lowenfeld has put it, the fingers act like antennae or feelers which probe the surroundings for ensuing motor activities.

The oft-heard complaint directed by women at the clumsiness, crassness, and incompetence of men in their sexual approaches and in sexual intercourse itself, men's lack of skill in foreplay and their failure to understand its meaning, almost certainly substantially reflects the lack of tactile experience that such males have suffered in childhood. The roughness with which many men will handle women and children constitutes yet another evidence of their having been failed in early tactile experience, for it is difficult to conceive of anyone who had been tenderly loved and caressed in infancy not learning to approach a woman or a child with especial tenderness. The very word *tenderness* implies softness, delicacy of touch, caring for. The gorilla, that gentle creature, is the most frequently slandered animal when women wish to describe the sexual approaches of

the average male. Sex seems to be regarded as a tension releaser rather than as a profoundly meaningful act of communication in a deeply involving human relationship. In many of its elements the sexual relationship reproduces the loving-mother-child relationship. As Lawrence Frank has put it,

Tactile communication in adult mating, both as foreplay and in intercourse, has been elaborated and refined by some cultures into the most amazing array of erotic patterns which through a variety of tactual stimulation of various parts of the body serve to arouse, prolong, intensify, and evoke communication. Here we see tactile communication, reinforced and elaborated by motor activities and language, by concomitant stimulation, visual, auditory, olfactory, gustatory, and the deeper muscle senses, combined to provide an organic-personality relationship which may be one of the most intense human experiences. It is, or can be, considered an esthetic experience in that there may be little or no instrumental, purposive, or cognitive elements, with greater or less loss of space-time orientation. But the elementary sexual processes of the human organism may be transformed and focused into an interpersonal love relationship with an identified person to whom each is seeking to communicate, using sex not for procreation, as in the mating of a female in heat ready to be fertilized, but as "another language," for interpersonal communication. Here we see how the primary tactile mode of communication, which has been largely overlaid and superseded by auditory and visual signs and symbols, is reinstated to function with elementary organic intensity, provided the individuals have not lost the capacity for communication with the self through tactile experiences.

It may well be asked, If men are affected in this manner by lack of early tactual experience, how are women affected? The answer to that question is: Much in the same manner as the women discussed earlier in this chapter, who longed to be held and cuddled. These women were affected by more or less frigidity, a condition which they could easily conceal by pretending to excitements they did not feel, or by a nymphomania which abnormally craves tactual satisfactions. Once again it must be

emphasized that it is not being suggested that such conditions are entirely the results of tactual deprivations in early life, but only that they may, in part, be so.

Women have always in great numbers complained of the male's lack of tenderness sexually and in general. May not this deficiency have become rather more epidemic in the recent period as a consequence, again at least in part, of the abandonment of breastfeeding and the reduction in the tactual experiences of the child?

Many mothers early begin to reject demonstrations of love by their sons in the mistaken belief that unless they do so they will cause their sons to become too deeply attached to them. There are many fathers who reject their sons' embraces because, as one such father, a physician, remarked to me, "I don't want him to become one of those" (meaning a homosexual). The appalling ignorance revealed in such attitudes is very damaging, and the effects would serve to reinforce the male's inability to relate himself tactually to another human being.

**TACTILE DEPRIVATION AND VIOLENCE.** The Harlows, in a well-known experiment, reported on the adult behavior of a group of five rhesus female monkeys who had never known a real mother of their own. As mothers these monkeys were utterly hopeless—two were essentially indifferent to their young, and three were so violently abusive to their infants they had frequently to be separated. Normally appropriate cues offered by the infants for eliciting maternal behavior resulted in repulsion and rejection, and otherwise brutal behavior. The Harlows suggest that "failure of normal gratification of contact-clinging in infancy may make it impossible for the adult female to show normal contact relationships with her own infant," would be an oversimplified explanation for such behavior, and we agree. They believe, on the contrary, that "maternal affection in the monkey is a highly integrated, global system, not a series of isolated components that vary independently . . . depending more upon general social experience than upon specific experiences." Tactile experience is fundamental, but it is not the

only experience necessary for the adequate social development of animals and humans. Be that as it may, there is a striking parallel between the motherless monkey's behavior toward her young, and that of the human mother who has been massively failed in mothering experience during her own infancy. As Drs. Brandt F. Steele and C. B. Pollock of the University of Colorado found when they studied the parents of abused children in three generations of families, such parents were invariably deprived of physical affection themselves during their childhood. In addition their adult sex life was extremely poor. The women never experienced orgasm, and the men's sex life was unsatisfying.

The parallel between the motherless monkey's adult behavior and that of the parental disasters suffered by the adult child-batterers as children, is deadly. Dr. James H. Prescott, a developmental neuropsychologist at the National Institute of Child Health and Human Development, at Bethesda, Maryland, believes that a principal cause of human violence stems from a lack of bodily pleasure during the formative periods of life. "Recent research," he writes, "supports the view that the deprivation of physical pleasure is a major ingredient in the expression of physical violence. The common association of sex with violence provides a clue to understanding physical violence in terms of deprivation of physical pleasure." He goes on to point out that unlike violence, people cannot seem to get enough of pleasure, for which they are constantly in search of new forms that ultimately seem to be substitutes for the natural sensory pleasures of touching. Laboratory experiments have convinced Dr. Prescott that deprivation of sensory pleasure is the principal root cause of violence. There is a reciprocal relationship between them; *the presence of one inhibits the other*. Rage is not possible in the presence of pleasure. A raging, violent animal will calm down when electrodes stimulate the pleasure centers of its brain. Dr. Prescott suggests that during development certain sensory experiences will create a neuropsychological disposition for either violence-seeking or pleasure-seeking behavior later in life. Writes Dr. Prescott:

I am convinced that various abnormal social and emotional behaviors resulting from what psychologists call "maternal-social" deprivation, that is, a lack of tender, loving care, are caused by a unique type of sensory deprivation, *somatosensory* deprivation. Derived from the Greek word for "body," the term refers to the sensations of touch and body movement which differ from the senses of sight, hearing, smell, and taste. I believe that the deprivation of body touch, contact, and movement are the basic causes of a number of emotional disturbances which include depressive and autistic behaviors, hyperactivity, sexual aberration, drug abuse, violence, and aggression.

Dr. Prescott may be claiming a bit too much for the effects of somatosensory deprivation, but if his claims are in the least excessive they are in the right direction and for the most part, as the evidence abundantly testifies, worthy of more attention than they have thus far received. As Prescott has said, numerous studies of juvenile delinquents and criminals have revealed a background of broken homes, neglectful or abusive parents. Take almost any violent individual and inquire into his history as a child, and it can be predicted with confidence that he will be discovered to have had a lacklove childhood, to have suffered a failure of tender, loving care.\* It should, however, be made quite clear that there are a number of cases on record of persons who suffered a lacklove infancy and who somehow emerged mentally quite healthy.†

To be roughly handled has been considered by many women, especially women of the working classes, an incontestable token of love. There is, for example, the well-known feminine Cockney supplication to her man: "If yer loves us, chuck us abaht."

\*For a detailed discussion of this see A. Montagu, *The Direction of Human Development*. (Revised edition, New York: Hawthorn Books, 1970).

†For the most striking case on record see A. Montagu, *The Elephant Man* (New York: Ballantine Books, 1973). See also D. Beres and S. J. Obers, "The Effects of Extreme Deprivation in Infancy on Psychic Structure in Adolescence: A Study in Ego Development," *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, vol. 5 (New York: International Universities Press, 1950), pp. 212-235; A. M. Clarke and A. D. B. Clarke, *Early Experience: Myth and Evidence* (New York: Free Press, 1976).

The sexual element was very evident in the flagellation epidemics of medieval times, as a penance which the church at first approved and then forbade, when it realized the sensuality involved. That the participants in such flagellation episodes were more than anxious to receive the caresses of the whip suggests that a great many infants in medieval times received an inadequate amount and quality of tactile stimulation.

Slapping children, with whatever intention, as a form of discipline or for any other reason, turns the skin into an organ of pain rather than pleasure. For reasons which are not too difficult to discern, the buttocks have constituted a preferred locus for spanking the child. This region is closely related to the sexual organs, and supplied by sensory nerves which form part of the nervous plexus associated with the sexual functions. Hence spanking on the buttocks may produce distinctively erotic sensations in children, including sexual orgasm. Children have been known to misbehave deliberately in order to receive such desired "punishment," pretending to be distressed while experiencing it.

Rousseau relates that when he was eight (he was actually ten) he learned to know sexual pleasure from the spankings administered by his governess, who used to lay him over her knees in order to attend to him *a posteriori*. Far from being distressed by these assaults upon his integrity, he tells how he welcomed them, and how finally his bed was removed from his governess's room when she became aware of the effects her punishments were having upon her charge.

Whether or not some element of perverted sadism is present in the personality of a particular discipliner, the early conditioning of the association between pain and sexual pleasure produced by spanking may result in a permanent pathology,\* the disorder known as *algolagnia*. Algolagnia is a condition in which pain and cruelty provoke voluptuous sexual pleasure. It

\*For a good discussion of the pathological effects of spanking see J. F. Oliver, *Sexual Hygiene and Pathology* (Philadelphia: Lippincott, 1965), pp. 63-67.

may be either active or passive. Masochistic algolagnia renders the experience of pain, disgust, or humiliation one which produces sexual excitement. Sadistic algolagnia is the opposite, making the infliction of pain, discomfort, fear, or humiliation upon others the source of sexual pleasure in oneself.

Spanking and slapping with the open hand in order to punish children is still too often indulged. Inflicting pain upon them in this manner deprives children of the comfort the skin usually communicates to them; as a result, they may come to associate their own skin and that of others with fear of contact and pain, and thus may avoid skin contacts in later life.

Quite often biting, pinching, scratching, and gripping caresses, even to the point of pain, are intermixed with normal sexuality and are enjoyed by one or both partners. In pathological sexuality such behavior is often intensified, and the skin becomes a dominant factor in the experience of sexual pleasure. Flagellation, generally on the buttocks and thighs, has been a most frequent form of sexual perversion, with every kind of whip imaginable used for this purpose. Establishments have long existed on the continent of Europe especially, and doubtless have existed or continue to exist in North and South America, in which the clients—for a consideration—are all but flayed alive in the search for sexual satisfaction.

The pinching of women's bottoms by "dirty old men" constitutes an example of a sexual perversion which society has clearly understood and found not unamusing. Interestingly enough there are some women who similarly exhibit their interest in males by pinching them with such passion that they leave them black and blue. In sexual arousal the whole sensory character of the skin is heightened. Sensations that under ordinary circumstances would be painful, often become intensely pleasurable. Some women in the midst of orgasm will cry out to be hurt and will enjoy the pain inflicted upon them—a pain always directed at and experienced through the skin. Others will indulge in "love-bites." As Van de Velde says, "Women are conspicuously more addicted to love-bites than are men. It is not at all unusual for a woman of passionate nature to leave a



memento of sexual union on the man's shoulder in the shape of a little slanting oval outline of tooth-marks. The bite occurs almost without exception *during coitus* or immediately afterwards, while the generally gentler, slighter, or at least less noticeable love-bites given by the man to his partner, are part of the erotic play before, or the final stage after, coitus." In the case of the male, "many blue marks or bruises on women's arms are witnesses of the man's *tourbillon*." Van de Velde believes that the feminine inclination to bite during the sexual act arises mainly from the wish to give a kiss more intense than is humanly possible. It is a wish, as it were, to make a permanent integumentary impression, the intensification of the tactile sensation. "Indeed," writes Van de Velde, "both the active and passive partner feel a peculiarly keen, erotic pleasure in the tiny, delicate, gentle or sharp but never really painful nips man and woman exchange as the love-play quickens, especially when such caresses are applied in rapid succession and in adjacent places" (p. 155). The line between the normal and the abnormal is a thin one here, a subject which has been admirably discussed by Havelock Ellis and others.

The extraordinary frequency with which individuals with abnormalities of sexuality suffer from pathologies of the skin suggests not merely a centrifugal psychosomatic effect, but a centripetally originating one. This is evidenced by the frequency with which such individuals strive to solve their sexual conflicts by securing a close, dependable, and passive relationship to the mother or a mother surrogate. It may be postulated that failure of adequate mothering, and especially adequate communication through the skin, almost certainly occurred in the early lives of such individuals.

Scopophilia, to which reference has already been made, the pleasure in looking, may become a perversion, which is then known as *voyeurism*. The voyeurism may be restricted exclusively to the genitals, or be connected with the overriding of disgust, as in looking on excretory functions. Or instead of being preparatory to the sexual aim, it may supplant it, as in exhibitionism.

During the first year of life the association between looking at objects, touching them, and taking them into the mouth is a closely linked one. The association between looking and touching is especially closely connected. The experiences of urination and defecation are pleasantly relieving ones and warming. If, however, the oral needs are unsatisfactorily satisfied, and come to be characterized by greed, hunger, insatiety, with fears of the ensuing hostile aspects of these processes, the visual functions may come to have a similar compulsive, devouring quality, and later tend to be defended by complex inhibitory systems of various sorts. Instead of libidinal oral, anal, tactile, and visual functions being harmoniously integrated, these functions become anarchically and dysfunctionally associated. Thus, looking comes to replace normal sexual outlets as in scopophilia, as does touching, often in abnormal ways such as pinching, scratching, or biting, with or without the accompanying desire to inflict pain, or the various forms of exhibitionism. Women do not usually expose the genital region in exhibitionism, but they will expose breasts or buttocks. This, of course, they have done, with the vagaries of fashion, quite normally for millennia. Exposure of the breasts in ancient Crete was customary, and at various periods in the Western world, devices drawing attention to the breasts as well as to the buttocks have been the vogue. But what appears to be the boldest attempt of all, the attempt to draw attention to the external genitalia, namely, the miniskirt, is a development of the 1960's. Topless dresses have not become the fashion, and see-through blouses have gained a limited popularity.

These phenomena, however, are not in any sense pathological evidences of sexual disturbance. What they are evidence of is the expression of the need for love; and since love and sex have come to be identified in the Western world, sexual attractiveness becomes a means of achieving "love." In this manner love establishes itself as "skin-deep." The more skin she exposes the more lovable the female becomes. This kind of scopophilia has become normal for most males in the Western world who, upon the perception of a female possessing the proper curvilinear-

ear properties will phototropically migrate in her direction. Hence the emphasis upon nudity. In such cases it is not so much skin as sex that is involved. The true exhibitionist, however, may be an extreme prude insofar as nudity is concerned, and may never allow either himself or his wife to see the other in the nude. Puritanical attitudes of this kind are well known to be characteristic of the families of exhibitionists. In such families cutaneous as well as related deprivations are common throughout childhood.

The motivations of strippers appear to confirm our views. Skipper and McCaghy studied thirty-five strippers, and found that some 60 percent came from broken or unstable homes in which the father was in some way inadequate. Lacking the strong response from a father, these girls had to settle for substitutes. In baring their bodies strippers may be merely asking for the attention and affection denied them by their fathers. The girls in this study estimated that between 50 and 75 percent of strippers are lesbians. This fact further tends to confirm the view that the stripper still nurses the feeling of paternal rejection she suffered in childhood.

**SEX DIFFERENCES IN TACTUALITY.** Sex differences in tactile sensibility become apparent very soon after birth, girls having lower touch and pain thresholds than boys, a difference which remains throughout life. At all ages the female is very much more responsive to tactile stimuli than the male, and more dependent upon touch for erotic arousal than the male, who depends more upon visual stimuli. The difference seems to be, at least in part, genetic, but cultural differences undoubtedly also play a role in the development of tactual responsiveness as between the sexes.

Boys respond less to talking and to touch than girls, so parents may find it more rewarding to talk to and touch girls than boys. Beverly Fagot at the University of Oregon studied sex differences in toddlers' play and related these to parental behavior. She found that parents both join in play more with boys than with girls, but paradoxically they also leave boys to

play alone more often. Boys being left alone more often may as a result become more independent than girls.

Tactile stimulation is much more meaningful to females than it is to males. As Fritz Kahn says, bodily contact is to a woman an act of great intimacy and a far-reaching concession. Hence, a woman who refuses intimate connection with a man is roused to indignation if he touches her against her will, and repulses him with the withering words, "How dare you touch me!"

The unique quality of female tactuality has long been recognized in such a demotically meaningful phrase as "the feminine touch."

Another of the differences between the sexes of tactual interest lies in the greater frequency with which the paraphilias—obsessive responses to unacceptable stimuli in order to achieve orgasm—occur in males as compared with females. Examples are necrophilia (attraction to corpses), exhibitionism (genital exposure), coprophilia (arousal by feces), masochism (pleasure in pain), urophilia or uridinism (arousal by being urinated upon), narratophilia (need to be told erotic stories), pictophilia (arousal through pictures), scatophilia (dirty talk), zoophilia (arousal by animals), voyeurism (Peeping Tomism), sadism (arousal by infliction of pain or discipline), and frottage (the act of rubbing against another person in order to achieve orgasm, usually in crowded places). Such paraphilias are largely masculine abnormalities. Paraphilias are not only infrequent in women, but are almost exclusively limited to touch, the feel and touch of another woman in homosexuality or the feeling and touch of a pet in zoophilia. Stealing love or pregnancy substitutes as in kleptomania may serve as a sexually arousing stimulus in women. While feel and contact are essential to a woman's arousal, the male is erotically attracted from a distance.

**SEX DIFFERENCES IN TACTILE EXPERIENCES.** With the exception of the United States, there is little information available relating to the differences between civilized societies in the tactile experience to which each of the sexes is exposed. Margaret Mead has drawn attention to the fact that American moth-

ers tend to be closer to their daughters than to their sons, an observation that has been many times confirmed. Goldberg and Lewis, for example, found that at one year of age girls show more attachment behavior towards their mothers than do boys. Moreover, they found that for both sexes the amount of touching the mother provides is correlated with the amount of attachment at this age. By attachment behavior Goldberg and Lewis mean desire for proximity of the mother, touching her, and response to the mother's departure.

Erikson draws a picture, based on his clinical experience, of the American mother as one who in her son's "early childhood . . . deliberately understimulated him sexually and emotionally," with "a certain determined lack of maternalism." Sears and Maccoby, in their retrospective study of child-rearing patterns in the United States, found that baby girls received more demonstrations of affection than boys, and that mothers seemed to be happier about having girl babies than they were about having boy babies. It was also found, as in the Fischers' study of a New England town, that girls were weaned later than boys, suggesting that the later weaning indicated a more indulgent attitude towards girls. Clay, in her study of American mother-infant tactile interactions, also found that female children received more tactile stimulation than male children. Reva Rubin, Associate Professor of Nursing at the University of Pittsburgh, states that it is her impression that "boys are handled less, caressed less often, and held for shorter periods than girls."

Perhaps this difference in tactile experience, at least in part, accounts for the American female being so much less uptight about tactuality than the American male.

---

## SIX

---

# GROWTH AND DEVELOPMENT

Man is a growing animal, and his birthright is development.—ANON

Growth is increase in dimension. Development is increase in complexity. What role, if any, does tactile experience play in the growth and development of the organism? The evidence, both for animals in general and humans in particular, is unequivocally clear: tactile experience plays a fundamentally important role in the growth and development of all mammals thus far studied, and probably also in nonmammals.

Lawrence Casler has drawn attention to the fact that the ill-effects of maternal deprivation so ably discussed by Bowlby and others are probably the result of perceptual deprivations, principally tactile, visual, and probably vestibular. The vestibule is the central part of the inner ear connecting in front with the cochlea, the essential organ of hearing, and above and behind with the semicircular canals, which give us our sense of balance. Perceptual deprivations are undoubtedly involved, but this is only another way of speaking of social deprivation—and the elements comprising that are complex. When we have learned appreciably more than we know at present concerning the components of maternal love, we shall undoubtedly be able to describe it as a function of biochemical, physiological, kinesic, tactile, visual, auditory, olfactory, and other factors.

From observations made on nonhuman animals we may gain some insight into the manner in which tactile experience, with which we are here mainly concerned, may affect the growth and development of humans. So we will begin with a discussion of the findings on nonhuman animals, and then proceed to the evidence for the effects of tactile experience upon our own species.

**THE EVIDENCE FROM NONHUMAN ANIMALS.** In a series of experiments carried out by Dr. John D. Benjamin of the University of Colorado Medical School, Denver, Colorado, one group of twenty laboratory rats, supplied with exactly the same kinds and amounts of food and living conditions, were caressed and cuddled by the investigator, while the other group was treated coldly. "It sounds silly," one investigator is reported to have remarked, "but the petted rats learned faster and grew faster."

Far from sounding silly, this is exactly what we would expect. The living organism depends to a very large extent upon the stimulation of the external world for its growth and development. Those stimuli must for the most part be pleasurable ones, just as they must be in learning. Hence, as we would expect, animals that have been handled in infancy later tend to be less emotional in open-field tests, defecating and urinating less, and showing more willingness to explore a strange environment, than those animals who have not been handled in the pre-weaning period. Also they are better able to learn a conditioned avoidance response. Handling before weaning also results in a heavier weight of the brain, and in greater development of the cortex and subcortex. More cholesterol and the enzyme cholinesterase have been found in the brains of gentled rats than ungentled ones, thus indicating a more advanced stage of neural development, especially in the formation of fatty sheaths that surround nerve fibers, the myelin sheaths.

Gentled rats show greater liveliness, curiosity, and problem-solving ability than ungentled rats. They also tend to be more dominant than ungentled rats.

Skeletal and body growth are more advanced in gentled than in ungentled control rats, food is better utilized, and the evidence has been cited earlier, showing that gentled experimental animals show less emotionality in stressful situations. (See pp. 23-25.) Attention has also already been drawn to the fact that gentled animals show, as adults, a more efficiently developed immunological system than rats that have been ungentled in infancy. This is a really quite remarkable finding. How this works is at present unknown, but it has been suggested that environmentally responsive hormones may affect the development of thymic function, which plays a significant role in the establishment of immunologic competency. The hypothalamus, which is known to play a role in the regulation of immunity, may also play a role here.

Gentling leads to more rapid maturation of the pituitary-adrenal axis, that is to say, the alarm-reaction system of the body. Rats so gentled in infancy recover from electroconvulsive shock to a degree that is highly significant compared to ungentled rats.

We would expect that early tactile stimulation would in most respects be more important than later tactile stimulation in the development of the organism, and this, indeed, is experimentally found to be the case. Thus, Levine found that handled rats exhibited greater emotional stability, as measured by excretory activity, general activity, and so forth, than nonhandled rats. Furthermore, extra-handled rats, those receiving more than ordinary handling, are better at learning and retention than ordinarily handled or unhandled rats.

Larsson found that repeated handling of male maturing rats made them sexually more responsive to the female. In this way the onset of puberty was seemingly advanced by several days. Rats that were handled twice a minute for a few seconds and then dropped to the female showed shorter intercopulatory intervals and increased ejaculations, from 3.7 to 5.3 per hour. Thus, sexual activity was greatly increased as a result of handling.

While there can be little doubt that genetic factors enter into



the structure of the behavior with which animals respond to handling or gentling, the evidence is unequivocally clear that all animals respond favorably to handling or gentling, and respond more effectively to whatever tests or trials they are put to than animals which have not undergone such tactile experience. Urie Bronfenbrenner has summed up the findings very well.

First, the effects are generally salutary for the organism both physiologically and psychologically. Thus, handling has been shown to enhance the organism's later capacity to withstand stress, its general activity level, and its learning ability. Second, the presence or absence of handling has its maximal impact during the first ten days of life, although significant effects have been reported for animals handled as late as fifty days of age.

On the organismic level, growth and development are controlled by endocrine and neural factors. It is well known that emotional factors are capable of influencing the growth and development of the organism, principally through the differential action of hormones. Animals that have enjoyed adequate tactile experiences will respond very differently from those who have been failed in such experiences. The differences will be measurable, emotionally, in neural, glandular, biochemical, muscular, and cutaneous changes. Such differences have been measured in handled and nonhandled animals, and the findings have been in the expected direction, namely that in all these respects the handled animals are more advanced than the non-handled animals.

The inadequately gentled animal, we may, I believe, safely assume, is an emotionally unsatisfied creature. The satisfaction of tactile needs has not hitherto been considered a basic need, a basic need being defined as one which must be satisfied if the organism is to survive. But the fact is that the need for tactuality *is* a basic need, since it must be satisfied if the organism is to survive. With complete cessation of skin stimulation the organism would die. An organism deprived of its skin cannot live. What we are, of course, generally concerned with is quality, quantity, frequency, and critical periods when the organism

must receive certain amounts and qualities of tactile stimulation, rather than with all-or-none considerations. And what the evidence abundantly indicates is that there are critical periods in the development of every organism possessing a skin during which that outer integument must receive sufficient stimulation if the organism is to develop in a healthy manner.

The pre-weaning period, whenever that may occur, is critically important here, for the new complexities of existence introduced into the life of the newborn and neonate confront it with the kind of insecurities that the beetle placed on its back experiences when its feet lose contact with the earth. The infant wants tangible evidence of security, the experience of reassuring contacts with another body.

**THE EVIDENCE IN INFANTS.** The early development of the nervous system of the infant is to a major extent dependent upon the kind of cutaneous stimulation it receives. There can be no doubt that tactile stimulation is necessary for its healthy development. As Clay says:

The need for peripheral skin stimulation and contact exists throughout life, but it appears to be most intense and crucial in the early phase of reflex attachment. Ribble goes so far as to say that the nervous system of the infant requires some sort of stimulus feeding at this early period. Certainly the young child needs an optimum period for the gratification of his sensual needs, which are both oral and tactile. This is why the preverbal years are considered a critical period for tactile learning. From this time on the needs for tactile contact decline, but tactile stimulation must still be age-graded according to the developmental needs of the human organism.

The evidence indicates clearly that the skin is the primary sense organ of the human infant, and that during its reflex attachment period it is its tactile experience that is critical for continued growth and development. This may be seen in a variety of ways, but most particularly in the growth and development of tactile sensitivity in the infant receiving an adequate

amount of tactile stimulation as compared with the infant who has received an inadequate amount.

There is every reason to believe that, just as the salamander's brain and nervous system develops more fully in response to peripheral stimulation, so does the brain and nervous system of the human being.

Yarrow, in an investigation of the effects of early maternal care on babies, states that perhaps the most striking finding was the extent to which developmental progress during the first six months appeared to be influenced by maternal stimulation. The amount of stimulation and the quality of stimulation were highly correlated with maternal I.Q. "These data suggest," writes Yarrow, "that mothers who give much and intense stimulation and encouragement to practice developmental skills tend to be successful in producing infants who make rapid developmental progress." The conclusion is reinforced, suggests Yarrow, that in institutions it is stimulus deprivation in early infancy that is a causative factor in developmental retardation.

Yarrow also reports on several children who, as a consequence of contact failures in infancy, reacted with disturbances in tactility to any difficulty in the mother-child relationship.

Province and Lipton, comparing seventy-five institutionalized infants with seventy-five infants reared in families, found that institutionalized infants reacted peculiarly to being held, engaged in much rocking behavior, and were usually quiet and slept excessively. "They did not adapt their bodies well to the arms of the adults, they were not cuddly, and one noted a lack in pliability. . . . They felt something like sawdust dolls; they moved, they bent easily at the proper joints, but they felt stiff or wooden." By the age of five to six months rocking appeared in most infants and by eight months was present in all of them. Province and Lipton distinguish four types of rocking: (1) a transient rocking as a normal reaction to frustration; (2) rocking as an autoerotic activity in children who have suffered some degree of maternal deprivation; (3) rocking as withdrawal of attention and extreme preoccupation in children suffering from

infantile psychoses; and (4) rocking which serves the purpose of discharge or self-stimulation.

Shevrin and Toussieng of the Menninger Clinic, observing the disturbed tactile behavior of their juvenile patients, postulated the existence of a need for optimum tactile stimulation in early infancy, which had somehow been denied them. "Such major disturbances were found," they write, "in the history of all the children we have studied thus far." When infants receive too little or too much tactile stimulation, according to these investigators, conflicts are generated which interfere seriously with psychic development. The course of these conflicts can be traced in the thoughts and actions of severely disturbed children of all ages. The main way these children cope with tactile conflicts is not by repression or other psychic defenses. It is either by a defensive raising of thresholds for all stimuli emanating from the environment or from inside the body, or through protective fluctuations in the physical distance between themselves and other people. The fantasy productions of these children yield strong evidence of the conflict, which usually assumes the form of an elaborate denial of the need for closeness. But in spite of this the need for tactile stimulation persists. Shevrin and Toussieng hypothesize that certain rhythmic behavior, such as rocking, is used to prevent a total loss of tactile stimulation resulting from excessive raising of thresholds.

The infant's need for body contact is compelling. If that need is not adequately satisfied, even though all other needs are adequately met, it will suffer. Because the consequences of the lack of satisfaction of such basic needs as hunger, thirst, rest, sleep, bowel and bladder elimination, and avoidance of dangerous and painful stimuli are fairly obvious, we are conscious of the importance of satisfying them. In the case of the tactile needs the consequences of failing to satisfy them are far from obvious, and so these needs have been mostly overlooked. It is important that we begin to understand how necessary it is for the healthy growth and development of the child that its tactile needs be adequately satisfied.

We do not have much evidence of a direct kind that tactile

stimulation or its absence affects the growth and development, physical or psychological, of the human infant. Such direct evidence is largely lacking for the simple reason that it has never been sought in humans. We do, however, as we have seen, have plenty of direct evidence of this sort for nonhuman animals. Also, we have a great deal of direct evidence in human infants which thoroughly supports the view that tactile stimulation is at least as important in the physical and psychological growth of the human infant as it is in the nonhuman infant.

The failure to satisfy tactile needs in the human infant shows how damaging such deprivations can be, and how important such early satisfactions are.

The maternal deprivation syndrome, consisting of the effects of a minimum amount of mothering, unquestionably involves substantial tactile deprivations, among others. It is an interesting fact that almost invariably the skin of such children, instead of exhibiting the roseate firm character of the healthy infant, shows instead a deep pallor and loss of tone, as well as various other disorders.

Patton and Gardner have published detailed records of children who had been maternally deprived and shown how severely their physical as well as their mental growth had been disturbed, a three-year-old child's bone growth in such a maternally deprived situation being just half that of the bone growth of a normal child. Emotionally deprived children everywhere suffer serious retardations in growth, both physical and behavioral. The literature on this subject is now extensive.

It has been demonstrated that children who are emotionally disturbed as a result of an unfavorable home environment tend to suffer from hypopituitarism, with deficiencies in ACTH and growth hormone the commonest defects, associated with short stature. When such children are removed to favorable environments they show a spectacular increase in growth and the development of normal growth hormone secretion.

The physiological mechanisms involved in tactile deprivation appear to be clearly related to those involved in maternal deprivation and emotional disturbances in whatever way induced.

All these mechanisms add up to the one complex series of processes expressed in the word *shock*.

The process of birth represents a prolonged series of shocks which every infant experiences, and nothing exists more powerfully calculated to assuage the effect of those shocks than the fondling and nursing the mother is designed to give the child virtually immediately after its birth. When afforded such reassurance through the skin, the effects of the shock of birth are gradually mitigated. But if the infant is not afforded such an alleviation of his shock, the effects of that experience will continue, and will more or less affect his subsequent growth and development.

Today we know a great deal more about the nature of shock and its effects than was the case only a few years ago. Indeed, we are today in a position to discuss the nature of shock at a cellular level.

Essentially shock is a molecular disorder producing metabolic derangements revolving around aerobic glucose metabolism, resulting in increased amounts of lactic acid which greatly contribute to anxiety, and the production of amino acids, fatty acids, and phosphoric acids. The deficient metabolism of acids produces disruption in the membranes of the sacs of digestive and lytic enzymes known as lysosomes, with resulting death of the cell. The energy upon which the cell is dependent, ATP (adenosine triphosphate) is decreased, with a consequent derangement of protein synthesis and cell membrane pump function. The derangement in protein synthesis interferes with growth and the ability to withstand shock, and the derangement in cell pump function results in swelling. The circulation tends to slow down, blood pressure falls, red blood cells tend to agglutinate, oxygen supply to the tissues of the body is reduced, there is a general wasting away, until the heart stops and the brain is no longer excited. This is, of course, the extreme end effect of unrelieved shock; it is, however, very likely that all these processes occur to some extent in varying degrees in infants receiving inadequate cutaneous stimulation. And, just as in shock, the process is usually reversible by the use of blood

volume, antacids, oxygen, corticosteroids, vasodilators, and energy production solutions like glucose, potassium, and insulin, so the consequences of inadequate cutaneous stimulation in the infant can be reversed by giving him all the tender, loving care he needs, principally in the form of what he best and most immediately understands: warm, fondling, embracing tactuality. The effects upon the infant of such satisfactions of his tactile needs are remarkable.

Temerlin and co-workers, in a study of thirty-two nonverbal retarded males of a median age of nine years, found that the children who received active mothering and maximum skin contact made significantly higher weight gains during the period of the experiment than the subjects in the control groups.

**WHAT THE INFANT FEELS.** In fullterm infants pain and touch are not well differentiated. McGraw remarks,

When only a few hours or days old some infants exhibit no overt response to cutaneous irritation such as pinprick. It is impossible to know whether such absence of response should be attributed to an undeveloped sensory mechanism or to lack of connection between sensory and somatic centers, or between receptor centers and those mechanisms governing crying. Such infants usually do respond to deep pressure stimulation. In any event, this period of hypaesthesia is brief; by the end of the first week or ten days most infants respond to cutaneous irritation.

The relative insensibility of the newborn to cutaneous stimulation has been noted by many investigators.

With growth the number of sensory receptors increase in the skin over a wider area and in close proximity. Part of the newborn's reduced sensibility may be due, as Greenacre suggests, to sensory birth fatigue.

At first the infant's tactile sense is very generalized; it acts as a mass effect rather than as a sharply discriminating critical point effect. Touch and pain are not well differentiated, and the development of critical discrimination of tactile stimuli follows much the same course as the development of returning sensa-

tion after a nerve has been cut. The physiology of this Henry Head, the distinguished English neurologist, described in some detail. As sensation begins to return, it is experienced in a very generalized way; this Head termed *protopathic* sensation. The touch which at first is only distinguishable for the area in general, in time becomes more localized, more critical, so that one can locate it exactly; this Head termed *epicritic*. At first the newborn's tactile sense is largely protopathic; only gradually does it develop the epicritic ability which enables it to localize the point of the stimulus precisely.

It is approximately between seven and nine months of age that specific localization really begins to develop, and becomes well established by between twelve and sixteen months.

Infants probably differ in skin sensitivity. As Escalona has said, "There can be no doubt that something like skin awareness, or sensations of the kind generated by the skin, are sharp and frequent throughout the day for some babies and less intense for others." And she goes on to point out that just such skin-sensitive babies will receive an inordinate amount of attention and handling. Such babies tend to receive a considerable amount of tactile stimulation for the greater part of their waking and half-waking hours. In the Western world it is perhaps a great advantage for an infant to have a sensitive skin or diaper rashes or some other dermatological disorder, for then, at least, it can be assured of receiving something resembling an adequate amount of cutaneous stimulation. Ribble believes that diapering, at least in America, is "invariably overdone." She considers that the desire to keep the baby dry in the first months is misplaced, "except for the comfort of the adults handling the child." And she adds that the frequent diaper-changing may focus the child's attention on this area, "and thus foster later emotional reactions which become deeply involved with the function of elimination." In many cases this may well be so. Escalona points out that there are extraordinary differences in the amount and kind of tactile stimulation to which babies are exposed, and that "the baby's life is largely a succession of sharply felt touches, sounds, sights, movements, temperatures, and the like" (p. 19).



Escalona's reference to "sharply felt touches" almost certainly does not accurately describe what the newborn and young infant feels. The evidence, on the other hand, indicates that the baby tends to feel rather more protopathically than epicritically, and only gradually learns to discriminate discrete point sensations. It would seem to be an admirably adaptive provision that the baby should not at first feel "sharply," but for the most part only in a generalized way, for it is such a general rather than a "sharp" or specific sensing of assurance that he requires in his early days. Not that the infant is incapable of discriminating and localizing discrete point sensations. This he is undoubtedly able to do, but almost certainly in most cases not "sharply." It is on the foundation of his generalized tactile experience that he subsequently learns and refines the sharply felt touches, sounds, sights, movements, temperatures, and the like, into specific, recognizably distinctive and meaningful modalities.

Some babies are born with tactile hypersensitivity, experiencing being touched as painful. This apparently provides a hazard to being comfortable with closeness and to seeing oneself as part of another person. Lourie points out that if such a baby remains unrelated this can result in a long-lasting expectation that dependency involves pain, and in this way masochism may develop, pain in some of these individuals becoming not only a need but also a pleasure. Usually such a developmental abnormality is overcome by the end of the first year, but if it is not, a fear of being touched together with a mistrust of any dependency may result.

More than three hundred years ago Thomas Hobbes wrote, "For there is no conception in man's mind, which hath not first been begotten upon the organs of Sense." The shape and form and space of the outer world of reality, its figures and the background from which they emerge, are gradually built by the infant out of the building blocks of its experience, entering through all its senses, always contingent, correlated, measured, and evaluated by the criterion of touch. If this object that holds me so pleasurably does so long and consistently enough I come to identify her face and eventually all its tangibly visible parts

with pleasure. It is, however, my skin which primarily tells me that this face is pleasure-giving, since, as a baby, it is principally through the skin that I can make that judgment. And so it is with all the other sensations I experience.

How does this sensation, whatever it is, "feel"? Since the various senses are really skin receptors of different sorts, the eyes and ears and nose and certainly the tongue, at first "feel" rather than see, hear, smell, and taste. As soon as he is able, the baby will put to the test whatever he can, by putting it into his mouth, and what he there feels with hand and mouth will tell him what he desires to know. Gradually he will come to increase the distance between what he tactually feels and what he experiences through the other senses, until he is eventually able to recognize each experience or object as separate and distinct from others, and by its own attributes rather than by reference to the verdict of the skin.

As Sylvester has stated, "The mother's sensitivity and selectivity of response facilitates the transition from prevalent orientation by close receptors to orientation by distance receptors. In the earliest stages, the infant's security is a matter of skin contact and kinesthetic sensations of being held and supported. Later, security is derived also from orientation by sight and sound and from the infant's ability to maintain contact with his mother through these perceptive modalities." Sometimes, Sylvester goes on to say, the infant continues to depend upon skin contact, and fails to develop the ability to use sight and sound for orientation and communication. This can occur because of "primary maternal attitudes," or as the result of conditions leading to increased skin sensitization (such as infantile eczema, or the loss or absence of other sensory organs). Often, according to Sylvester, the beginnings of "habitual defects in orientation or body image" can be traced to such early difficulties.

The mother mutually adapted to her child will respond in rhythm to her child's needs. Her flexibility will reflect itself in the child's perceptual development. The mother, as the main source of the infant's ebb and flow of incoming stimuli, is thereby also the main source of his comfort and the performer

of the tasks that will later be assumed by his ego. According to Sylvester, "if a mother prevents her child from regulating approach and retreat autonomously, he may react to threats by drawing closer to or by taking flight from inanimate objects. It is possible that such enforced substitution of gadgets for people is one of the roots of human mechanization."

During the earliest postnatal days the baby spends recovering from the shock of birth, and in the months that follow, it is occupied with the organization of its perceptions, tactile, visual, auditory, taste, and so on. From a base in such experiences the infant begins to differentiate itself from the world which is not self. Objects which at first appeared to have no permanence now become the first conceptual invariants in its mental furniture. The differentiation of its self from the world of objects is a major achievement, and it is one in which touch plays a dominant role. The three principal developments that emerge from this differentiation are the *self* (the agent of action), *objects* (the objects of action), and the *action relation* between them. With the growing differentiation of the self from other persons the need for communication increases, a need which, as Sinclair has pointed out, is made even more pressing as the increasing mobility of the child reduces direct physical contact with others. The earliest forms of vocalization are designed to communicate the emotional and need states of the infant. From such vocalizations his later language abilities will develop.

"From his first day onward," writes Escalona, "the baby is reacted to and himself reacts to other persons. The nature of these contacts, more frequent, varied, and complex the older he gets, is perhaps the single most important determinant of how he shall experience his world and of the kind of human relationships which he will be able to have as he grows up" (p. 33).

The infant will develop a sense of trust or mistrust depending upon his sensory impressions, received mainly through the skin, whether gratifying or not. The infant's sense of space, time, and reality are all of a piece, being experienced first as whatever is durably gratifying, then as what is perceptually meaningful, and later as events which can be anticipated. Chronologic time

remains meaningless until much later in the infant's development. The earliest steps in the development of mastery of time and space have been imagined by Escalona to be something like this:

At first, the world is a succession of different sensations and feeling states. What varies is the quality and distribution and intensity of sensations. Except for the difference in the nature of the sensations involved, hunger, which we say originates from within, and a sharp sound or cold breeze, which we cannot imagine except as something that reaches us from outside, are indistinguishable. There is no awareness of such things as approach, withdrawal, or direction of any sort. Even if the baby turns his head toward the nipple and grasps it, his sensation is that the nipple comes or is; no other state with which to contrast this exists. Light and darkness; harshness and softness; cold and warmth; sleep and waking; the contours of mother's face as seen from below, vis-à-vis, or even from above; being grasped and released; being moved and moving; the sight of moving people, curtains, blankets, toys; all these recede and approach and comprise the totality of experience in whatever constellation they occur at each split second in time. With recurrence, there develop islands of consistency. For instance, a certain way of being grasped, certain kinesthetic sensations, and the change in visual environment afforded by the vertical position combine into an awareness of being lifted, being moved, as an entity.

The importance of recurring experiences of the same kind is of the essence of this developmental process, and Escalona believes that such "islands of consistency," with a definite rhythm and sameness to them, in respect to such important experiences as feeding and bathing, may enable infants to acquire a sense of themselves as entities to whom things happen and who can make things happen. "The one who is not held, moved about, and rocked is less likely to become aware of himself through the sensation of passive motion and less likely to recognize his mother's characteristic touch and tempo" (p. 26).

The infant is at first not only lacking in psychic structure but

also in psychic and somatic boundaries. He is unable to distinguish between inside and outside, between "I" and "not-I"; in brief, he is in a state of psychic nondifferentiation. In this stage the primary identifications he makes are with his need gratifications as part of his own body. And, as Spitz points out, primary identification is made difficult by mothers who withhold from their children the need gratification inherent in being touched:

They extensively restrict the occasions for primary identification through withholding tactile experiences. Yet, if the infant is to differentiate himself from his mother, these primary identifications, tactile and otherwise, have to be dealt with, severed and overcome. Action-directed motility first, and locomotion later, are the child's devices for dealing with primary identification and achieving differentiation. When differentiation from the mother has been accomplished, the infant can form those secondary identifications which pave the way to autonomy and independence.

Tennyson, in his magnificent elegiac poem, *In Memoriam*, refers to the process of individuation, which he clearly fully understood. Though published in 1850, many parts of the poem were written much earlier.

*The baby new to earth and sky  
What time his tender palm is prest  
Against the circle of the breast,  
Has never thought that "this is I."*

*But as he grows he gathers much,  
And learns the use of "I" and "me,"  
And finds "I am not what I see,  
And other than the things I touch."*

*So rounds he to a separate mind  
From whence clear memory may begin,  
As thro' the frame that binds him in  
As isolation grows defined.*

*This use may lie in blood and breath,  
Which else were fruitless of their due,*

*Had man to learn himself anew  
Beyond the second birth of Death. [XLV]*

The process of what Mahler has called individuation-separation leads to individuation through secondary identifications. By taking over the mother's techniques of caring for him through identification with them the infant makes the first steps towards ego-formation, the stage of secondary identification, beginning in the second half of the first year. In this stage the infant acquires the techniques and devices by means of which he achieves independence from his mother. In these first six months tactile experiences are fundamental in the development of the stage of primary identification and the mechanism of secondary identification.

Erasmus Darwin, in his *Zoonomia*, published in 1794, had arrived at much the same conclusion. He wrote:

The first ideas we become acquainted with, are those of the sense of touch; for the foetus must experience some varieties of agitation, and exert some muscular action, in the womb; and may with great probability be supposed thus to gain some ideas of its own figure, of that of the uterus, and of the tenacity of the fluid, that surrounds it. . . .

Many of the organs of sense are confined to a small part of the body, as the nostrils, ear, or eye, whilst the sense of touch is diffused over the whole skin, but exists with a more exquisite degree of delicacy at the extremities of the fingers and thumbs, and in the lips. The sense of touch is thus very commodiously disposed for the purpose of encompassing smaller bodies, and for adapting itself to the inequalities of larger ones. The figure of small bodies seem to be learnt by children by their lips as much as by their fingers; on which account they put every new object to their mouths, when they are satiated with food, as well as when they are hungry. And puppies seem to learn their ideas of figure principally by the lips in their mode of play.

We acquire our tangible ideas of objects either by the simple pressure of this organ of touch against a solid body, or by moving our organ of touch along the surface of it. In the former case we learn the length and breadth of the objects by the continuance of this pressure on our moving organ of touch.

It is hence, that we are very slow in acquiring our tangible

ideas, and very slow in recollecting them; for if I now think of the tangible idea of a cube, that is, if I think of its figure, and the solidity of every part of that figure, I must conceive myself as passing my fingers over it, and seem in some measure to feel the idea, as I formerly did the impression at the ends of them, and thus am very slow in distinctly recollecting.

The modalities of space, time, and reality, shape, form, depth, quality, texture, the three-dimensionality of our vision, and the like, are almost certainly developed in large part on the basis of the infant's tactile experiences. As Escalona has put it,

Awareness of the body in space, and of space surrounding the self must come about in a thousand ways. As the baby's legs kick and stretch, the pressure of the diaper increases, his feet contact the blanket, gown, or end of the crib. As he flails his arms, he encounters the side of the crib, nothing, the surface on which he lies, or portions of his own body. As he is lifted, he temporarily feels the absence of contact with anything firm except the part of the body where his mother is grasping him. Simultaneously, kinesthetic sensations are quite different from before, the contours and range of his visual field change strangely as he is brought to the vertical position. It is at about the time when visual coordination and focusing occur more easily that purposive body movement begins to emerge.

As we shall see in the next chapter, the differences in the kinds of cutaneous experiences to which children are exposed, within one culture and cross-culturally, make very significant differences in the rates at which they mature and the ways in which they relate to their fellows.

Landauer and Whiting have produced some interesting evidence suggesting that the handling which results in increase in size in rodents, as a consequence, they assume, of stress effects, is similarly operative in the human species. In order to throw some light on this matter they studied cross-culturally the relation between apparently stressful infant care practices and the stature of adult males in some eighty different societies for which appropriate information was available. The stresses they studied were:

1. *Piercing*: Nose, lips, circumcision, infibulation, etc.
2. *Molding*: Stretching arms, legs, shaping head, etc.
3. *External*: Heat, hot baths, fire, intense sunlight, etc.
4. *Extreme cold*: Baths, exposure to snow, cold, etc.
5. *Internal stressors*: Emotions, irritants, enemas
6. *Abrasions*: Rubbing with sand, etc.
7. *Intense sensory stimulation*
8. *Binding*: Swaddling

Upon analysis it was found that "In societies in which the heads or limbs of infants were repeatedly molded or stretched, or where their ears, noses, or lips were pierced, where they were circumcised, vaccinated, inoculated, or had tribal marks cut or burned in their skin, the mean adult male stature was over two inches greater than in societies where these customs were not practiced."

Here the question may well be raised as to the difference between "handling" and "gentling." Most investigators have interpreted "handling" to signify the equivalent of a stressful experience, while "gentling" has been regarded as a comforting, reassuring experience for the animal exposed to it. The practices used as criteria by Landauer and Whiting were undoubtedly largely stressful. There remains, however, the very real question whether they were not in part also pleasurable. The practices which these investigators found most significantly correlated with increased growth are for the most part associated with elevations in status, the passage from one grade into another, greater attractiveness, and therefore greater self-esteem. Thus, whether as a direct or an indirect result of the stressful tactile experience, the subsequent pleasurable rewards of these operations are very considerable. In numberless societies the decoration of the skin by incision, puncture, the rubbing of dirt in the wounds, tattooing, and the like, though painful, has nevertheless been voluntarily sought for its rewarding end effects. Even in rodents who have been handled, reward is not missing, for the release unharmed from the handling to the freedom of the cage must be considered to constitute a reward. In human beings the combination of the stressful cu-



taneous experience with the highly rewarding experiences which follow probably constitutes a factor in the observed increase in growth.

Physiologically, the involvement of the sympathetico-adrenal axis, with added secretion of pituitary growth hormone, in the colligation of conditions described, would be sufficient to explain the results observed.

Developmental abnormalities which are thought to be the direct result of lack of adequate contacts with the maternal figure often express themselves in reactive skin disorders. As Flanders Dunbar put it, in summarizing the evidence, "It may well be said that the skin, like other sense organs, is likely to become sick when contact of the sufferer with his parents and with the outside world has been disturbed at an early age, and it appears that many skin disorders are relieved when emotional contact with the outer world is improved." Many skin sufferers have experienced early prohibitions of tactile expression and experience. D. W. Winnicott says, "The smallest skin lesion, if it concerns the feelings, concerns the whole body. Prohibitions relative to tactile experience are those in the area of: 'No, no; don't touch!' and, by way of corollary, 'Don't let yourself be touched.' " *Noli me tangere*. Because the skin is the organ of embrace and contact, many skin disorders can be understood as the expression of ambivalence relating to such intimate tactile experience.

Since tactile communication is essentially an interactional process, from the first contact with the hands of the person who has delivered the baby to the contact with the mother's body, any significant failure in the experience of such contacts may lead to a profound failure or disorder in later interactional relationships, which may sometimes express itself in schizophrenia, as well as in a variety of other behavioral disorders, not to mention such respiratory disorders as asthma and the like.

Alexander Lowen has written the best account of the failure of early tactile experience and its relationship to schizophrenia in his book *The Betrayal of the Body*. Based on the clinical study of many schizophrenics, Lowen shows that the feeling of

identity arises from a feeling of contact with the body. To know who one is, the person must be aware of what he feels. This is precisely what is wanting in the schizophrenic. There is a complete loss of body contact to such an extent that, broadly speaking, the schizophrenic doesn't know who he is. He is out of touch with reality. He is aware that he has a body, and is therefore oriented in time and space. "But since his ego is not identified with his body and does not perceive it in an alive way, he feels unrelated to the world and to people. Similarly, his conscious sense of identity is unrelated to the way he feels about himself." There is a dissociation between image and reality in the schizoid state. The healthy person has an image of himself which agrees with the way he feels and looks, for normally images derive their reality from association with feeling and sensation. Loss of touch with the body results in loss of touch with reality. Personal identity has substance and structure only insofar as it is based on the reality of bodily feeling.

The fundamental trauma of the schizoid personality, Lowen states, is the absence of pleasurable physical intimacy between mother and child. "The lack of erotic body contact is experienced by the child as abandonment. If the child's demands for this contact are not met with a warm response, it will grow up with the feeling that no one cares" (pp. 105-106). In order to cut off unpleasant feelings and sensations, the child will hold his breath, suck in his belly, and immobilize his diaphragm. He will lie very still to avoid being afraid. In short, he will "deaden" his body in order not to feel pain, and by these means abandon reality. By such dissociation, especially when fear of the body becomes unendurably terrifying, the ego dissociates from the body, completely splitting the personality into two contradictory identities. One of these identities is based on the body, the other is based on the ego image.

As Otto Fenichel has pointed out, "A lack of emotions which is due not to mere repression but to real loss of contact with the objective world gives the observer a specific impression of 'queerness.'" Sometimes these individuals "seem normal because they have succeeded in substituting 'pseudo contacts' of

manifold kinds for a real feeling contact with other people; they behave 'as if' they had feeling relations with people." And as Lowen adds, pseudo contacts often take the form of words, which serve as substitutes for touch. Such people are among the innumerable casualties who find it difficult to be closer to others than words. Another form of pseudo contact is role playing, which serves as a stand-in for emotional involvement. The main complaint of the schizoid personality is that, as Herbert Weiner puts it, he is unable to feel any emotions; he is estranged from others, withdrawn, and detached.

Involvement and identity become established by involvement and identification between mother and infant, and this mainly through touch. Tactile failure in infancy results only too often in estrangement, uninvolvedness, lack of identity, detachment, emotional shallowness, and indifference—all marks of the schizoid or schizophrenic personality.

The body-feeling image we have of ourselves as sensitive or insensitive, sensuous or unfeeling, relaxed or tense, warm or cold, is largely based on our tactual experiences in infancy, and subsequently reinforced by our experiences in childhood. The skin of those who have been tactually deprived is "turned off" to those experiences which the tactually satisfied enjoy. The turned-off individual may be so cutaneously uptight that he actually recoils from the slightest touch. It is interesting to learn that George Washington was such a person. He hated to be touched. There is a feeling of tenseness about their skin in such individuals, as if they were wearing an ill-fitting garment or are encased in a suit of armor from which, even if they wished, they are unable to extricate themselves. The "armored" feeling often gives such individuals a sense of invulnerability to the attempted incursions of the external world upon their ego. Such unreachableness begins at the skin, but it is not really an unreachableness that cannot be breached. It does, however, present an appearance to the world that often takes the form of a complete indifference to its overtures of love or warmth. The "cold fish" really feels like a cold fish. In some cases he really would like to "feel more alive," if he only knew how. Indeed,

in every failed individual there is a *potentially* warm, loving creature struggling to get out. The trick is so to interact with the individual who has been tactually failed as to release that potentiality for something resembling the kind of humanizing experiences he should have enjoyed in infancy and childhood.

Body awareness is produced through stimulation of the body, chiefly through the skin, and this commences at birth, if not before.

Persons who are callously unresponsive to human need, who have become so "hardened" that they are no longer in touch with the human condition, are not merely metaphorically so, but clearly physiologically so. The evidence suggests that those who have been inadequately touched during their early years have simply not experienced as full a development of the neurotactile elements in the skin as those who have been adequately touched. These neurotactile elements grow and develop throughout the growing period of the individual, up to about twenty-five years or more. The greater plasticity of the nervous system of children enables them to make far better recoveries, for example, from nerve section than adults. Furthermore, children have to learn tactual-kinesthetic localization, and until they have done so they are relatively poor at localizing stimuli. From the eighth to the twelfth year tactual-kinesthetic localization is superior to visual localization. The dominance of vision as a source of information leading to tactile localization does not appear until after the age of twelve.

The kind of tactuality experienced during infancy and childhood not only produces the appropriate changes in the brain, but also affects the growth and development of the end-organs in the skin. The tactually deprived individual will suffer from a feedback deficiency between skin and brain that may seriously affect his development as a human being.

Bodily connectedness is the basis of that interconnectedness with others that we call *sociality*, and this is brought about by the closeness of mother and child in infancy. Such a close bodily relationship is the basis of good feelings about oneself, and the feeling of bodily connectedness leads to a feeling of self-esteem.

Fundamentally the source of self-esteem is love. The infant uses its body to express its love, its emotions.

In a study of the relationship between self-esteem and tactuality Drs. Alan F. Silverman, Mark E. Pressman, and Helmut W. Bartel, utilizing eighty male and female students, found that the higher the subject's self-esteem, the more intimate he or she was in communicating through touch, especially when communicating with a female.

Lack of touch is experienced as a separation anxiety—lack of contact, of connection. "Only connect," as E. M. Forster enjoined his characters in his novel *Howard's End*. Something of the nature of this anxiety becomes evident in adults who have been deprived of physical contact and who are able to put into words what it feels like. Dr. Jimmie Holland and her colleagues at the University of Buffalo School of Medicine have reported on leukemic patients who as part of their treatment were isolated in "germ-free" rooms, which consisted of a large transparent bubble with two-way visibility and verbal communication facilities, but prevention of all skin contact between the patient and others. It was found that the chief drawback of the unit was human touch deprivation. Three-fourths of the patients experienced an acute sense of isolation, chiefly related to the inability to touch or be touched directly. The staff, too, was sometimes troubled by their inability to touch and comfort the patient. One woman patient put it very graphically:

"About a week ago, it started to get on my nerves . . . not being able to feel other people and hoping I could soon come out. I felt like everything was closing in on me and I couldn't stand it anymore. I just had to *feel* other people, I wanted to feel somebody, touch another human being. If I could have done this, I could have stuck it out longer. . . . But since I couldn't there was no way I could touch anyone or in any way express my feelings toward somebody just by touching their hand or squeezing it. This is very difficult to explain—It leaves you at a loss for words. You just feel you are all alone in the world and everything is cold. There is no warmth. The warmth is all gone and you just feel like there isn't anything."

In her book *Lonely in America* Suzanne Gordon defines loneliness "as a feeling of deprivation caused by the lack of certain kinds of human contact." Loneliness is very much in the same class and of much the same kind as the separation anxiety that infants and children experience when they are deprived for any length of time from contact with their mothers. It is a separation anxiety which causes us, as adolescents and adults, to become restless when alone for any durable period of time, and at any cost to seek out the company of others. It is this deprivation of contact with others that makes solitary confinement among the most cruel of punishments . . . even when it is in the confines of the home. Studies on the communication of affection between cancer patients and their spouses, carried out at the Roswell Memorial Institute at the University of Buffalo Medical School and Hospital by Dr. Lillian Leiber and her colleagues, showed that while the desire for sexual intercourse decreased among these patients, the desire for physical closeness increased.

It is sad to have to reflect that in the Western world the only time that many married couples will exhibit nonsexual physical closeness or genuine intimacy is when a serious illness befalls the one or the other. Women are usually far more ready to display such affection than men, but men often have an inhibiting effect upon their wives by actively discouraging any display of physical affection. Such men literally act as if they feared to be touched, and become quite anxious, often confused, and not infrequently hostile, when they are touched. Their love is unexpressed and often unexpressible. The care they lavish on things becomes a quite straightforward token for the affection they have no confidence in placing elsewhere.

*How scared he is of human contact,  
The clumsy touch of other men.*

So writes the Russian poet Yevgeny Vinokurov. How cut off we are from each other by outmoded traditional conditionings. This is underscored by the results of an experiment conducted by Kenneth and Mary Gergen and William H. Barton of the

Department of Psychology at Swarthmore College, who found that when persons, mostly students, between the ages of eighteen and twenty-five were introduced into a pitch-black room in which there were half a dozen strangers, persons they knew they would never meet again, more than 90 percent touched each other on purpose, while almost none of the subjects in a similar lighted room did. Almost 50 percent of the dark-room participants hugged each other. Almost 80 percent of the dark-room subjects said they felt sexual excitement, while only 30 percent of the light-room subjects said they did.

The experimenters were struck by the desire for intimate alliance among their dark-room subjects, that with the simple subtraction of light a group of perfect strangers moved within about thirty minutes to a stage of intimacy seldom attained in years of normal acquaintanceship. The experimenters concluded that people share strong yearnings to be close to each other, but that our social norms make it too costly to express these feelings and tend rather to keep us at a distance. Perhaps, they add, these traditional norms have outlived their usefulness.

It is, however, questionable whether these norms ever had any usefulness. As one boy wrote, "Felt joy over the possibility of not having to look at people in clichéd ways. Enjoyed feeling of self-awareness surrounded by a rich environment. . . . Enjoyed the wantonness of just crawling around and over other people to get from one place to another."

Similar observations were made by D.A., a student, relating to a group of Psychology I students who were individually blindfolded and led downstairs to a pitch-black room, in which strange sounds were emanating from a record player. Then they heard a woman sobbing, who then burst into hysterical laughter. While the students listened, unblindfolded individuals went around to massage the backs of each blindfolded student, and smeared a sweet-smelling cream over their hands and faces. They were then led to the middle of the room where there was a huge pile of plastic bags. The students played in this pile. They used their sense of touch to feel their way around and "see" things. They held hands; touched each others' faces. Some of

them even began kissing each other. Small groups sat in circles in the plastic and held hands. Soon the students rose and began to dance. Groups of four or five blindfolded and unblindfolded students were all huddled together dancing. Almost all of the students felt happy and free. In the middle of the music the blindfolds were removed. Most of the psychology students were embarrassed by their behavior. They used only their sense of touch to "see" around them. Now that they were "caught" hugging and dancing with strangers without their blindfolds they were embarrassed. "What a strange turn of events," remarks D.A., "in a group of people who were so happy just moments before."

These observations throw a much needed light on the value systems, as it were, of vision as compared with touch. Vision, in its social aspect, is the censor of the senses. It is, of course, the brain that does the actual censoring, but vision is the medium through which what is seen is conveyed to the brain, where it is judged. But, then, so is what is touched, with this difference: that touch has no censorship qualities. Touch is free and open. Vision acts, as it were, as an arbiter of behavior, an inhibitor or stimulus thereto; touch is free of censorship, censoriousness, or inhibition. Vision is the medium of perceptual prejudice, and as Dr. August F. Coppola has said, it is so much taken for granted that few realize the extent to which most of our prejudices are bound up with the way we view things. "It almost seems blasphemous to mention it, but the culprit here is sight, which dictates most of our values and dominates practically every aspect of our society. Skin color, conspicuous display of wealth, classification of people by dress and appearance, are all based on distinctions made available to us through vision. To be accepted we must fit into the sighted world, even if we are blind." As Dr. Coppola goes on to say, the importance of sight is beyond question, nevertheless it can be overestimated in the sense that it can blind us to those things that are not meant to be seen but to be felt. Blindness and deafness, handicapping as they are, are not incompatible with an adequate adjustment to the situation. With a loss of touch or bodily



feeling there would, however, be little sense of life. And for the feeling of being alive and the potentials of interpersonal relations touch has a fundamental value and significance not included in the world of sight.

We will happily relate to strangers by touch when we cannot see them, but the moment we do see them we become "appropriately" distant. The student who wrote that he felt joy over the possibility of not having to look at people in clichéd ways in the dark put it in a nutshell. The clichés and stereotypes in which he had been conditioned visually by his culture, when rendered nonfunctional, allowed the enjoyment of tactile experiences and the complete overriding of the "Don't touch" taboo, without inhibition or conventional constraint. This was clearly understood by that extraordinary spirit, William Blake, when in his poem *The Everlasting Gospel* he wrote,

*This life's five windows of the soul  
Distorts the Heavens from pole to pole,  
And leads you to believe a lie  
When you see with, not thro', the eye.*

Cheek patting, hair patting, and chucking under the chin are, in the Western world, forms of behavior indicating affection, and all are tactile.

The "laying on of Hands," "the King's touch," for the cure of specific diseases like scrofula, known as "the King's evil," was at one time widely practiced, and often very effective. Healing rites have everywhere involved a "laying on of hands." The royal touch dates back to the Capetians in France and the Normans in England. The sacred and miraculous character of kings was considered to give them divine powers of healing, especially in such a disease as scrofula, that is, tuberculosis of the lymphatic glands. During the Middle Ages almost all the kings of France and England exercised the royal touch, and the practice continued into modern times. In England in the eighteenth century, with the advent of the House of Hanover, the custom was discontinued. In France the practice is recorded as late as 31 May 1825, when Charles X touched between 120 and

130 persons. . . . The Sisters at the Hospice Corbeny-St-Mar-coul, where the rite took place, fourteen weeks after the ceremony were able to find only five persons cured. As Marc Bloch remarks in his splendid book *The Royal Touch*, "During the ages of real faith, it was a very wise rule to exercise patience in this matter."

From the frequent association of the laying on of the royal hands with scrofula it came to be known as "the King's evil." Samuel Johnson, who had contracted scrofula from his wet-nurse, was taken by his mother to London at the age of two and a half on 30 March 1712, where he was among the 200 persons touched by Queen Anne, alas, at least in his case, without effecting a cure. The healing gesture was performed for the last time in England by the queen some three years later on 27 April 1714, three months before her death. But even though royalty ceased to practice the rite, the belief lingered on into the twentieth century in the form of medallions bearing the royal image to which the power of the royal touch had been transferred.

In children affected by any skin disease or disorder the touch of the human hand is especially important; hence some dermatologists recommend that when a mother applies medication it should be done with the hand, so that the child feels the caress rather than the impersonal application of a cotton swab or tongue depressor. Since very few skin diseases or disorders are infectious the mother need usually have no fear of contracting the condition.

The belief in the curative power of the laying on of hands is still widespread throughout the "civilized" world. For example, in Ireland it is believed that the seventh son of a seventh son invariably has the "gif." Finbarr Nolan is said to be such a one. By 1974, at the age of twenty-one, he was said to have already earned half a million pounds in "contributions" from those who have sought his healing touch. In February 1974 he extended his activities to England, with great success as measured by the more than six thousand contributions he received within a few days in London.

In the matter of allergic disorders, Dr. Maurice J. Rosenthal made a direct test of the thesis "that eczema arises in certain predisposed infants because they fail to obtain from their mother or mother-substitute adequate physical soothing contact (caressing and cuddling)." Towards this end he investigated twenty-five mothers with children under two years of age suffering from eczema, and found that, indeed, the hypothesis he set out to test was abundantly confirmed. The majority of these infants had mothers who had failed to give them an adequate amount of cutaneous contact.

In discussing a case of infantile eczema, Spitz raises an interesting question. "We might ask ourselves," he writes, "whether this cutaneous reaction represents an adaptive effort, or alternatively, a defense. The child's reaction could be in the nature of a demand addressed to the mother to incite her to touch him more frequently. It could also be a form of narcissistic withdrawal, in the sense that through the eczema the child would be giving himself the stimuli in the somatic sphere which his mother denies him. We do not know."

It has, however, been pointed out that the demands the eczematous child makes upon its mother, the constant daily skin care, the inhibition of scratching, the exhausting attention to medical details, can play havoc with mother-child relationships.

A review of the evidence leads Lipton, Steinschneider, and Richmond to conclude that in eczema itching may in some instances be primary and not secondary to the diseased skin. Through the autonomic nervous system, which has some control over the structures and functions of the skin, it is possible that a significant influence may be exerted by psychosocial and cultural factors on disordered skin function.

The use of the skin as a tension-reliever assumes many forms, perhaps the most familiar in Western cultures being head scratching in men. Women do not usually behave in this manner; indeed, the sexual differences in the use of the skin are marked. In states of perplexity men will rub their chins with their hand, or tug at the lobes of their ears, or rub their forehead

or cheeks or back of the neck. Women have very different gestures in such states. They will either put a finger on their lower front teeth with the mouth slightly open or pose a finger under the chin. Other masculine gestures in states of perplexity are: rubbing one's nose, placing the flexed fingers over the mouth, rubbing the side of the neck, rubbing the infraorbital part of the face, rubbing the closed eyes, and picking the nose. These are all masculine gestures; so is rubbing the back of the hand or the front of the thigh, and pursing of the lips.

These all appear to be self-comforting gestures, designed to relieve or reduce tension. Similarly, in states of alarm or grief the wringing of hands, the holding on to oneself by clasping or grasping one's hands is comforting. In ancient Greece it was customary, and is still so in much of Asia, to carry a smooth-surfaced stone, or amber, or jade, sometimes called a "fingering-piece." Such a "worrybead," as it is also named, by its pleasant feel, serves to produce a calming effect. The telling of beads by religious Catholics seems to produce a similar result. "Worrybeads" in the United States have, in recent years, enjoyed increasing sales. Quite recently "executive tranquilizers" have been introduced in the form of small pieces of polished wood called "Feelies." Apropos of "worrybeads," it is of more than passing interest to note here that during World War II Dr. Jenny Rudnesco, who provided sanctuary for orphaned schizoid children, observed that many of them rolled a small pellet of paper between thumb and index finger. And J. C. Moloney, in his interpretation of these rolled pellets of paper as "stand-ins" for the absent mothers, points out that "they are 'mothers' that can be controlled by the emotionally disturbed child because they are 'mothers' created by the child."

Rubbing of thumb and index finger together is often observed in persons under tension. This may also be extended to rubbing all the fingers simultaneously against the palm of the same hand.

In the matter of skin disorders, Dr. S. Hammerman of the Department of Psychiatry of Temple University Medical School, Philadelphia, has reported to me the case of a girl who

suffered very badly from acne, and who was cured by treatment involving tactile stimulation in a beauty parlor to which she was sent by a perceptive physician when every other form of orthodox medical treatment had failed. As Dr. J. A. M. Meerloo has stated, many skin disorders unconsciously express the need for continual skin contact and skin protection, as well as the need for attention and affection. Acne may sometimes represent the expression of repressed sexual feelings. Other dermatoses are sometimes an expression of defense against incestuous skin contact.

For those who have not been lovingly and securely held in infancy the fear of falling is a not unexpected development in later life. Lowen points out that the fear of falling, whether from high places or falling asleep, is related to the fear of falling in love. Indeed, the patient who presents any one of these anxieties is usually found to be susceptible to the others, the common factor in all three being an anxiety about the loss of full control of the body and its sensations. Such patients experience these fears as a "sinking" sensation, and they can be terrifying and utterly immobilizing. Such sensations "are the delight of little children, who seek these sensations on their swings, slides, and similar amusements. The healthy child loves to be thrown into the air and to be caught by the waiting arms of a parent."

In the matter of distance, it is of interest that in the theatre certain directors tell their actors not to touch each other when playing comedy, but certainly not to refrain from doing so when playing tragedy. It is like the difference between extraversion and introversion. In comedy distance is required, noninvolvement, hence one refrains from touching. In tragedy it is the very reverse, involvement is what must be communicated, hence touching is encouraged. Again, gestures may be vertical in comedy, but they should be horizontal in tragedy. In comedy such vertical gestures are or tend to be manic, in tragedy horizontal gestures tend to suggest sympathy, embrace. Thus, Helen Hayes has said, "In comedy I have found that I must keep myself up, arms must be held higher, gestures must be of

an upward nature. In tragedy just the reverse."

Sexual differences in cutaneous behavior are very marked in probably all cultures. Females are very much more apt to indulge in every sort of delicate tactile behavior than males. Also females appear to be much more sensitive to the tactile properties of objects, as for example, when they will pass their hands over a fabric in order to appreciate its texture or quality, something males seldom do. Fondling and caressing are largely feminine activities, as is gentleness of approach on every level. Backslapping and handshake crushing are specifically masculine forms of behavior. Cultural differences in these respects are also marked. As Hall points out, the Japanese are very conscious of the significance of texture. "A bowl that is smooth and pleasing to the touch communicates not only that the artisan cared about the bowl and the person who was going to use it but about himself as well." Hall goes on to add that the rubbed finishes of their works in wood reflected the medieval craftsman's feeling he had about the importance of touch. "Touch," he writes, "is the most personally experienced of all sensations. For many people, life's most intimate moments are associated with the changing textures of the skin. The hardened, armorlike resistance to the unwanted touch, or the exciting, ever-changing textures of the skin during love-making, and the velvet quality of satisfaction afterward are messages of one body to another that have universal meanings."

Bowlby has postulated certain responses in the infant that function to tie mother and child reciprocally to one another. These responses are sucking, clinging, following, crying, and smiling. The baby initiates the first three responses: the second two are signals to the mother to respond to him. Bowlby found that in his experience the mother's acceptance of clinging and following is consistent with favorable development, even in the absence of breastfeeding, while rejection of clinging and following by the mother, even in the presence of breastfeeding, is apt to lead to emotional distance. Furthermore, it was Bowlby's impression that fully as many psychological disturbances, including the most severe, could be initiated in the second year

when clinging and following are at their peak, as in the early months when they are rudimentary.

The psychoanalyst Michael Balint has found that in his patients the need to cling represents a reaction to a trauma, "an expression of, and a defense against, the fear of being dropped or abandoned . . . its aim being the restoration of proximity and touch of the original subject-object identity." This identity, expressed by identity of wishes and interests between subject and object, Balint calls primary object relation or primary love.

Balint divides these patients into two types, the *philobatic*, that is, those who enjoy swings, thrills, trapezes, and the like, and the *oncophilic*, those who cannot stand swings, high places, and similar "perils." The philobatic tends to be a loner, relying on his own resources, while the oncophilic constantly struggles with the fear that the object might fail.

The suggestion is that the child who has enjoyed a satisfying primary object relationship, that is, the child who has been satisfyingly tactually stimulated, will not need to cling, and will enjoy high places, thrills, and being swung about. By contrast the child who has been failed in his clinging needs, especially during his preverbal reflex period of development, will react to this traumatic experience with an excessive need to hold on, to cling, with fear of the unsteady and of the support that may fail.

Two different perceptual worlds are involved here; one is *sight oriented*, the other is *touch oriented*. The touch-oriented world is more immediate and friendly than the sight-oriented world. In the sight-oriented world space may be friendly, but also often horribly empty or filled with dangerous and unpredictable, unsteady objects. Georges Braque, the French painter, has remarked that tactile space separates the viewer from objects, while visual space separates objects from each other.

As Drs. Arthur Burton and Robert E. Kantor have pointed out, humans are creatures of the earth, bound in continuous tactual contact to *terra firma*. When, by flying or diving, we surrender that contact, anxiety is created because we lose "touch" with that upon which we depend.

The extraordinary frequency with which one comes upon accounts of breakthroughs brought about by body contact in reaching schizophrenics who had for years been inaccessible to other therapeutic approaches is striking. In May 1955 the successes with catatonic schizophrenics of Paul Roland, a physical therapist at Veterans Administration Mental Hospital, Chillicothe, Ohio, were reported in the press. Roland began by sitting with the patient and then after a time touching his arm. Before long Roland was able to give the patient a rubdown. Once that occurred, rehabilitation proceeded rapidly. Gertrude Schwing has reported how she was able to break through to schizophrenic children by embracing them. Waal has given an excellent description of massage therapy with an apparently autistic boy, in which "the therapist gives the patient a general soft and maternal massage, with the stimuli of rhythmical petting and very gentle tickling and touching." The solar plexus, the neck, and the whole length of the spine, are massaged while the chest, chin, hands, and palms are tickled very sensitively and cautiously. After this the therapist proceeds to the eyes, and to a second stage in which there is a provocative massage of jaws, chest, shoulders, and eyes again. In this second stage the pressure of the therapists' hands are no longer soft. The patient reacts by screaming and crying and kicking, and is told that these are the reactions of a disappointed baby, and that they are all right. After these outbursts the patient receives soothing and mothering in an uninvolved, objective manner from the therapist. The effect of the therapy, according to Waal, seems to be a bodily maturation and a break in autistic withdrawal, and it seems to have a quicker effect than any other technique thus far attempted.

Similarly, a great deal of cuddling and stroking is involved in the highly successful approach to the treatment of schizophrenics developed by Mr. and Mrs. Morris Schiff of Fredericksburg, Virginia.

**TOUCH IN PSYCHOTHERAPY.** There has long been a taboo on touching the client or patient in psychotherapy. This originated



with Freud. It was his view that the therapist should not intervene between himself and the patient but remain completely objective, neither stimulating nor adding anything of himself to the patient. The therapist was to remain invisible to the patient, hence, he was enjoined to sit behind the patient's couch. Many psychoanalysts still observe these practices. But as Dr. Bertram R. Forer has put it, "Verbal contact alone leaves one in a limbo of isolation from one's own body and from other persons." As a psychotherapist who believes that the inescapable need for skin contact is psychologically more crucial than hunger for food, Forer strongly urges the use of touching, in informed and skillful hands, in the psychotherapeutic situation. Forer points out that personal integrity represents a continual search for and intake of social nourishment through close relationships, including tactual experience and its reverberations throughout the body. "Most clients and many therapists," he writes, "are struggling with internalized parents in the form of an oppressive conscience which they needed originally to give them psychological structure. One potential function of the therapist is to become more appetizing or precious to the client than the internal parents have been."

The appropriate contact tells the client a good deal more about the therapist's emotional relationship to him, and what he may expect, than purely verbal comments. The therapist's touching is reassuring and at the same time serves to produce a dissolution of the client's fears and unhappy expectations, and thus demonstrates the client's own resistance to human relationships.

His emotional response may surprise him into a recognition of deep longings. He can then be helped to recognize that his oppressive conscience and the roles that he has played to get along with it has limited his freedom to give and obtain from others. Thus, taking the therapist inside is an antidote to the destructive residuals of early relationships and opens the closed system of the person to new interpersonal experiences.

The primitive reaction to being touched gently at critical periods is a feeling of body relaxation and reassurance that one is not

alone, that old feelings of unworthiness are not justified. If he is still caught in an unresolved fusion with a destructive parent, contact may at first be rebuffed as a threat of annihilation to the self. Such persons may be literally out of contact and have an enormous need for contact.

"Touching," Dr. Forer concludes, "makes for mutuality and is part of the process of testing whether one dares to become or will be permitted to become an equal." The touching involved is that in which the patient or client touches the therapist, as well as the therapist's touching of the person who has sought his help. Nevertheless, to this day psychoanalysts in the English-speaking world at least desist from so much as shaking hands at the beginning and end of each hour. The reason given for this prohibition is that it would be introducing into the analytic situation an unnecessary and hence unwelcome psychic stimulus, a stimulus which might be disadvantageous to the course of the analysis. The analyst's interests must be in the determinants of the patient's thoughts and behavior. Whatever the analyst says or does, it is held, should be subordinated to that attitude.

Why touching between patient and therapist should constitute a barrier to an understanding of the patient's thoughts and behavior it is difficult to understand. Freud felt that such behavior might easily lead to eroticism of some sort and in this way to complete collapse of the analytic therapy. There have been some abuses of this kind, but the responsible therapist will remain responsible. Both client and therapist are presented with problems throughout the therapeutic experience. One of the most important of these is the experience of soothing reassurance which is integrative, passing into an excited erotic or sensual experience which may at first appear to be disintegrative. Shame and guilt resolved by self-alienation and turning off of body-acceptance probably followed developmentally upon this transition from reassurance to sensual or erotic feelings. Forer puts its significance for both therapist and client very well:

This erotic psychosomatic arousal and the fantasies associated with it are crucial therapeutic raw material, but they are a major source of the disrepute into which contact has fallen. Such feelings have fostered ethical controls lest the therapist lose his perspective about his responsibilities. Some therapists themselves may experience erotic feelings and become upset out of their own unresolved shame and guilt. If they need to defend themselves against such awareness, they are likely to be rejecting and confirm their patients' own convictions that words are good and touch is always erotic or destructive and bad. Both therapist and client need to learn tolerance for their own excitement and realize that fantasies need not lead to action. Thus the therapist's nonerotic touch may break through the client's defenses and help him to separate and tolerate the two kinds of experiences.

Drs. Arthur Burton and Robert E. Kantor, while agreeing with the general psychoanalytic viewpoint that with rare exceptions the patient need not be touched, also conclude that it is a probably valid generalization that most psychotherapists at the unconscious level dislike their own bodies. This, together with legalistic definitions of touching behavior, they feel, make it extremely difficult to be free and spontaneous in this area of treatment.

The answer to such a view may perhaps be that such psychotherapists are not the proper people to treat those who are psychologically troubled, that nonswimmers should not act as lifeguards.

While we are on this subject it should be added that in every branch of the practice of medicine touching should be considered an indispensable part of the doctor's art. As a member of a family the doctor should know what the human touch is capable of achieving in soothing ruffled feelings, in assuaging pain, in relieving distress, in giving reassurance, in making, in short, all the difference in the world. The world of humanity is the family writ large, and on a smaller scale the relationship seen in the family holds true between patient and doctor.

What the patient expects from the doctor is a human touch and healing effect. Touch always enhances the doctor's thera-

peutic abilities and the patient's recuperative capabilities. The laying on of hands has for centuries been well understood in religious communion. It would be well if it were similarly understood within the healing community.

Interestingly enough the one branch of the healing community which has recognized the importance of touch is the nursing profession. In the nursing periodicals many valuable articles have appeared on the therapeutic benefits of touch. First, as women, and second, being so much closer to the patient than the doctor, nurses have been in a far better position to appreciate the importance of touching in the care of the patient, in understanding that the care of the patient begins with caring for the patient.

**TOUCH AND ASTHMA.** In 1953 I reported the case of Mrs. C——, a thirty-year-old Englishwoman, of upper-class background, divorced and childless, height 5 feet 4 inches, weight 90 pounds, seen in July 1948, in London. Mrs. C—— was one of identical twins. Both had suffered approximately fortnightly episodes of asthma since they could remember. For the six years prior to 1948 Mrs. C—— had been in and out of sanatoria for treatment. Her doctor had then informed her that if she suffered another attack it might be her last. It was this shocking prognosis that brought me into the case. In calling upon her at her home in London, Mrs. C——, a pretty young woman, seemed rather tense but otherwise appeared quite healthy. She greeted her caller with a cold limp hand, and then folded her forearms over her chest. She then sat down on a davenport against the back of which she soon, in a quiet and unobtrusive manner, began rubbing her back. To the question whether her mother had died early, she replied that her mother had died at her birth, and in some astonishment inquired why I had asked that particular question. I explained that the possibility had occurred to me on the basis of the following observations: (1) the way she had limply shaken hands; (2) her folding of her forearms across her chest; and (3) her rubbing herself against the back of the davenport. All this had suggested that she might have failed to receive

adequate cutaneous stimulation as an infant; and since this frequently came about as a result of the early death of the mother, I had thought of this as one possibility.

The theory of the relationship between tactile stimulation and the development of the respiratory system was explained, particular pains being taken to emphasize the fact that this was merely a theory, and that there was nothing about it that had yet been proven, but that there existed a certain amount of evidence which suggested such a relationship, and that if she desired she might try testing it. It was suggested that she might attend a physiotherapy clinic in London where, according to instructions, she would be expertly massaged. To this she readily agreed, and several days later, following her first massage, she was overflowing with enthusiasm. She was then told that the probabilities were high that if she continued with the massage for some time, she would never experience another asthmatic attack unless, possibly, she underwent some serious emotional disturbance. She continued with the treatment for several months, and during the many years which have since elapsed she has not suffered a single serious asthmatic episode.

Mrs. C——'s sister had experienced identical attacks of asthma until she married a famous author, whereupon her attacks declined in frequency although they did not altogether cease. Subsequently there was a divorce, soon after which she died during an asthmatic seizure. In the case of Mrs. C—— her attacks, for all practical purposes, ceased altogether. She subsequently remarried and has lived happily ever after.

There may, of course, be little or no relation in this case between the cessation of the asthma and the cutaneous stimulation Mrs. C—— received. On the other hand, the relation may be a very direct one. In my original paper I wrote, "This case has been cited for its suggestive value. It is to be hoped that those having the adequate opportunities may carry out the observations necessary to show whether or not persons suffering from asthma and other disorders that may be related to inadequate cutaneous stimulation in infancy may be relieved by

a course of cutaneous stimulation given them on the theory outlined in this paper."

While that paper aroused a certain amount of interest, it does not appear to have stimulated much research, at least in relation to asthma.

In connection with asthma, it has been noted on an earlier page that putting one's arm around the shoulders of the sufferer during an asthmatic attack is likely to alleviate or bring the attack to a halt.

Sir William Osler once remarked that "Taking a lady's hand gives her confidence in her physician." And, indeed, taking almost anyone's hand under conditions of stress is likely to exert a soothing effect, and by reducing anxiety give both the taken and the taker a feeling of greater security.

How is it, we may ask, that tactile stimulation, in the form of caressing, fondling, cuddling, embracing, stroking, and the like, is capable of working such remarkable effects upon emotionally disturbed individuals?

The explanation is quite simple: Tactile stimulation appears to be a fundamentally necessary experience for the healthy behavioral development of the individual. Failure to receive tactile stimulation in infancy results in a critical failure to establish contact relations with others. Supplying that need, even in adults, may serve to give them the reassurance they need, the conviction that they are wanted and valued, and thus involved and included in a connected network of values with others. The individual who is awkward in his contact relations with others, is clumsy in his body relations with others, in shaking hands, in embracing, in kissing, in any, and often all, of his tactile demonstrations of affection, is so principally because he has been failed in his interactive body-contact relations with his mother. His mother has failed him in motherliness, which Garner and Wenar define as maternal gratification of the infant's needs for body care and pleasurable stimulation in ways that also provide the mother herself with satisfaction. Not only does the motherly woman provide her child with gratifications, but she also derives gratification from doing so, as she provides her

infant with the close physical contact and protection he needs for growth and development. These investigators show that psychosomatic disorder tends to develop in individuals who have lacked the experience of motherliness—a hypothesis that has been many times confirmed. A basic ingredient of “motherliness” is close physical contact, the hugging, cuddling, caressing, embracing, rocking, kissing, and other tactile stimulations that a motherly mother gives her child.

Restriction or deprivation of the opportunity for tactile and manipulative experience early in life of the infant is likely to derange its later tactile and affective behavior. In a rather horrible experiment Professor Henry W. Nissen and his colleagues at the Yerkes Laboratory at Yale University encased the limbs of a male infant chimpanzee, from the age of four months to thirty-one months, in cardboard cylinders. When freed, no defects in the perception of size, form, and depth were found, but what was found was that this young chimp, unlike others of its age, did not cling to the attendant, nor did it groom; furthermore “the lip movements and sounds which are part of this presumably instinctive pattern were completely absent.” Such extreme treatment is never meted out to human infants; nevertheless, the findings on this deprived chimpanzee are consonant with the general finding that any prolonged deprivation of tactile experience in infancy is likely to produce inadequacies in the child’s later tactile and affective behavior.

Body contact is a basic mammalian need which must be satisfied if the individual is to develop those movements, gestures, and body-relatednesses which will be normally developed during the growth of one’s experience in relation to one’s mother’s body. Deprivation of this experience has been experimentally shown to produce the most atypical movements and postures. On an earlier page we saw how this affects sexual behavior, contributing to the awkwardness of the socially deprived male in copulatory behavior. As Mason and others have shown, in such socially deprived individuals, deficiencies in social communication are the rule. While the need is there, one learns to nuzzle, root, cuddle, embrace, kiss, and tenderly and

lovingly care for others as a consequence of experiencing such behavior from one's mother. In the absence of such maternal behaviors the need remains but the performance of the behaviors associated with it is left more or less crudely unrealized. Indeed, to a very significant extent, a measure of the individual's development as a healthy human being is the extent to which he or she is freely able to embrace another and enjoy the embraces of others . . . to get, in a very real sense, into touch with others.

The tactually failed child grows into an individual who is not only physically awkward in his relations with others, but who is also psychologically, behaviorally, awkward with them. Such persons are likely to be wanting in that tact which the *Oxford English Dictionary* defines as the "Ready and delicate sense of what is fitting and proper in dealing with others, so as to avoid giving offence, or win good will; skill or judgement in dealing with men or negotiating difficult or delicate situations; the faculty of saying or doing the right thing at the right time."

In 1793 we find Dugald Stewart, the Scottish philosopher, writing in his *Outlines of Moral Philosophy* of "The use made in the French tongue of the word *Tact*, to denote that delicate sense of propriety which enables a man to feel his way in the difficult intercourse of polished society." Here the word *feel*, feeling one's way, nicely reflects the initial tactile explorations with which we begin our first communications with another human being. On that ground we either develop as tactful beings or, if we have been failed in the experience of tactuality, we do not, becoming instead awkward and insensitive to the needs of others. It is no accident that the awkward and the insensitive are usually those who have been failed in the need for love, the earliest and most basic component of which is touch.

There appears to be a very distinct carryover from tactile experience in infancy to tactful behavior in later life. It is interesting that the word *tact*, derived from the Latin *tactus* meaning "touch," was not infrequently used in England in place of the word *touch*, down to the middle of the nineteenth century.



*Tact*, in its modern sense, was adopted from the French early in the nineteenth century. What the word really means is clearly "to delicately touch" the other. Both the etymological and the psychological relationship of *tact*, in its contemporary meaning, "to touch," have not altogether escaped attention, for we will say of a tactless man that he has a heavy touch. What is so interestingly inherent in the use of the word *tact* in its modern sense is the uncannily clear understanding of the importance of early tactile experience in the development of that delicate sense of fitting and proper behavior implied by the word.

**ADAPTIVITY AND REACTIVITY OF THE SKIN.** Among the remarkable capacities of the skin is its ability to develop increased acuity and to compensate for deficiencies in other sensory systems. Thus, Zubek, Flye, and Aftenas found that in sixteen hooded students confined to a room in complete darkness for one week there was a marked increase in cutaneous sensitivity as well as in sensitivity to pain. In the blind there is considerable variability in the development of cutaneous sensitivity, some individuals showing increases, others showing decreases. It is a matter worthy of further investigation.

Not only will the skin react to every kind of stimulus with the most appropriate physical changes, but it will also do so behaviorally, for the skin is capable of behaving in very perceptible ways. The reference here is to stimuli originating at the skin surface. The skin is not merely a complex cellular structure, it is an equally complex chemical one; moreover, the substances present on its surface play an important role in the defense system of the body. For example, contact of human plasma or whole blood with the skin accelerates clotting time. If the skin is washed with alcohol the clotting time is prolonged.

Reactivity of the skin to stimuli originating at the skin surface can only occur after mediation of the originating sensory stimuli through the nervous system. It begins to appear that whatever changes are capable of being produced in the skin by stimuli originating in the mind, are also capable of being pro-

duced in the skin by changes originating at the level of the skin. Such, for example, are the skin disorders resulting from inadequate tactile stimulation. Clearly, sensory stimuli at the skin level have to be interpreted at the cortical level and the appropriate motor reactions initiated. The skin itself does not think, but its sensitivity is so great, combined with its ability to pick up and transmit so extraordinarily wide a variety of signals, and make so wide a range of responses, exceeding that of all other sense organs, that for versatility it must be ranked second only to the brain itself. This should not be surprising, for as we have seen (pp. 2-3), the skin in fact represents the external nervous system of the organism. The sensitivity of the skin can, however, be considerably impaired by the failure to receive the tactile stimuli necessary for its proper development. In this respect, such influences as family, class, and culture play a fundamental role.

---

## SEVEN

---

# CULTURE AND CONTACT

Each culture fosters or specifically trains its young as children and as adolescents to develop different kinds of thresholds to tactile contacts and stimulation so that their organic, constitutional, temperamental characteristics are accentuated or reduced.

—LAWRENCE K. FRANK, "Tactile Communication," *Genetic Psychology Monographs*, vol. 56 (1957), p. 241.

The existence of a wide range of class and cultural differences in attitudes and practices relating to tactile behavior affords a fertile field for the investigation of the relation of such social differences in tactile experience to the development of personality, and to some extent to cultural and national traits. In general, while the culture prescribes the customary socializing experiences to which the infant and child shall be exposed, idiosyncratic differences within particular families may substantially depart from the prescribed modes of behavior, with more or less significant consequences for the individuals involved.

There are families in which a great deal of tactile contact occurs, not only between mother and child but also between all the members of the family. There are other families, within the same culture, in which there is a minimal amount of tactile

contact between mother and child and all the other members of the family. There are whole cultures that are characterized by a "*Noli me tangere*," a "Do not touch me," way of life. There are other cultures in which tactility is so much a part of life, in which there is so much embracing and fondling and kissing it appears strange and embarrassing to the nontactile peoples. And there are cultures that play every possible variation upon the theme of tactility. In this chapter the attempt will be made to inquire into cultural and individual (familial) differences in attitudes towards tactile contact, the practices to which these attitudes lead and the manner in which they express themselves both in the individual and in his culture.

**EXTEROGESTATION AND TACTILITY.** Exterogestation constitutes the continuation of the uterogestative process in the environment outside the womb. The exterogestative process is designed to continue the feedback relationships between infant and mother, to continue the development of both, but especially of the infant for its increasingly complicated postnatal functioning in an atmospheric world bounded and unbounded by all sorts of experiences of space. The latter is an important aspect of the organism's experience which has received insufficient recognition.

Within the womb the fetus is enclosed and intimately bounded by the supporting embracing walls of the uterus. This is a comforting and reassuring experience. But with birth the infant experiences a more or less open-ended environment; he must learn to grow accustomed to the very least variations of his environment. To the last day of his postnatal life the most fearful and emotionally most disturbing experience that can befall the individual is the sudden withdrawal of support. The only instinct-like reaction remaining in humans, other than the reaction to a sudden loud noise, is the reaction to a sudden withdrawal of support. The uterogestate fetus, embraced, supported, and rocked within his amniotic environment, as an exterogestate requires the continued support of his mother, to be held and rocked in her arms, and in close contact with her body, swallowing colostrum and milk in place of amniotic fluid.

He needs to be enclosed in his mother's arms, embraced, in contact with her warm skin, for among other things the newborn is most sensitive to temperature changes, and one of the dangers to which he is often exposed in hospitals is a chilling ambient room temperature, especially in air-conditioned delivery rooms. The professional mode of dealing with this is to place the baby in a heated bassinet—a most inadequate substitute for the warm ambience of the mother's embracing, supportive body.

The boundaries of the uterogestate's world are the walls of the uterus. It is necessary to understand that the neonate is most comfortable when the conditions within the womb are reproduced as closely as possible in the exterogestational state, that is, when the baby is enfolded in his mother's arms at her bosom. The infant needs to learn, on the firm foundation of closeness, what closeness, proximity, distance, and openness mean. In short, he has to learn the meaning, and the manner, of accommodating himself to a great variety and complexity of spatial relationships—all of which are closely bound up with his experiences of tactility, principally in relation to his mother's body.

To remove the newborn baby from its mother and place it on its back or its front on a flat surface, often uncovered, is to fail to understand the newborn's great need for enfoldment, to be supported, rocked, and covered from all sides, and that the infant may only gradually be introduced to the world of more open spaces. From the supporting, continuous, tangible presence of his mother the infant will gradually come to move some distance toward the outside world. One sees this particularly vividly in older infant mammals, and especially in juvenile monkeys and apes, who from tentative proximate separation from the mother gradually increase the distance until they can achieve an independence more or less complete physically, and to some extent emotionally.

TRAUMAS AT SKIN LEVEL. We must ask ourselves here whether, in removing the newborn from his mother, as is customary in hospitals, and placing him in the open space of a

bassinet or crib, we are not visiting a seriously disturbing trauma upon the baby, a trauma from which, perhaps, he never completely recovers? A trauma, moreover, which in the civilized world of the West, and those cultures that have been affected by the West's childbirth practices, is repeatedly inflicted upon the infant during the early years of his life. It may be that fear of open spaces (agoraphobia) or of heights (acrophobia), or of sudden drops, may have some connection with such early experiences. It may also be that a preference for having one's bedclothes about one's body rather than tucked in at the foot and sides of the bed reflects a desire to recreate the conditions enjoyed in the womb, in reaction to the lack of body support experienced in infancy. There are those who like to sleep with their bedroom doors closed; there are others who cannot abide a closed bedroom door. As one might expect, those who like their bedclothes snugly embracing them also tend to prefer their bedroom doors closed, whereas the more loosely tucked-in-around-the-edges-of-the-bed types prefer their bedroom doors open. What the range of variability is in these matters I do not know. There is a suggestion here for some interesting inquiries in which a good many other variables, such as breastfeeding, maternal affection, deprivations of various sorts, hospital deliveries or home births, and the like are considered.

It is during the extero-gestative period that the infant is first and continuously exposed to the culturalizing effects of his society. And from the moment of birth every society has evolved its own unique ways of dealing with the child. It is on the basis of repeated sensory experiences of the culturally prescribed stimulations that the child learns how to behave according to the requirements of his culture. And it is because of the differences in the kinds and modalities of the individual's tactile experiences within the family, especially in relation to his or her mother, as determined for the most part by particular cultures or segments thereof, that individuals and peoples will differ behaviorally in many fundamental ways from one another.

It should be evident why, during the extero-gestative period,

the kind of tactile experience the infant undergoes will exert so fundamental an effect upon his development. The explanation is very simple: It is because a fundamental part of his learning is done during this period through his experiences at the level of the skin. The exteroceptive period constitutes a developmental period during which the quality of communication experienced through the skin is critical. It is critical because upon the quality of the tactile communication experienced during that period will depend the kind of psychomotor, the sort of emotional response, the infant learns to make to others. This sort of emotional response will become a fixed and permanent part of his personality, upon which he will subsequently build many learned secondary responses. In view of the fact that the exteroceptive tactile learning period has not been adequately recognized as a critical period in the development of every organism, and especially in the human species, we shall have to consider giving children more tactile attention than they have hitherto received.

**CULTURE AND TACTILITY.** The differences in the quality, frequency, and timing of the tactile experience that the newborn, infant, child, adolescent, and adult undergoes in different cultures run the whole gamut of possible variations. We have already touched upon such differences in several cultures in Chapter Four (pp. 116–119). Here we shall discuss cultural differences in early tactile experience and their relation to personality and to behavior. We can commence with the evidence from nonliterate societies, and then proceed to the discussion of the technologically more advanced societies.

**THE NETSILIK ESKIMO.** The Netsilik Eskimo live on the Boothia Peninsula in the Canadian Arctic of the Northwest Territories. There they have been studied with particular insight by Richard James de Boer, who lived in a snowhouse among them during the winter of 1966–1967. Maternal-infant caretaking relationships were the focus of Mr. de Boer's interest. The Netsilik mother, even though she lives under the most

difficult of conditions, is an unruffled personality who bestows warmth and loving care upon her children. She never chides her infant or interferes with it in any way, except to respond to its needs. De Boer writes:

At parturition and the onset of exterogestation, the Netsilik infant is placed in the back of its mother's attiggi (fur parka) in such a position that its ventral torso is pressed firmly against its mother's back just below the shoulder blades. The infant assumes a sitting posture with its tiny legs around its mother's waist or slightly above and with its head flexed right or left which usually elicits the tonic neck reflex that facilitates the straddling placement of the legs as extensor tonus decreases in either of these limbs. When the infant is in the proper position, the mother ties a sash around the attiggi exterior, across her chest above the breasts and down under the axillae, and where it passes across her back it forms a sling that supports her infant under its buttocks and prevents it from slipping down and out of the garment. The infant wears tiny diapers fashioned from caribou skins, but otherwise it snuggles naked against its mother's skin. Most of the infant's ventral anatomy is in a close tactile and cutaneous contact with its mother and its dorsal body is completely encased in fur, protecting it from the fierce Arctic cold. From outward appearances, the Netsilik mother bearing her infant in this traditional manner presents the appearance of a congenital hunchback, but her awkward appearance is more apparent than real, since her infant's weight is distributed in close proximity to her intrinsic center of gravity. The Netsilik infant is carried about in this fashion until it achieves locomotor ability and thence intermittently until it acquires what the Netsilik Eskimo calls "ihuma" or cognitive sense.

Netsilik mother and child communicate with each other through their skins. When hungry the Netsilik infant roots and sucks on the skin of its mother's back, alerting her to its need. Then it is brought round to the breast and suckled. Activity needs are satisfied by the various motions to which the infant is subjected in the postural and locomotory and other movements of the mother as she pursues her daily tasks. The rocking movements and contact with the mother's skin promote the



sleep the infant so much enjoys. Bowel and bladder elimination occur on the mother's back. The mother's removal of these eliminations serves to prevent any continuing discomfort to the infant. Since the mother anticipates most of the infant's needs with all those sustaining nurturance responses designed to meet his needs, the Netsilik infant seldom cries. The infant's needs are anticipated by the mother tactually.

The Netsilik mother's care of her infant beautifully meets the requirements of its phylogenetically programed needs; the infant's responses are invariably pleasant. This invariability of pleasurable response, de Boer suggests, is the key to the Netsilik Eskimo's stress-coping ability.

The Netsilik Eskimo [writes de Boer] is seldom if ever assaulted by aversive and stress-producing interpersonal stimuli, but he is constantly threatened with the uncertainties of his eco-system. Ecologically stressful situations never upset his emotional homeostasis and he confronts a raging polar bear with the same coolness and equanimity that he exhibits when faced with the threat of food deprivation. The invariability of the homeostatic emotional response does not imply that these responses are stereotypic; on the contrary, homeostasis implies a dynamic life force, but a force that functions below the threshold of disorganization. Evolutionarily, this homeostatic equilibrium has offered the greatest selective advantages to the individual and his group in the struggle for survival.

By the time he or she is three years of age the Netsilik child has acquired "the only two motivational characteristics necessary to his functioning as a self-regulated human being," namely, pleasant or altruistic responses to interpersonal relationships, and the power of symbolic manipulative ability. Because dominance-subservience relationships are absent in parental and especially maternal-infant relations a harmonic balance is achieved between the Netsilik individual and his society, with the individual in this manner gratifying his needs for mutually altruistic interpersonal relationships.

It is, of course, not possible to say with certainty that the altruistic behavior of the Netsilik individual is largely the prod-

uct of his experiences in infancy, and especially of those he undergoes in relation to his mother's body; these experiences are later reinforced by the behavior of almost everyone else in his small world. The evidence, however, is strongly suggestive that it is the early experiences that are the most influential.

The Netsilik infant may defecate and urinate upon his mother's back without causing any disturbance other than the mother's cleaning of both the infant and herself. Such relaxed behavior undoubtedly exerts significantly relaxing effects upon the child's responses to its excretory activities. Such a child would never become an anal-erotic who hoards his feces or grow to become a niggardly adult. The openness and generosity of the Eskimo character is, no doubt, in part at least, due to the unuptightness of his early toilet experiences.

The motions of his mother during her daily activities give the Eskimo child a view of the world from virtually every possible angle, a view from which its spatial skills will grow and be reinforced by its subsequent experiences. The extraordinary spatial faculties of the Eskimo, and probably also their remarkable mechanical abilities, may be closely related to these early experiences upon the mother's back. Edmund Carpenter has provided a fascinating account of the remarkable spatial and mechanical abilities of the Aivilik Eskimo of Southampton Island in the northwest boundary of Hudson Bay.

"Aivilik men are first-class mechanics," writes Carpenter. "They delight in stripping down and reassembling engines, watches, all machinery. I have watched them repair instruments which American mechanics, flown into the Arctic for this purpose, have abandoned in despair. Working with the simplest tools, often handmade, they make replacements of metal and ivory. Towtoongie [an Eskimo friend] made a hinge for me. I had to hold it directly before my eyes to see how it worked." And so on.

Carpenter thinks that the explanation for this phenomenal ability lies in the over-all picture of Aivilik time-space orientation, in that the Aivilik do not conceptually separate space and time, but see a situation as a dynamic process; furthermore,

they are acutely observant of details. Moreover, they view space not as a static enclosure but as a direction in operation. For example, when handed a copy of an illustrated magazine they will not turn it right side up, indeed they are highly amused when the white man does so, but will look at the pictures whether they are upside down or horizontal, and see them as if they were right side up!

Whether or not these abilities are related to the tactile, spatial-visual experiences on the maternal back, must, again of course, remain a matter for further research specifically aimed in that direction. It would seem not unlikely. The infant's eye-view from all positions as the mother moves about would suggest the development of a rather special kind of spatial ability. As Carpenter puts it, "Space fluctuates in continuous activity. . . . The visual experience becomes a dynamic experience. Thus Aivilik artists do not confine themselves to the reproduction of what can actually be seen in a given moment from a single vantage point, but they twist and tilt the various possible visual aspects until they fully explain the object they wish to represent." The twisting and tilting may very well reflect something of the twistings and turnings the infant experienced while being carried on the mother's back.

"In most myths," writes Carpenter, "there is an alternative shrinking and growing of men and spirits in their mutual relations. Nothing has a static, invariable shape or size. Men, spirits, animals, have unstable, ever-changing dimensions." Again, a view of the world very reminiscent of the kinds of visual experiences the infant undergoes from his dorsal elevated viewpoint, experiences of adults whom he can see face to face, as well as children, animals, and other things that, from his high perch in his parka, are small and difficult to see, but suddenly change in size when mother bends, or kneels, or assumes a horizontal position.

From his early orientations to the spatial dimensions of the world the child relies virtually entirely upon his sense of touch, and by this most primitive of all sensory agencies, by thigmotropism (from the Greek *thigma*, "touch," and *trope*, "turn," that

is, by responding to contact or touch), it learns to find its way about in the world of the environment its mother provides for. The child's first space is tactile. Initially it is passively tactile, experiencing tactile sensations that are gradually converted into perceptions, that is, sensations endowed with meanings. With these meanings the child then actively begins to scan the world for itself. James Gibson, who has made these distinctions between passive and active touch, in an experiment designed to judge the accuracy of the information received by each form of touch, found that active touch enabled subjects to reproduce abstract objects that were screened from view with 95 percent accuracy. Only a 49 percent accuracy was achieved with passive touch.

Active touch is stereognostic, that is, it enables one to understand the form and nature of objects. This ability is gradually developed in relation to the mother's body, the taking of the nipple into the mouth, and the pressure of the lips and jaws on the areola,\* the hand resting on the breast, the infant's own lips, nose, eyes, genitals, hands, feet, and other parts of its body. Each of these has its own special characteristics and gradually comes to be recognized through active touch. In its mother's parka the Eskimo child, in addition to receiving communications from her body and body motions, will at first receive also a great many signals from her of an auditory nature, and it will come to associate these with each other. Hence vocal sounds will come to have a soothing tactile quality about them, a repetitive lulling character. One perceives this reflected very clearly in much of the poetry of the Eskimo. Consider such a poem as the following: a dance song, typical of those composed by Eskimos generally, but in this case the creation of a Copper Eskimo of Victoria Island, south of the North Magnetic Pole.

\*In breastfeeding milk is obtained not by sucking the nipple, but by pressure on the areola and suction through the nipple created by the "oral pump" that the infant's lips, suctorial pads, tongue, and other structures within the mouth constitute. "Sucking" is to be distinguished from "suckling." Babies "suck" at rubber tires at the end of bottles, but "suckle" at the breast.

## DANCE SONG

*I am quite unable  
To capture seals as they do, I am quite unable.  
Animals with blubber since I do not know how to capture,  
To capture seals as they do I am quite unable.  
I am quite unable  
To shoot as they do, I am quite unable.  
I am quite unable,  
A fine kayak such as they have I am quite unable to obtain.  
Animals that have fawns since I cannot obtain them,  
A fine kayak such as they have I am quite unable to obtain.  
I am quite unable  
To capture fish as they do, I am quite unable.  
I am quite unable  
To dance as they do, I am quite unable.  
Dance songs since I do not know them at all,  
To dance as they do I am quite unable.  
I am quite unable to be swift-footed as they are,  
I am quite unable . . .*

This song in its rhythm and metre, as well as its phrasing, repeats something similar to what a child would experience while being carried in a sling on its mother's back. It remains a fascinating and unexplained fact that in many parts of the world children who were probably never carried in this way compose chants or songs in similar metres and rhythms and phrases. Nevertheless, as we have seen in relation to music, it is a speculation worthy of further inquiry whether there may be a connection between the rhythms and metres of the Eskimos' songs and poetry and their experiences of motion on their mothers' backs.

Song-making is highly valued among all Eskimos, and it is the custom to improvise songs for almost every occasion. What can be more humanly beautiful than this song, improvised by Takomaq, an old Iglulik Eskimo woman living on the Melville Peninsula, east of the Netsilik Eskimo? The old lady was about to serve a meal she had prepared for Knud Rasmussen and his companion, when Rasmussen presented her with some tea. This

touched her so deeply that she at once joyfully improvised the following song:

Ajaja—aja—jaja.	<i>All is more beautiful,</i>
<i>The lands around my dwelling</i>	<i>All is more beautiful,</i>
<i>Are more beautiful</i>	<i>And life is thankfulness.</i>
<i>From the day</i>	<i>These guests of mine</i>
<i>When it is given me to see</i>	<i>Make my house grand,</i>
<i>Faces I have never seen before.</i>	Ajaja—aja—jaja.

These likable people show their friendliness towards those they have never seen before—not strangers, but visitors or guests—by touching and stroking them. Stefansson tells how he and his party were welcomed by the Copper Eskimo in 1913. “Our welcome was as warm and friendly as it could possibly be, and nearly that noisy. Little children jumped up so as to be able to touch our shoulders and men and women stroked and handled us in a very friendly way.”

In their snowhouses, where the temperature is often in the vicinity of 100 degrees, and only slightly less at night, Eskimos usually sleep in the nude in close body contact with one another. A man will customarily lend his wife for the night, as an act of courtesy, to the male visitor. The mixture of body odors, burning blubber-oil, and other odors, which white men sometimes find unendurable, is far from unappealing to the Eskimo, whose acute sense of smell has been remarked upon by more than one observer. This trait, too, is perhaps not unrelated to the experiences of the infant in his mother’s parka.

Following and in relation to tactility, the sense which is next elaborated is not vision but hearing. The mother hums and sings to the child, while she pats and hugs him, and holds him close to her body in her parka, and in time he learns to identify and respond to her voice as a surrogate for her touch. It is a reflexive form of conditioning, in which the sign of the original stimulus, the voice, replaces the touch, but the voice always retains its tactile quality, soothing, caressing, reassuring. It stands for the presence of the loving mother, whose love the infant initially knows primarily through the warmth and sup-

port, and yieldingness, and softness of her skin, and who attends to the infant's needs by actively as well as passively stimulating its skin, in carrying, cleaning, and washing it.

Eskimos are not given overmuch to washing, since water is scarce and ice is melted into water only at the great expense of burning the difficult-to-come-by blubber. Urine will sometimes be used as a substitute. Among the far northern Ingalik, who are a Northern Athapaskan group who speak both Ingalik and Eskimo, following the initial bath which a baby receives soon after birth, the mother licks the face and hands of the baby with her tongue every morning to clean them, until the baby is old enough to sit upon the bench. Though I have found no reference to this practice among Eskimos proper it is possible that it occurs.

Visual perception almost certainly follows upon the development of auditory perception among the Eskimo. Carpenter confirms this in observing of the Aivilik Eskimo that

they define space more by sound than by sight. Where we might say, "Let's see what we can hear," they would say, "Let's hear what we can see." . . . To them, the ocularly visible apparition is not nearly as important as the purely auditory one. The essential feature of sound is not its location, but that it *be*, that it fill space. We say "the night shall be filled with music," just as the air is filled with fragrance; locality is irrelevant. The concert-goer closes his eyes.

I know of no example of an Aivilik describing space primarily in visual terms. They don't regard space as static, and therefore measurable; hence they have no formal units of spatial measurement, just as they have no uniform divisions of time. The carver is indifferent to the demands of the optical eye; he lets each piece fill its own space, create its own world, without reference to background or anything external to it. Each carving lives in spatial independence. Size and shape, proportions and selection, these are set by the object itself, not forced from without. Like sound, each carving creates its own space, its own identity; it imposes its own assumptions.

It is perhaps not unreasonable to suppose that this auditory view of reality is related to the Aivilik child's much earlier and longer continued conditioning in vocal than in visual experience. This conditioning is, of course, perpetuated through its oral traditional training.

**THE KAINGANG OF BRAZIL.** The Kaingang tribe of the highlands of Brazil are a splendidly tactile people. Jules Henry, who has written the classical account of them, speaks of the children who "lie like cats absorbing the delicious stroking of adults." Children receive an enormous amount of attention from adults, and can always depend upon someone to caress and cuddle them. When the children grow up, young men love to sleep together, not as homosexuals, but simply for the sheer pleasure of tactile contact. "Married and unmarried young men lie cheek by jowl, arms around one another, legs slung across bodies, for all the world like lovers in our own society. Sometimes they lie caressing that way in little knots of three and four. Women never do these things." Never do the men make an overt sexual gesture at one another. "The basis," writes Henry, "for man's loyalty to man has roots in the many warm bodily contacts between them. . . . The relationships built on these hours of lying together with anyone at all bear fruit in the softening of conflicts that are so characteristic of the Kaingang." Violent conflict occurs only between men who have never shared such caresses.

Little boys and girls play together in rough and tumble. Brothers and sisters, brothers- and sisters-in-law, and cousins, sleep side by side, cross legs, or embrace. The corollaries to this are that marriages and love affairs may take place among all classes of relatives, with the exception of parents and full brothers and sisters. There is also a complete lack of emphasis on temperamental differences between the sexes, with consequent lack of inhibition on the part of women.

**THE TASADAY OF MINDANAO.** In July 1971 the world was startled by the announcement of the discovery of a people so



primitive, that up to their encounter with a member of another tribe who taught them to trap, they were exclusively foodgatherers. This people, consisting of fourteen children and thirteen adults, are the Tasaday of Southern Mindanao in the Philippines. Everyone who meets them is immediately impressed by their sensitivity, gentleness, and loving nature. Peggy Durdin, who spent some days with them, writes of them with enthusiasm: "Babies are in constant bodily contact with their parents." And she adds,

Among the most quickly discernible and attractive Tasaday traits are their capacity for affection (and relaxed expression of it) and their sense of humor. Adults and children do not seem afraid of being openly loving. Twelve or 15 onlookers did not prevent Balayem from hugging Sindi [his wife] close to him. Lobo, a strikingly beautiful and intelligent boy of 10 or 12, and Balayem, whose extrovert manner contrasts with a mobile, sensitive face, unaffectedly throw their arms around Manda [anthropologist Manuel Elizalde], nuzzle up to him, rub their cheeks against his and sit very quietly next to him for extended periods with an arm around his shoulders. . . . The Tasaday live this partly communal life in very close quarters year after year, as their ancestors told them to do, with remarkable harmony. I found no one who had heard them exchange harsh words or even speak sharply to the young. In the face of something displeasing, they seem to use the tactic of evasion: They simply walk away.

In some societies, as among the Mundurucu Indians of Brazil, men and women do not touch except as a tentative invitation to sex.

Tactile qualities are frequently recognized in traits or modalities not directly associated with touch. The tactile quality of sound of certain kinds, for example, is described as "silky," "smooth," "soft," "abrasive," "coarse," and the like. Some writers pride themselves on an almost tactile knowledge of their craft, as if they were more artisans than writers—Flaubert and Kipling were such. Painting is a medium in which tactility has almost constituted an essential part of the artist's communica-

tion. One thinks especially of the works of Van Gogh, Segonzac, the Impressionists generally, and many others.

**TOUCH AND SOUND.** It has sometimes been remarked, perhaps more as a metaphor than anything else, that sound has a tactile quality. There exists, however, a far deeper relationship between touch and sound than most of us are aware. The versatility of the skin is such that it is capable of responding to sound waves just as it is to those of pressure. A. S. Mirkin, of the Pavlov Institute of Physiology at Leningrad, has shown that the sensory receptors for pressure (deep touch), which are present around muscles, joints, ligaments, and tendons, the Pacinian corpuscles, possess very definite resonance properties. Mirkin subjected Pacinian corpuscles, in mesenteric tissue adjacent to the intestines, to acoustic stimulation in a uniform acoustic field, and found that these receptors possess resonance properties, and that a conditioned connection is obtainable between an optimal frequency of stimulation and periods of bioelectric activity, thus strongly suggesting a biomechanical resonance in Pacinian corpuscles.

Madsen and Mears, using deaf subjects, found that sound vibrations have a significant effect upon the tactile threshold, that a 50 cycles per second tone at both high and low pressure desensitizes the skin and raises the threshold, while a 5,000 cycles per second tone at both high and low pressure levels sensitized the skin.

Gescheider has shown that the skin is able to localize sound waves of different intensities with remarkable accuracy.

Which suggests all sorts of possibilities.

**TOUCH AND PAINTING.** In the 1890's Bernard Berenson, improving upon a notion of Goethe's that a work of art must be "life-enhancing," suggested that one way of achieving this is by the artist making us imagine that we are enjoying genuine physical feelings when we look at a painting or sculpture. Such feelings Berenson called ideated sensations. Ideated sensations exist only in the imagination and are produced by the work of art by making us realize its being and live its life. The most

important of the ideated sensations Berenson called tactile values. The work of genuine art stimulates our ideated sensations of touch, and such stimulation is life-enhancing. Form, not to be confused with shape, represents that radiance from within when it realizes itself completely. Form is the life-enhancing aspect of visible things, and form is but another word for tactile values. "Through all the ages," writes Berenson, "and in every place, whenever a visual representation is recognized as a work of art and not as a mere artifact, no matter how elaborate, smart, and startling, it has tactile values. It may have much besides, which is of more or less importance or none at all, but to be accepted as a work of art these other attractions must rest on a basis of tactile values, or be in close connection with them."

The artist, in creating a work of art—unconsciously for the most part, sometimes consciously—imagines all the sensations felt or which he supposes to be felt by whatever he is attempting to organize and harmonize into an equivalent of what he feels it to be intrinsically, and what at the same time it says and means to us. I can think of no better illustration and corroboration of Berenson's view than Van Gogh's painting of a straw-seated kitchen chair. The tactile values of that painting make that chair so real that the chair itself would look almost unreal by comparison. The writer, as Berenson points out, will do the same thing with words, as will the artist in virtually every other medium.

In some painters tactility is so prominent it almost reaches out and touches one. John Constable is an outstanding example of such a painter. As Robert Hughes has written of him, "His childhood was substance rather than fantasy: tactile memories of mold, mud, woodgrain and brick became some of the most "painterly" painting in the history of art. The foreground of *The Leaping Horse* is all matter, and the things in it—squidgy earth, tangled weeds and wild flowers, prickle of light on the dark skin of water sliding over a hidden ledge—are troweled and spattered on with ecstatic gusto. This is the landscape of touch."

Marshall McLuhan speaks of TV as essentially tactile, and he and Parker very cogently remark that "the social, the political and the artistic implications of tactility could only have been lost to human awareness in a visual or civilized culture which is now dissolving under the impact of electric circuitry." These notions have a very real foundation, well understood by the eminent anthropologist, Alfred Kroeber. In a letter to Meyer Schapiro, the art critic, Kroeber wrote with reference to Berenson's "tactile values" in painting, that

these can appeal only through the eye, and never actually to the sense of touch, nevertheless they refer to something that underlies the vision which is at the center of visual art: namely, that feeling by touching precedes sight, phylogenetically and ontogenetically in every human baby. We all touch first, learn to see later, and in learning erect a nearby visual world on a tactile base, giving a double quality to all perceptions of objects, first within immediate reach, and later within ultimate or potential reach. All children, and many adults, want to handle a new sight. The two senses of course are disparate: they operate through different sense receptors. But what is seen and touched is always made part of ourselves more intensely and more meaningfully than what is only seen. And so in art representation the representative picture we *only* see but cannot, in imagination, touch, does not carry the same attraction and concentration of interest as the one we can, imaginatively, handle and touch as well as see clearly.

To this Kroeber added orally, "that perhaps abstractionism of whatever era has a more intellectual, a lesser appeal, the subconscious tactile aspects having been withdrawn and abandoned."

The tactile quality of vision is apparent in the touching of another with the eyes. Hence one avoids looking or staring at strangers, except in certain conventionally accepted situations. It is of great interest to observe here that under natural conditions gorillas avoid looking directly at a stranger, and especially regard a direct look, until friendly relations have been established, with suspicion. This is also true of baboons, and of many other monkeys.

As Ernest Schachtel has pointed out, the distance senses, sight and hearing, both phylogenetically and ontogenetically attain their full development later than the proximity senses, touch, taste, and smell. And, as he rightly states, the proximity senses are neglected and to a considerable extent even tabooed by Western civilization. He adds, "Both pleasure and disgust are more intimately linked with the proximity senses than with the distance senses. The pleasure which a perfume, a taste, or a texture can give is much more of a bodily, physical one, hence more akin to sexual pleasure, than is the more sublime pleasure aroused by sound and the least bodily of all pleasures, the beautiful."

In the daily lives of animals the proximity senses play an important role. In man, if they are not repressed in sexual relations, then they are otherwise tabooed in interpersonal relations, "the more a culture or a group tends to isolate people, to put distance between them, and to prevent spontaneous relationships and the 'natural' animal-like expressions of such relations."

Marcuse remarks that civilization demands the repression of the pleasures to be derived from the proximity senses in order to ensure the desexualization "of the organism required by its social utilization as an instrument of labor."

Perhaps it would be more accurate to say that the taboos on interpersonal tactuality grew out of a fear closely associated with the Christian tradition in its various denominations, the fear of bodily pleasures. Two of the great negative achievements of Christianity have been to make a sin of tactual pleasures, and by the repression of sex to make it an obsession.

ORDER OF SENSORY DEVELOPMENT. The senses of *Homo sapiens* develop in a definite sequence, as (1) tactile, (2) auditory, and (3) visual. As the child approaches adolescence the order of precedence becomes reversed, as (1) visual, (2) auditory, and (3) tactile. It is much more important to experience tactile and auditory stimulations in the early developing years than it is to experience visual ones. As soon, however, as one has developed through one's tactile and auditory senses the know-how of

being human, vision becomes by far the most important of the senses. Yet a vision can only become meaningful on the basis of what it has felt and what it has heard.

It has long been believed that touch educates vision, that as Bishop Berkeley suggested in the eighteenth century, the infant discovers size, shape, location, and distinctiveness, by touching. Experiments conducted in recent years require some modification of this view. It has been found, for example, that children have far more difficulty discriminating objects they have touched but not seen, than they do objects that they have seen but not touched. It is now quite clear that vision is well developed at birth, and that the human infant has good depth perception before he has had any opportunity to learn it in any way.

Bower, by an ingenious series of experiments, has shown that by the end of the second week of life an infant expects a seen object to have tactile properties. He concludes from his experiments that in humans there is a primitive unity of the senses, with visual experience specifying tactile qualities, and that this primitive unity is built into the structure of the human nervous system.

As one would expect, younger infants protest tactual separation from the mother more than do older infants. The older infant tends to make more frequent contact and to manipulate more objects than the younger. It is this tactual-manipulative character of his perceptual exploration that sets the more actively adept older child apart from the younger infant.

Older children inspect objects manually more thoroughly than do younger ones. The three- or four-year-old explores an object with fixed static movements, in contrast to the older child's active exploration of the object and its contour.

Zaporozhets, in a study of preschool children, had one group of children manipulate several irregular geometric forms by inserting them into a formboard. Children in a second group inspected the forms visually but never touched them, while those in a third group only manipulated them tactually. When the children were required to discriminate geometric from a group of unfamiliar forms, it was found that those who had

both visually and tactually manipulated the original forms made less than half the errors made by the two other groups. The children in the first group, as they grew older, appeared not to need to manipulate the forms to do well on the task, whereas the children who only touched the forms continued to do poorly; the children, however, who only saw the forms became progressively more accurate with age. For older children, it would seem, physical contact with an object is unnecessary for making a perceptual discrimination; seeing it is sufficient.

Dr. Irvin Rock and Charles S. Harris found, in adult subjects, that when the sense of touch conveyed information that disagreed with what they were seeing, the visual sense predominated and determined the meaning they gave to their sensations.

In adults how dependent our knowledge of the external world is upon the sense of touch is dramatically illustrated by the case of the young Englishwoman Sheila Hocken. Sheila lived nearly thirty years from birth as a blind person. After she recovered her sight, she had to learn what everything was. As she explained, "The eye picks up a visual picture, but translates it and sends impulses to the brain. And I am afraid that my brain did not know what to do with them. So everything I saw I had to touch." Information about things that could not be obtained by touch she would either smell or taste. Individuals who have become blind after having led a sighted life also become, as is well known, dependent upon touch for the recognition of objects in the external world.

THE GANDA OF EAST AFRICA. Dr. Mary Ainsworth has made a detailed study of rearing practices in infancy among the Ganda of East Africa. Her field study was carried out in a single village some fifteen miles from Kampala. The effects of white contact have long been operative upon the Ganda, but nevertheless the majority of mothers still carried their infants on their backs and enjoyably breastfed them for a year or more. Ganda babies spend most of their waking hours being held by someone. While holding the baby the mother gently patted or stroked

him. The total care of this kind given by the mother was very considerable. From her comparative observations, Dr. Ainsworth concludes: "It is better for a baby to be held a lot, to be picked up when he cries, to be given what he wants when he wants it, and to be given much opportunity and freedom to interact than it is for a baby to be kept for long periods in his crib apart from other people, where his signals cannot be perceived and consequently where he cannot experience a sense of predictable consequence and control." The rate of sensorimotor development was accelerated in most babies. They sat, stood, crawled, and walked much earlier than the average baby in Western societies. Ainsworth attributes this to the kind of infant care the Ganda give, "with much physical contact, much interaction between the infant and his mother, much social stimulation, prompt gratification of creature-comfort needs, lack of confinement, and freedom to explore the world."

Unfortunately, Ainsworth's study deals only with the first fifteen months of the Ganda child's development, and tells us nothing at all of the later personality traits of the Ganda adult. The anthropological literature on the Ganda is not much more helpful in this connection, and such other information as is available on this score is largely anecdotal. Audrey Richards emphasizes the fact that there was a remarkable unanimity in the early European visitors' accounts of the Ganda, emphasizing their good manners, politeness, and charm, their cleanliness, neatness, modesty, orderliness, dignity, and intelligence. But it was also observed that they were touchy, competitive, legalistic, capable of cruel behavior, reticent, and difficult to know well. There seem to be many contradictions here, but they may not really be so. It may well be that the congenial qualities of Ganda adults owe much to the motherliness they received during their first year or so, and that their less desirable qualities were engendered by later conditionings. This would appear so from the findings of Dr. Marcelle Géber who studied 308 children in Kampala. Here, also, the newborns and infants up to two years showed remarkable advances both in physical and intellectual development, as well as in personal-social relations, over comparably aged European children. Children examined



before and after weaning showed marked differences in their behavior. The attitudes of the mothers towards the children seemed to be largely responsible for the differences. Before the child is weaned the mother's whole interest is centered on him. She never leaves him, carries him on her back—often in skin-to-skin contact—wherever she goes, sleeps with him, feeds him on demand at all hours of the day and night, forbids him nothing, and never chides him. He lives in complete satisfaction and security, always under her protection. The child is, moreover, continually being stimulated by seeing her at her various occupations and hearing her interminable conversations, and because he is always with her, his world is relatively extensive. He is also the center of interest for neighbors, and visitors, to whom he is offered, as a matter of course, as soon as the usual greetings have been exchanged. If, however, he shows the slightest sign of displeasure, he is at once taken back by his mother. While the Gesell tests were being administered to the children, the loving and warm behavior of the mothers, always ready to help if help were needed, showed very clearly how the children were surrounded by affection. The mothers' interest in the tests and the detailed answers they gave to the questioning were further evidence of this solicitude.

Dr. Géber's follow-up studies showed that there were some other aspects to child rearing in this society that did not encourage and accelerate the growth of the children. For when the child reaches eighteen months to two years of age it is taken away from its mother and given to another woman in another village to be disciplined and "socialized." The natural mother had been required to love her child, fondle and feed it, and generally stimulate its development, but not to "train" it. This was the task of the foster mother. Dr. Géber found that the children underwent a remarkable deceleration in their developmental progress, some children showing even less ability than before, presumably because they had lost skills acquired earlier.

**BUSHMEN OF THE KALAHARI.** Dr. Patricia Draper, who lived among the !Kung Bushmen, on the edges of the Kalahari Desert in Botswana, Southwest Africa, found that they lived in

bands of thirty people, and that they very much liked being close together and touching. In camp, resting, talking, doing chores, they prefer to gather in knots or clumps, leaning against each other, their arms brushing, their crossed legs overlapping, physical contact reaching its highest expression in children, with girls showing more physical contact than boys.

Lorna Marshall, who has spent much time living among the !Kung over a period extending from 1950 to 1961, writes,

!Kung babies are carried most of the time by their mothers, tied in soft leather slings against their mother's side, where they can easily reach their mother's breast. They nurse at will. !Kung women have excellent lactation. All the babies are plump. The babies wear no clothes and are in skin-to-skin contact with their mothers. They sleep in their mother's arms at night. When they are not in their mother's arms or tied to their sides, they are in someone else's arms, or if they are set down to play they clamber over their elders as they lie chatting and resting, or play within arm's reach. The babies are constantly in the presence of people who are gentle and affectionate with them and who are watchful. The babies have no special toys, but are allowed to play with any of the adults' possessions that come to their hands and mouths, except knives and hunting equipment. These items are hung carefully in the bushes, out of reach of the children.

The !Kung never seem to tire of their babies. They dandle them, kiss them, dance with them, and sing to them. The older children make playthings of the babies. The girls carry them around, not as a task set them by their parents (though they might carry babies around for that reason also), but because they play "mother." The boys also carry babies around, give them rides, and drag them on karosses (a favorite game). If the babies utter a whimper they are carried back to their mothers to nurse. Altogether the babies appear to be as serene and contented as well-fed young puppies.

When people are sitting at leisure, they spend time teaching the babies. They help them to stand or to take their first steps between outstretched arms of the adults and they play little games with them.

Dr. M. J. Konner was much impressed by the amount and quality of tactile stimulation that !Kung children received from their mothers. Compared to these Bushmen, he remarks, the American child can be considered to be "deprived" of physical stimulation. He notes that the experiences of children in each culture are, of course, related to the nature of the culture. The Bushman infant grows up in a world in which survival arises from mutual economic dependence, is dependent upon cooperation, whereas the world of the American infant favors competition and mobility.

From the first weeks the Bushman infant is carried on the hip or side in a sling contoured to support the back, buttocks, and thighs. In connection with this posture Konner quotes the remark of Gesell and Amatruda concerning the six-month-old sitting up, "His eyes widen, pulse strengthens, breathing quickens and he smiles when he is translated from the supine horizontal to the seated perpendicular. This . . . is more than a postural triumph. It is a widening of horizon, a new social orientation."

From their position on the mother's hip [these children have] available to them her entire social world, the world of objects (particularly work in the mother's hands) and the breast, and the mother has immediate easy access to the infant. When the mother is standing, the infant's face is just at the eye level of desperately maternal 10- to 12-year-old girls, who frequently approach and initiate brief, intense, face-to-face interactions, including mutual smiling and vocalization. When not in the sling they are passed hand to hand around a fire for similar interactions with one adult or child after another. They are kissed on their faces, bellies, genitals, sung to, bounced, entertained, encouraged, even addressed at length in conversational tones long before they can understand words. Throughout the first year there is rarely any dearth of such attention and love.

Breastfeeding may continue as long as six or eight years, the child feeding on demand. Such early experiences in interaction with the mother's body and her nurturing support undoubtedly exert a powerful influence upon the Bushman personality, a

personality which has charmed so many different writers. One of the outstanding traits, almost certainly related to this regimen, Dr. Konner remarks, is the continual giving and receiving of food among adults.

Throughout a great part of Black Africa similar variations are played on much the same theme.

NEW GUINEA. From New Guinea we have some excellent accounts of the relationship of early childhood experience to the development of adult personality, in which tactile experience clearly played a significant role. These accounts, by Margaret Mead, are principally of the Arapesh and Mundugumor societies.

Among the Arapesh children are always being held by someone. The infant is carried by the mother in a small net bag suspended from her forehead. A child's crying is a thing to be avoided, the breast being immediately given to comfort it. Breastfeeding is continued for three or four years. The children usually sleep in close contact with the mother's body, either hung in a thick net bag against her back, crooked in her arm, or curled on her lap as she sits cooking or plaiting. The child thus enjoys a continuous warm sense of security. Later, when the mother is away for a whole day working in the garden, she will compensatorily make up for her absence by a full day of nursing, when the infant, held in her lap, may suckle at will, play about, suckle again, play with her breasts, and gradually regain any sense of security it may have lost. This is an experience the mother enjoys as much as the child. The mother takes an active part in the suckling process. She holds the breast in her hand and gently vibrates the nipple inside the child's lips. She blows into its ear, or tickles its ears, or playfully slaps its genitals, or tickles its toes. The child in turn plays little tattoos on its mother's or its own body, plays with one breast while suckling the other, teases the breast with its hands, plays with its own genitals, laughs and coos, and makes a long pleasant game of suckling. "Thus," Mead remarks, "the whole matter of nourishment is made into an occasion of high affectivity and

becomes a means by which the child develops and maintains a sensitivity to caresses in every part of its body." Interestingly enough, no Arapesh child sucks its thumb or a finger, but there is a great deal of playing with one's lips during the increasingly prolonged absences of the mother. The lip playing is continued for some time after weaning and much later. Boys are encouraged to stop lip playing after initiation and permitted to chew betel nut, while girls may continue till they have borne children.

Half an hour's cuddling, and the child will follow anyone anywhere. The response to demonstrative affection is immediate. As a result of such demonstrations of affection from everyone on every possible occasion the Arapesh child grows up with a complete sense of emotional security in the care of others. The result is an easy, gentle, receptive, unaggressive adult personality, and a society in which competitive or aggressive games are unknown, and in which warfare, in the sense of organized expeditions to plunder, conquer, kill, or attain glory, is absent.

The Mundugumor, a river people living to the south of the Arapesh, by contrast with the latter, are an aggressive, hostile people who live among themselves in a state of mutual distrust and uncomfortableness. Even before a child is born there is much discussion as to whether it shall be saved or not, depending on its sex, mothers preferring boys, fathers girls. In Mundugumor society the child lives an unloved life. From birth on the infant is carried in a rough-plaited basket, semicircular in profile, suspended from the mother's forehead. The basket is harsh, stiff, and opaque. No warmth from the mother's body can penetrate it, and the infant lies cramped within it, seeing nothing but narrow slits of light at both ends. At home the infant in its basket is hung up. When it cries, without touching its body, the mother or other female scratches the outside of the basket with her fingernail, making a harsh grating sound. Children generally respond to this sound. If, however, the crying does not stop the infant is suckled—the mother standing up while doing so. There is no playful fondling between mother and child. The moment suckling stops, the child is returned to his prison. Children therefore develop a strong fighting attitude,

holding on to the nipple as firmly as possible, frequently choking from swallowing too rapidly. The choking angers the mother and infuriates the child, thus further turning the suckling experience into one of anger and frustration, struggle and hostility, rather than one of affection, reassurance, and contentment.

Children of one or two years are carried on the mother's back. A crying, crawling child will be picked up firmly and placed on the mother's neck, holding on to its mother by her hair. The breast is given only when it is thought the child is in need of food, never to comfort it in fright or pain. From the time he begins walking his mother's hostility toward suckling is made very evident to the child, who is pushed away, and as often as not slapped. Thus, weaning is accomplished with hostility. A few Mundugumor children suck the back of the hand or a pair of fingers, with an unmistakable peevish, fretful, anxious look on their faces.

It is hardly surprising that with such a socializing experience in childhood the Mundugumor child becomes the kind of unattractive, aggressive, cannibalistic creature he is.\*

Dr. James Ritchie of the University of Wakaito, New Zealand, tells of a delightful experience he enjoyed on a field trip to New Guinea where he met a psychiatric nurse who had been given a manual of sensitivity training. As a result of reading it she had begun letting her Melanesian patients, with whom she had no language contact, touch each other, and letting herself touch them. "It took nerve to do it," writes Dr. Ritchie, "to meet her own reactions and more still to meet their response. They returned her touch; they stroked her hair, greeted her with the gentlest of finger caresses, held her hand for hours at a time. She now moves through her ward, previously filled with agitated and mute humanity with a new sense of fulfilling her mission—to heal."

\*This is how the Mundugumor were in 1930; since then they have undergone considerable change.

THE ATIMELANG. Among the Atimelang of the Netherlands East Indies island of Alor, when an individual is dying it is the custom for one of the grown children or some kinsman to hold the dying person in his lap, much as parents hold children. Dr. Cora DuBois, who observed this, suggests that such behavior constitutes a reversion to infantile nurturing patterns in the search for which she suspects many men have spent their lives.

THE DUSUN OF NORTH BORNEO. Williams has made the only anthropological study known to me of tactuality in a nonliterate culture. He studied the Dusun of the mountain highlands of North Borneo, an agricultural-hunting people whose principal crop is rice. Williams has emphasized the need for studies devoted to the various ways in which, in different cultures, individuals are required or expected to relinquish particular tactile experiences or practices and develop compensatory symbolic substitutes at different periods in life. "The transformation," he writes, "of tactile experience into abstract conceptualizations would seem crucial to understanding the way some cultural conceptions are acquired by the individual in the course of cultural learning and transmission."

Concern with and recognition of tactile experience in Dusun life is complex, but can be observed in both overt behavior and in a variety of linguistic, gesture, and body posture surrogates for touch used in many social situations. Contacts such as "living touch" are distinguished from a "non-living touch" while "touchy," and "touchable," and "touched," each are differentiated from the "act of touching," "tickling," and "touching together." Linguistic uses for specific tactile contacts, including terms denoting limits and acceptability of such experience, comprise a special lexicon. Other surrogates for tactile experience commonly used in Dusun life are in the form of culturally structured gestures meant to be suggestive of particular touch actions; some 40 gestures are used to note emotion, while at least 12 have openly sexual meanings de-

noting acts of intercourse.\* Body posture surrogates for tactile experiences often involve a complex set of actions, including inclinations of the head, facial expression, and hand, arm, and trunk movements. The behavior repertoire of the coquettish Dusun woman includes a variety of such complex body posture surrogates for tactile experience. Such body actions are used generally to indicate approval, or dislike, of displays of body arts, grooming, and decoration as invitations to direct touch experience.

In greeting another no tactile contact is involved in Dusun society, while strict boundaries of permitted tactile contacts exist for various social action situations. It is of interest that the Dusun newborn is isolated for some eight to ten days from all tactile contacts, except those of the mother. Among the phrases used in the several rituals to which the child is exposed during his first year of life is one saying that "no stranger will be allowed to touch you to bring you harm."

The way in which the members of a culture learn to deal with the sense of touch is culturally defined, and this is made explicitly clear in Williams' excellent study. Williams' plea for further investigation of this important, but most neglected aspect of human behavior, can only be echoed here.

**OTHER NONLITERATE CULTURES.** James Prescott of the National Institute of Child Health and Development, Bethesda, Maryland, and Douglas Wallace of the University of California Medical School, San Francisco, in an interesting cross-cultural study of the relationship between tactile (somatosensory) experience and the origins of aggressive behavior covering forty-nine nonliterate cultures, found that there existed a highly significant correlation between the two in all but one of these cultures. The Jivaro of Brazil were the one exception. In general it was found that in those cultures in which tactile experience was high, adult aggression was low, while in those cultures in

\* "Thus, the thumb inserted between the first and second fingers of the same hand is a symbol of intercourse, while the waving of hands alongside the ears, with fingers up and palms forward denotes fright and derision."



which such experience was low, adult aggression was high. In thirteen cultures which seemed to be exceptions to the rule it was found that five of the six that were characterized by high infant affection and high adult violence were repressive of premarital sexual behavior, while six of the seven cultures that exhibited low physical affection towards infants and had low adult violence were characterized by permissive sexual behaviors. The somatosensory pleasure hypothesis was thus confirmed for both the prepubertal and postpubertal stages of development.

THE TACTILE EXPERIENCE OF THE AMERICAN CHILD. Passing from nonliterate cultures such as the Dusun, the Ganda, the Eskimos, or the Bushman to the highly sophisticated culture of the United States, we find that the differences in tactile experience of infants and young children in each culture are very revealing. For the United States there is available an excellent study of the tactile experience of children from infancy to four and a half years of age in working-class, middle-class, and upper-class families. This is an unpublished doctoral dissertation by Vidal Starr Clay entitled "The Effect of Culture on Mother-Child Tactile Communication." Forty-five mother-child pairs were the subjects of this study, with twenty boys and twenty-five girls. The observations were made on public, country-club, and private beaches. In Table III, the findings are set out for the average tactile contacts by age and class for one hour of observation of children in groups designated *A*, *B*, *C*, and *D*, according to the age of the children. From this table it will be seen that tactile contact becomes a diminishing factor in the mother-child affectional system with the increasing age of the child. When, however, tactile frequency and duration scores are compared by age and social class, a surprising exception occurs in the youngest or infant group, where the highest degree of tactile contact would be expected.

In all three classes, [writes Clay] the tactile frequency scores were less for the youngest children, the neonates and non-walking ones, than they were for the walking children. The duration

TABLE III. CONTACTS AND PATTERNS OF PLAY

BY AGE AND SOCIAL CLASS

For one hour of observation at the beach.

Number of children = 45

Group	Mean Number Contacts				Mean Time in Contact			
	W*	M*	U*	Group Average	W	M	U	Group Average
<i>A</i>	4.5	4.2	4.0	4.2	0.0	8.0	9.7	7.5
<i>B</i>	3.1	5.5	15.3	6.3	3.0	8.0	22.3	8.2
<i>C</i>	2.6	3.3	6.0	3.7	1.4	1.3	3.4	1.8
<i>D</i>	—	5.3	4.8	5.0	—	8.3	2.8	4.9
Average for								
Total	3.1	4.4	7.0	4.9	2.2	5.8	8.2	5.6

\*W = Working Class; M = Middle Class; U = Upper Class

SOURCE: Vidal S. Clay, "The Effect of Culture on Mother-Child Tactile Communication" (Ph.D. dissertation, Teachers College, Columbia University, 1966), Table IV, p. 284. By permission.

scores were lower also for the working class and upper class infants than they were for the children just above them in age. Only the middle class duration score shows the pattern we would expect to find: the highest score for the youngest age group. The middle class mothers' duration score was much higher than the duration score for the mothers of the other classes: nearly forty minutes in contact for each child in the hour observed. It was this figure that skewed the duration score average and made it appear that the youngest children in the field study sample received the most time in tactile contact. Therefore the conclusion about tactile contact and age must be rephrased to say that overall tactile contact does decline with age but in this culture, as it was observed in the field study, it is the just walking child who receives the most frequent tactile contact and the contact of longest duration, not the infant and non-walking child. From a high at this time, just walking to two years of age, the amount of contact declines regularly as the child grows older.

It is a general assumption that the neonate and infant receive most tactile stimulation, but the truth seems to be that with the

Group	Mean Time Near				Mean Time Away			
	W	M	U	Group Average	W	M	U	Group Average
<i>A</i>	4.0	3.0	31.0	27.2	13.0	20.0	20.0	17.7
<i>B</i>	30.5	13.5	19.0	22.9	19.6	30.0	15.7	20.5
<i>C</i>	22.4	22.0	28.7	23.8	23.0	24.0	20.0	22.6
<i>D</i>	—	15.0	25.2	21.1	—	31.3	29.2	30.0
Average for Total	27.4	16.2	25.8	23.3	20.5	27.4	23.2	23.7

advent of hospital deliveries, bottlefeeding, clothes which form a barrier between the caretaker and the infant's skin, the *A*-group child, in the group from two months to fourteen months of age, the nonwalkers, receives less tactile experience than the *B*-group child, the just-walkers from fourteen months to two years. The *C* group included twelve children between two and three years, and the *D* group included ten three- and four-year-olds. In view of the actual needs of the infant, this is a very striking and significant finding.

Reva Rubin, who has had many years of experience in obstetrical nursing, has remarked how struck she has been by the very small number of American mothers who, even at the end of the first year, are sufficiently comfortable to hold their babies up close to their chests in pure enjoyment and pleasure of contact. Those who are most likely to do so, she found, were the mothers who really enjoyed breastfeeding, and, of course, she adds, grandmothers and aunts.

Harlow and his co-workers found that in the rhesus mother-infant affectional system three phases were clearly evident: (1) attachment and protection, (2) ambivalence, and (3) separation. The stage of attachment and protection is characterized by virtually total positive conduct, cuddling, cradling, nursing, grooming, restraining, and retrieving. The stage of ambivalence includes both positive and negative responses, such as mouthing or biting, cuffing or slapping, clasp-pulling the fur, and rejecting attempts to maintain physical contact. The stage of

separation results in the termination of contact between mother and infant. There is no doubt that similar stages or phases occur in the maternal affectional development of the human mother, and that the behaviors associated with them are of great consequence for the development of the infant. This is especially clearly most significant in the phase of attachment and protection. It is precisely in this most important of these phases that the American mother seems to fail most. In the rhesus monkey, the mother normally exhibits a high degree of interest in her infant for the first thirty days, and then begins to display ambivalent responses. In the human mother the period of attachment is normally of much greater duration. But, as Clay says,

Unlike the primate mother, and mothers of many other societies, the American mother largely omits the phase of close bodily attachment. In this culture, the separation of the bodies of the mother and child at birth is the end for the most part of the mother-child physical symbiosis. Instead of a relationship where the mother's need for intimate physical contact exceeds that of the infant, there is a relationship where the mother shows maternal attachment behavior only in response to the child's gross vocal and kinesthetic demands. This difference in the American maternal pattern in the infant's first four months of life is of course due to the fact that close mother-infant tactile contact is not the norm for this culture. The fact that American mothers did not themselves experience close physical contact with their own mothers no doubt reinforces this behavior. The lack of physical proximity between mother and young child, whereby the mother stimulates the infant and in turn picks up and responds to the cues that the infant gives back to her, also reinforces the cultural pattern of separation.

In America both mother and infant are clothed even during breastfeeding, so that the baby, as he is fed, often experiences little more of her skin than the breast, and perhaps an occasional handstroking. In the bottlefeeding situation, which is the rule in America, the infant experiences the very minimum of reciprocal tactile stimulation. The deprivation of tactile stimulation experienced in this way by both infant and mother explains the institutionalization in American culture of the nonex-

pression of affection, especially between mother and baby, through close physical contact. Tactile contact between the American mother and child expresses caretaking and nurturance, rather than love and affection. This is clearly evident from the fact that mothers in this culture touch their walking children more frequently than they do when their children are nonwalking.

In keeping with the findings of other investigators, Clay found that girl babies received more demonstrative acts of affection than boy babies. Mothers seem to be happier about having girl babies than boy babies, and girl babies tend to be weaned later than boys. Moss, Robson, and Pedersen, in a detailed study of maternal stimulation of infants, in Washington, D.C., found that mothers talked, kissed, and rocked in a rocking chair their male infants, at the examining age of one month, more than they did their female infants at the same age. These investigators suggest that the difference probably reflects a social-affectionate orientation towards the males, involving behaviors that tend to soothe and modulate rather than excite or activate the infant. The mothers significantly more often resorted to the distance receptors of vision and hearing in dealing with their female children than with their male infants at one month of age. Moss and his collaborators suggest that since female infants develop earlier than male infants, the more expressive mothers may have adjusted the type of stimulation they provided for their infants in consonance with the developmental requirements or status of the child. Thus male infants would have received more talking to, more kissing, and more rocking, whereas female infants with their more advanced developmental status would tend to be stimulated through their active attention and the processing of stimuli (auditory and visual) ordinarily associated with higher cortical (cognitive) functioning.

Interestingly enough, the animation of the mother's voice was found to be highly reliably predictive of the amount and type of stimulation she provided her infant at one month and three months of age. The animated mothers were found to give

their children more stimulation than the soft-spoken mothers. Less educated mothers tended to provide more physical stimulation than more educated mothers. The better-educated mother tended to spend more time talking to her male infant. Fear of strangers and gaze-averting behavior at eight to nine and a half months of age was definitely found to be related to the type of stimulation the infant received from his mother in earlier infancy. The more stimulation, particularly of the distance receptors, the infant received, the more comfortable the infant appeared to be with a stranger at age eight to nine and a half months. These investigators suggest that children who are accustomed to experiencing novel visual and auditory stimulation may have a better mental organization for coping with and assimilating "strangeness." Since strange stimuli are less novel for such children they tend to evoke less of a sense of subjective uncertainty in them. That is to say, the children who receive more stimulation through the distance receptors become more complex cognitively and therefore have more resources for dealing with unfamiliar auditory or visual stimuli.

Tactile demonstrations of affection between mother and daughter are not as inhibited as they are between mother and son. The very thought of any such demonstration of affection between father and son is something that still makes many American fathers squirm. A boy putting his arm around the shoulders of another boy is cause for real alarm. It is simply not done. Even women are reluctant to indulge in such open displays of affection towards members of their own sex. One touches others largely in a sexual context. To touch another out of such context is open to grave misinterpretation, since touching is to a large extent restricted to and associated with sex. When intercourse is completed the male ceases to touch his partner and usually retires to his twin bed to spend the rest of the time in pleasurable lack of contact with himself.

The replacement of the double bed in which husband and wife sleep together by twin beds in which husband and wife sleep apart may well be significantly correlated with the decline in both breastfeeding and the reduction in maternal-infant tac-

tile stimulation that prevailed in earlier times. I have elsewhere suggested that parents who sleep together in the same bed are likely to develop a quite different relationship to one another and towards their children than parents who habitually sleep in separate beds, and that "same-bed" families tend to be more cohesive. "Keeping in contact" in the same bed comprises a very different experience from the contactless separateness of twin-bed sleeping arrangements. In her novel *Strange Fruit* Lillian Smith makes Alma, the wife of Dr. Tracy or "Tut," reflect as follows:

Sometimes all she could remember of her's and Tut's nights together was the lifting of his leg off her body. There was something almost *dissipated* about the way Tut slept, letting himself go, so, so uncontrolled, you might say. Alma had thought of twin beds but had never done anything about it, for she doubted in her heart that husbands and wives should sleep separately. It was all a little vague to her, but sleeping together, cold weather or hot, seemed a necessary thread in the fabric of marriage, which, once broken, might cause the whole thing to unravel.

Just how she was not certain. She was convinced, however, that her own mother's custom of sleeping in a room separate from father's had caused their family life to be not as successful as it should have been.

Alma was quite right. Such husbands and wives tend to grow "out of touch" with one another. The subject has been investigated by two American anthropologists working in Japan. Drs. William Caudill and David W. Plath studied the co-sleeping patterns of parents and children in Japanese families in Tokyo and Kyoto. They found that in urban Japan an individual can expect to co-sleep in a two-generation group, first as a child and then as a parent, over approximately half his life. Commencing at birth, this goes on till puberty, and then commences again with the birth of the first child, continuing till about the time of the menopause in the mother, and recurring for a few years in old age. In the intervening years the individual generally sleeps in a one-generation group with a sibling after puberty, with a spouse for a few years after marriage, and again with a spouse in late middle age. Sleeping alone is a reluctant alterna-

tive most commonly occurring in the years between puberty and marriage. Caudill and Plath offer the broad generalization that "sleeping arrangements in Japanese families tend to blur the distinctions between generations and between the sexes, to emphasize the interdependence more than the separateness of individuals, and to underplay (or largely ignore) the potentiality for the growth of conjugal intimacy between husband and wife in sexual and other matters in favor of a more general familial cohesion."

The speculation the authors offer

concerns the coincidence of those age periods when sleeping alone is most likely to occur, with the age periods when suicide is most likely to occur in Japan. The rates for both types of behavior are highest in adolescence and young adulthood, and again in old age. It might be that sleeping alone in these two periods contributes to a sense of isolation and alienation for an individual who, throughout the rest of his life cycle, seems to derive a significant part of his sense of being a meaningful person from his sleeping physically close by other family members.

Under the conditions of co-sleeping in Japanese families described by Caudill and Plath the kind of relationships they have postulated may well exist. But under other conditions the opposite effects may be produced. For example, among the working classes of Europe and elsewhere children are often forced to occupy the same bed with strangers taken in by the parents as lodgers. The revulsion caused by such experiences may have enduring effects, resulting in avoidance of any kind of physical contact with strangers, as well as in other forms of rejection and withdrawal.

Hall points out that the Japanese are pulled in two directions. One is a deeply involved enveloping intimacy that begins in the home in childhood and extends far beyond. "There is a deep need to be close, and it is only when they are close that they are comfortable." The other pole is to keep one's distance. In public, and in the ceremonial occasions of everyday life, the



emphasis is on distance, self-control, and the concealment of feelings. Until very recently there was no public display of intimacy or touching in Japan. And yet from his interpretation of the evidence Hall believes that deep down the Japanese feel quite uncomfortable about the ceremonial, institutionalized side of life. Their principal drive is to move from the "stand on ceremony" side towards the homey, comfortable, warm, intimate, friendly side. "Their drive to be close and get to know other people is very strong."

PURITANISM, CLASS DIFFERENCES, AND TACTUALITY. In New England, one would expect that the effect of Puritanism would tend to be characterized by child-rearing practices that reduce reciprocal tactile stimulation between mother and child to a minimum, and this is indeed the case. The Fischers in their study of Orchard Town child-rearing practices found that most babies spent a good part of each day alone in a crib, playpen, or in the yard. "Such contact as a baby has with other human beings is not marked by close bodily contact as in many societies."

New Englanders, in what remains of their Puritanism, closely resemble the English from whom they originated, and, in common with the English, they suffer from the effects of residual primness. The upper-class Englishman—and especially the upper-class Englishwoman—has notoriously been characterized by an inability to exhibit emotion, and a certain striking lack of warmth.\* Not all members of the upper classes are characterized by these traits, and certainly many members of the middle and working classes exhibit them. But such traits are generally due to a lack of parental love, a failure experienced in early infancy and throughout childhood which expresses itself in an inability to relate warmly and affectionately towards others.

\*Derek Monsey speaks of "the frigid voluptuousness of the dedicatedly unsatisfied English gentlewoman," in his novel, *Its Ugly Head* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1960), p. 38.

The custom among the English upper and middle classes of sending their children away to boarding schools at an early age, of institutionalizing them, as it were, outside the warm ambience of the family, deprives these children of the love and affection so necessary for the development of a healthy personality. The privation of parental love, and especially love in the form of tactile stimulation, during infancy, probably constitutes one of the principal causes of the apparent coldness, the seemingly unemotional character, of the upper-class, and often the middle-class, Englishman. On this aspect of the Englishman's character, E. M. Forster has some illuminating comments:

People talk of the mysterious East, but the West also is mysterious. It has depths that do not reveal themselves at the first glance. We know what the sea looks like from a distance; it is of one color, and level, and obviously cannot contain such creatures as fish. But if we look into the open sea over the edge of a boat, we see a dozen colors, and, depth below depth, the fish swimming in them. That sea is the English character—apparently imperturbable and even. The depth and the colors are the English romanticism and the English sensitiveness—we do not expect to find such things, but they exist. And—to continue my metaphor—the fish are the English emotions, which are always trying to get up to the surface, but don't quite know how. For the most part we see them moving far below, distorted and obscure. Now and then they succeed and we exclaim, "Why, the Englishman has emotions! He actually can feel!" And occasionally we see that beautiful creature, the flying fish, which rises out of the water altogether into the air and sunlight. English literature is a flying fish. It is a sample of the life that goes on day after day beneath the surface; it is a proof that beauty and emotion exist in the salt, inhospitable sea.

Jane Austen, in 1816, in her novel *Emma*, had already commented on the seeming indifference of the middle-class Englishman towards those for whom he actually cared, when she relates the meeting of the Knightley brothers after an absence of a year. "How d'ye do, George?" and "John, how are you?" The

author comments, they "succeeded in the true English style, burying under a calmness that seemed all but indifference the real attachment which would have led either of them, if requisite, to do everything for the good of the other."

Interesting examples of the upper-class and middle-class types of English cold fish are represented by Sir William Eden, the father of Anthony Eden, and by Hugh Walpole, the English novelist. The American counterpart is William Randolph Hearst, whose frightful life was also tellingly and sensitively portrayed in Orson Welles' film, *Citizen Kane*. Yet another casebook history of the unloved child is provided by the victim himself, the English newspaperman Cecil King. All of these individuals, representative of untold thousands like them, were alike in having suffered a lacklove childhood and an inability to behave with affection. This is interesting in the light of the fact that in her study of a group of American mothers Clay found that upper-class mothers gave their infants somewhat more tactile affection—tactile affection being defined as behavior through touch designed to convey love—than both working-class and middle-class mothers.

In the bathing of babies, a situation in which one would expect to find increased magnitudes of tactile stimulation for the infant, this is not necessarily the case. Margaret Mead has pointed out how the attention of the American baby is directed away from the personal relationship to his mother by toys which are introduced into his tub. Hence his attention is focused on things rather than on persons. As Mead says, "The average American woman may never hold a little baby until she nurses her own, and even then she often behaves as though she were still afraid that the infant might break in her hands. In New Guinea and Bali, on the contrary, they know all about babies. Small infants are looked after by child nurses as young as 4 years old, and this familiarity is shown in all their movements."

With the passing of the extended family, in which grandparents, aunts and uncles, cousins and other relatives often gave

children large amounts of tactile stimulation of various sorts, that kind of experience is now limited to a rather undemonstrative mother. Clay remarks that she observed a grandmother sitting under a tree next to her grandchild strapped in a plastic carrier. "The grandmother," reports Clay, "told me with a degree of sadness that she wanted to pick up the baby, he wanted it, but his mother had told her he had to learn to be by himself."

Class differences in touching are revealing. The general law seems to be, the higher the class the less the frequency of touching, the lower the class the greater the frequency of touching. As between classes the rule is that while members of the superior class may touch members of the inferior class, members of the inferior class may not touch members of the superior class. The same rule holds true for caste and status differences. One recalls the "Untouchables" of India. In the matter of status, although one may be a member of the same class as another who is of superior status, say in occupational hierarchy, rank, or assigned role, the status difference is usually sufficient to inhibit touching of the individual of higher status by the individual of lower status. As Nancy Henley has remarked, touch may be regarded as the nonverbal equivalent of calling another by first name. Just as members of higher class or status may call members of inferior class or status by their first names, so they may also touch them, while confidently expecting that members of inferior rank will not do so. Indeed, it is considered a breach of etiquette of the most serious kind when, occasionally, some froward individual ventures to break either one or the other rule.

Touching, like being called by first name, is considered an act of intimacy, a privilege usually granted only to those of one's own class or status whom one has allowed to pass across those social barriers which serve to exclude the unprivileged. Among members of one's own class or status being called by first name or a touch may be used to establish an immediate friendly relationship. The acceptance or rejection of such an advance will be quickly indicated by the response made to it.

Touch, however, very much more than first-name-calling, reduces social distance and often constitutes a declaration of intimacy: it is for this reason that it is so often regarded as an incursion upon one's privacy by those who resent such intrusions. By extension any accidental or unnecessary touching even from an intimate may be found annoying or unacceptable.

It is evident, then, that in social encounters touch is regarded as a token of power exercised nonreciprocally at the discretion of one's betters or reciprocally between equals. Since in the power structure of Western societies females are regarded as inferior in status to males, and are treated as if they belonged to an inferior class or caste, females from their earliest days receive a good deal more touching than males. In infancy daughters are touched by both parents more frequently than sons, and daughters, according to a familial study by Jourard, touch both parents more than sons do. In another study by Jourard and Rubin it was found that mothers touch their sons more than fathers do, and fathers touch their daughters more than they do their sons; daughters touch their fathers more than sons do, and sons touch their mothers more than their fathers. Touching between males is, then, less frequent than it is between females and males within the family. It was also found that both mothers and fathers touch daughters in more regions of the body than they do sons, and that daughters do more of this kind of touching of both parents than do sons. These observers also found that males touch their female best friends in more regions than females report touching their male friends.

Jourard and Rubin are of the opinion that touching is equated with sexual intent, either consciously or at a less conscious level. As a general rule but not as a universal one, this is probably a sound statement. Nancy Henley reports a piece of research by a male assistant of hers in which it was found that under ordinary conditions males touch females more frequently than females touch males. However, when females enjoy greater status advantages than males they are more likely to initiate touching. Henley concludes that between the sexes it

is status rather than sex that determines the frequency of touching, and that touching by males is used as one of the means of keeping women in their place, "another reminder that women's bodies are free property for everyone to use." Henley feels that women should refuse to accept such male tactual assertion, and "remove their hands from the grasp of men who hold them too long," to reject unsolicited and unwanted touch, and when the situation is appropriate to begin touching men.

If in the politics of sex and touch men are still for the most part Tories, women are enjoined to look deeper, to get to the root of things, and to become more radical.

TACTILE STIMULATION AND SLEEP. Anna Freud has pointed out that "it is a primitive need of the child to have close and warm contact with another person's body while falling asleep, but this runs counter to all the rules of hygiene which demand that children sleep by themselves and not share the parental bed." She goes on to say, "The infant's biological need for the caretaking adult's constant *presence* is disregarded in our Western culture, and children are exposed to long hours of solitude owing to the misconception that it is healthy for the young to sleep, rest, and later play alone. Such neglect of natural needs creates the first breaks in the smooth functioning of the processes of need and drive fulfillment. As a result, mothers seek advice for infants who have difficulty in falling asleep or do not sleep through the night, in spite of being tired."

In Western cultures one constantly encounters the phenomenon of children begging their mothers to lie by their side or at least to stay with them until they fall asleep, a supplication which the mother tends to discourage. The endless calls from the child's bed, the demand for the presence of the mother, for an open door, a drink of water, a light, a story, to be tucked in, and so on, are all expressions of the child's need for that primary object, his mother, to whom he can securely relate. A cuddly toy, a pet one can take to bed, soft materials, a security blanket, some object to which the child is particularly attached,

and autoerotic activities such as thumb-sucking, rocking, masturbation, are the child's means of facilitating the transition from wakefulness to sleep. When these objects are given up a new wave of difficulties in falling asleep may develop.

Among many peoples of the world co-family sleeping, in which children and parents sleep together, is a regular occurrence. It is a practice which has many advantages for everyone involved. Children may sleep either in the same bed with their parents or with their siblings. It would be a matter for each family to work out according to its needs. Tine Thevenin has written a book on the subject, *The Family Bed*, in which she makes a strong case for co-family sleeping.

It is in his second year that the child experiences the need for the close contact that will enable him to fall asleep. It should be given him. A mother who is involved in the welfare of her child should not find it insuperably difficult, even in the modern world, to lie at bedtime by the side of her child. This will usually be necessary only during the second year. She need stay only until the child falls asleep. It is quite possible that with further discoveries in this area the time that should be devoted to this will be reduced or even eliminated. One possibility has been pioneered by the members of the New Zealand Christchurch Parents Centre. These women became interested in the idea that babies might benefit from lying on the soft, springy fleece of lambskins and derive the same sort of comfort that adult patients obtain from invalid-care sheepskins. The lambskins are specially tanned. At the latest report some twenty-four babies were being nursed on the lambskin rugs. "With nearly all babies there was some indication of added comfort from the rug, and in a number of cases parents reported enthusiastically about the longer hours of sleep, and contentment of the baby. . . . The added sleep and contentment and the lessening of strain on the mother that resulted with many babies, has been most encouraging."

Mothers of handicapped, and especially cerebral palsied children, report enthusiastically the extra comfort their babies seem

to gain from lying on lambskin rugs.\*

It is quite possible that when babies are started off on such a lambskin sleeping rug they may have less difficulty in achieving sleep later on. It is an experiment worth trying.

A further report on lambskins indicates that not all skins are suitable. The best skins must be of large area, with a fine dense fleece such as is grown by Corriedale or Merino breeds or the Southdown Romney cross-lamb. Preliminary tests with the latter type of lambskins indicated that babies were more content and slept longer on them than on conventional sheets and mattresses. When deprived of the skins the babies invariably became restless.

Following a lecture I delivered at the University of Ottawa in January 1976 a psychiatrist informed me that she had had considerable success in the treatment of patients by getting them to sleep on lambskin rugs.

Reference to security blankets draws attention once again to the attachment qualities of cutaneously comforting materials. The general belief that the blanket provides the child with a feeling of security, and serves as a mother substitute, is borne out by experiment and observation. Drs. Richard Passman and Paul Weisberg found that nondistress, play, and exploration were facilitated significantly by giving attached children their security blanket as compared to giving other preschoolers their favorite hard toy or no familiar object. When the mother was in the room with the child, her presence had similar facilitative properties to the blanket. For children who had no attachment

\*"Lambskin Comfort for Handicapped Children," *Parents Centres* (Auckland, N. Z.), Bulletin 41 (November 1969), p. 14. The sterilization of baby-care lambskin rugs is also discussed on the same page. The lambskin rugs may be obtained from G. L. Bowron & Co., Ltd., Christchurch, New Zealand; The Sheepskin Rug Co., 33 Queen St., Auckland, New Zealand (bank reference—Credit Department, Southern Region H.Q., Crocker Citizens National Bank, Los Angeles, Calif.); and Donald Macdonald (Antartex) Ltd., Lomond Industrial Estate, Alexandria, Dunbartonshire, Scotland (main U.S.A. warehouse, 120 Greenwich Ave., Greenwich, Conn. 06830—shops in London; New York; Cambridge, Mass.; Geneva, Ill.; and Minneapolis, Minn.). In Australia the lambskins are obtainable from the Nursing Mothers Association of Australia, 95A Burwood Road, Hawthorn, Victoria, 3122.



to blankets, the blanket's presence was no more functional than the control condition in which no familiar object was present. Similar results were found with regard to learning.

In a third study Dr. Passman found that there is a limit to the functional properties of the blanket. In cases of heightened arousal, the mother is significantly more effective than the blanket in increasing play and exploration and in decreasing distress. The relative potency of the maternal attachment bond is far superior to that attaching to the blanket. Dr. William Mason's theory that stimuli more suitable for clinging provide more arousal reduction is supported. That is to say, hard toys offer fewer opportunities for clinging than blankets, and blankets fewer than mothers.

Since almost half of all middle-class children become attached to inanimate objects, mostly security blankets, often also to pets that they can take to bed with them and carry around, it is highly desirable to recognize the importance of such needs to children. Among the functions of the security blanket is its service as a defense against anxiety, and as a helpful means in making the transition from the world of inner to the world of outer reality. As is said in one of the most famous of all stories bearing on this subject,

*. . . so wherever I am, there's always Pooh,  
There's always Pooh and Me.  
"What would I do?" I said to Pooh,  
"If it wasn't for you," and Pooh said, "True,  
It isn't much fun for One but Two  
Can stick together," says Pooh, says he,  
"That's how it is," says Pooh . . .*

—A. A. Milne, *Now We Are Six*

As is well known, many individuals hang on to their loved objects well into adult life, and it has been suggested that many who do not would perhaps be better off if they did.

In connection with pets it is of interest to note that many individuals who, for one reason or another, experience difficulty in touching others, often satisfy their tactile needs with pets.

The very word itself, *pet*, and the verb *to pet* in one of its meanings is "to stroke or pat gently; fondle; caress," and colloquially, "to kiss, embrace, fondle intimately, etc. in making love."

Recognizing the importance of relatedness to animals Dr. Boris M. Levinson has developed a pet-oriented child psychotherapy, in which he uses animals, chiefly dogs, in the diagnosis and treatment of psychologically disturbed children. The thesis of his book on the subject is that "contact with the inanimate and particularly the animate world via the pet is most important to a wholesome emotional development."

There can be little doubt that in many an emotionally refrigerated home the mental health of a child has been saved by the presence of a pet with whom it could communicate, in the physical presence of human beings who could not. In this connection Drs. Samuel and Elizabeth Corson and their colleagues in the Department of Psychiatry at Ohio State University have conducted some interesting experiments in custodial institutions with patients ranging from adolescents to the old and infirm. The experimenters selected patients who had failed to respond to the traditional forms of therapy and brought in dogs of various breeds who were offered as pets to the patients. The responses were dramatic. Only three of the fifty patients refused to accept the dogs as pets, but the other forty-seven adopted them with enthusiasm, and from the outset showed a striking improvement. One man who had not spoken for twenty-six years began to speak.

As E.L. Corson, and his collaborators, state, the attachment humans develop for pet dogs is probably related to the ability of these animals to offer love and tactile reassurance without criticism, "and their maintenance of a sort of perpetual infantile innocent dependence which may stimulate our natural tendency to offer support and protection." As they say, the success of pet-facilitated psychotherapy is based on the assumption that many patients will accept the love of a dog before they are able to accept love from or give love to a human being.

Tactual interchange between dog and human is important as

"an ice-breaker," but it is not the only important exchange involved in the resocialization of the withdrawn patient. The sense of responsibility that the patient develops for the welfare of the dog, his care for it, the sense of reciprocal commitment he experiences, all minister to the opening up of a view of the world in which he can find others to whom he can relate, and interrelate.

Interestingly enough child-battering and abusing parents, who were themselves neglected and abused as children, rarely report having had a childhood pet.

**THE TACTILE EXPERIENCE OF THE INDIAN CHILD.** Throughout the greater part of India children receive much tactile attention from their earliest days. Babies from about one month to six months are regularly bathed and massaged with such mixtures as tumeric paste and castor oil. As children they run around naked until six or seven, from their earliest days they are hugged and kissed by everyone.

Frederick Leboyer has published a detailed photographic account of this traditional Indian art of baby massage. This is most illuminating, for there is not a nook or cranny of the baby's body that is not lovingly massaged by the mother's hands.

**THE TACTILE EXPERIENCE OF THE JAPANESE CHILD.** Dr. William Caudill and Mrs. Helen Weinstein have made a valuable comparative study of child-rearing methods in Japan as compared with those in the United States. They studied a selected matched sample of thirty Japanese and thirty American infants, three to four months old, equally divided by sex, all firstborn, and all from intact middle-class families in urban settings. On the basis of previous studies these investigators predicted they would find Japanese mothers spending more time with their infants, and that they would emphasize physical contact over verbal interaction, and would have as a goal a passive and contented baby. The American mothers, they predicted, would spend less time with their infants, would emphasize verbal in-

teraction rather than physical contact, and would have as a goal an active and self-assertive baby. These hypotheses were generally confirmed by the investigators, and indeed they agree fully with those of other students of Japanese and American culture. Caudill and Weinstein found that "largely because of different patterns of interaction with their mothers in the two countries, infants have learned to behave in different and culturally appropriate ways by three to four months of age. Moreover, these differences in infant behavior are in line with preferred patterns of social interaction at later ages as the child grows to be an adult in Japan and America."

It is generally agreed that Japanese are more "group"-oriented and interdependent in their relations with others, while Americans are more "individual"-oriented and independent. Associated with this is the tendency of Japanese to be more self-effacing and passive as contrasted with Americans, who tend to be more self-assertive and aggressive.

In matters requiring a decision, Japanese are more likely to rely on emotional feeling and intuition, whereas Americans will go to some pains to emphasize what they believe are the rational reasons for their action. . . . Japanese are more sensitive to, and make conscious use of, many forms of nonverbal communication in human relations through the medium of gestures and physical proximity, in comparison with Americans, who predominantly use verbal communication within a context of physical separateness.

We have already touched upon the co-sleeping family habits of the Japanese in contrast to the separate sleeping habits of Americans, from the earliest age, and the resulting differences in tactile experience in the two cultures. In keeping with these sleeping habits, at least as significant, are the bathing practices of Japanese and Americans. In Japan, from the earliest possible age, approximately at the beginning of the infant's second month, the whole family bathes collectively. The mother or another adult holds the infant in her arms while they bathe together in the deep bathtub (*furo*) at home or in the neighbor-

hood public bath (*sento*). This pattern of shared bathing continues for the Japanese child until he or she is about ten years old, and even later. In contrast with this, the American mother rarely bathes with an infant, but rather gives him a bath from outside the tub, and communicates with him verbally and by positioning his body. Breastfeeding is still more widespread in Japan than is bottlefeeding, and while babies are started on semi-solid food at the end of the first month in America, this is not the case until the end of the fourth month for Japanese babies. Quite clearly the Japanese infant receives a great deal more reassuring tactile stimulation than does the American infant, and of a kind which by the early age of three to four months has already made a distinctively perceptible behavioral difference in the infants of these two cultures. Caudill and Weinstein summarize their findings as follows:

American infants are more happily vocal, more active, and more exploratory of their bodies and their physical environment, than are Japanese infants. Directly related to these findings, the American mother is in greater vocal interaction with her infant, and stimulates him to greater physical activity and exploration. The Japanese mother, in contrast, is in greater bodily contact with her infant, and soothes him toward physical quiescence, and passivity with regard to his environment. Moreover, these patterns of behavior are in line with the differing expectations for later behavior in the two cultures as the child grows to be an adult.

Caudill and Weinstein predicted that when they were ready to report their findings on two-year-olds and six-year-olds from each culture they would probably find that these early patterns of behavior will jell and persist.

As Douglas Haring says,

One outstanding fact not stressed in the literature but amply verified involves the almost uninterrupted bodily contact of Japanese infants with mother or nursemaid. Practically never is a baby left to lie alone quietly. Always he rides on someone's back or sleeps close to someone. When he is restless his bearer sways

or jiggles from one foot to the other. Some writers deem this jiggling a fearsome experience for the infant. . . . My own unsystematic observations indicate that most Japanese think it soothes the child. At any rate the infant almost constantly feels the reassuring touch of human skin. When he cries he is given the breast, and in lower-class families his sexual organs are manipulated until he falls asleep. Many better-educated Japanese repudiate the latter practice, but they employ nursemaids versed in the folkways rather than in the niceties of genteel refinement.

Then when the child reaches walking age he is quite drastically left on his own a great deal of the time, and must learn to conform to the implicit taboo on touching other people.

As Haring points out, the sudden break in the infant's habitual basic dependence on contact with other persons involves frustration, and frustration will result in emotional behavior designed to compel attention to the need that has been frustrated. In the Japanese boy this takes the form of temper tantrums, the expression of which, either in verbal or physical abuse, is permitted upon the body of the mother, but not upon the father. The expression of temper in girls is strictly forbidden. In the rigidly defined situation of Japanese life no adequate outlets are provided for the effects of frustration, except in childhood abuse of animals and of the mother for boys, and also perhaps through alcoholic intoxication. Girls must repress their expressions of frustration.

Long postponed revenge for childhood frustration—a motivation of which the individual is unconscious—may be accomplished either in suicide or in the sadistic outbursts of war and torture of the helpless. In males these latter outbursts receive social approval. Females apparently live with their repressions, unless the common neurotic malady called *hisuteri* (derived from the English hysteria—usually nymphomania) may be regarded as a consequence.

Undoubtedly related to the sudden cessation of tactility, and especially the relaxing manipulation of the external genitalia of the small child, is the reactive behavior of adolescent and adult

males towards their own bodies and those of others. All the visceral functions that received such lavish attention in infancy, in the older Japanese male come to symbolize frustration. Sexual functions, even though they may provide occasion for boasting, are repudiated in disgust: "The unconscious conflict within the growing boy finds in sex a symbol of frustrated aggression and longing for dominance. Behavior related to sex is tinged with sadistic violence; the fierce obscenity of Japanese school-boys, homosexuality, contempt for wives, and sexual mutilation of helpless enemies all stem perhaps from these unresolved conflicts."

While these socialization processes and the behavioral responses to them characterize pre-World War II Japan, to varying degrees they remain true of large segments of Japanese society today.\*

Quite clearly the differences in tactile stimulation undergone by Japanese and American infants play a considerable role in the development of their behavioral differences. What these behavioral differences are has already been suggested in the studies we have cited.

NATIONAL, CULTURAL, AND CLASS DIFFERENCES IN TACTILITY. National and cultural differences in tactility run the full gamut from absolute nontouchability, as among upper-class Englishmen, to what amounts to almost full expression among peoples speaking Latin-derived languages, Russians, and many nonliterate peoples. Those who speak Anglo-Saxon-derived languages stand at the opposite pole in the continuum of tac-

\*For pre-World War II Japan see Alice Bacon, *Japanese Girls and Women* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1902); Lafcadio Hearn, *Japan: An Attempt at Interpretation* (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1904); R. F. Benedict, *The Chrysanthemum and the Sword* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1946); B. S. Silberman (ed.), *Japanese Character and Culture* (Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1962); G. DeVos and H. Wagatsuma, *Japan's Invisible Race: Caste and Culture in Personality* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1966); R. J. Smith and R. K. Beardsley, *Japanese Culture: Its Development and Characteristics*, (New York: Viking Fund Publications in Anthropology, vol. 34, 1962).

tility to the Latin peoples. In this continuum Scandinavians appear to occupy an intermediate position. I do not propose here a calculus of tactile variations among the peoples of the world. The necessary information for such a discussion is simply not available. Clay's study on a small sample of the population of one local region in North America is the only one of its kind. However, from general observation of the marked differences in tactility observable among different peoples today it is possible to draw certain obvious conclusions.

There exist not only cultural and national differences in tactile behavior but also class differences. As I have earlier already remarked, in general it seems possible to say that the higher the class, the less there is of tactility, and the lower the class, the more there is. As we have seen, this was not found to be the case by Clay in her American sample, in which the upper-class mothers seemed to be more at ease with tactility than the lower-class mothers. It is possible that this finding could be generalized for the American population as a whole, with exceptions represented by blacks and other "minority" groups. Whereas in Europe, for example, and especially in England, the upper classes are likely to be hereditary and long entrenched in their ways, in America social mobility is so great that one can move from lower- to upper-class status in a single generation. Parents of the second generation move very much more freely than their own parents did, not only in the class achieved for them by earlier generations, but in their ideas on such important matters as child-rearing practices. Hence, in America, new members of the upper classes will often give their children more rationalized attention than the members of other classes. Whatever the explanation may be for Clay's sample, there does seem to exist a highly significant correlation between class membership and tactility, and this appears to be largely due to early conditioning.

Among the upper classes of England relationships between parents and children were, and continue to be, distant from birth till death. At birth the child was usually given over to a nurse, who either wet-nursed it for a brief period or bottlefed



it. Children were generally brought up by governesses and then at an early age sent away to school. They received a minimum amount of tactile experience. It is, therefore, not difficult to understand how, under such conditions, nontouchability could easily become institutionalized as part of the way of life. A well-bred person never touched another without his consent. The slightest accidental brushing against another required an apology, even though the other might be a parent or a sibling. Too often a lacklove childhood combined with a minimum of tactile stimulation, compounded by the experience of a public school (which in England is so called because the public is not admitted to it), produced a rather emotionally arid human being who was quite incapable of warm human relationships. Such individuals made poor husbands, disastrous fathers, and efficient governors of the British Empire, since they were seldom capable of understanding genuine human need.

I do not know of a single book by a member of the upper classes that reveals the slightest insight into the nature of these conditions; the few writings produced on the subject were all by members of the middle classes.\* It is not that the members of the middle classes necessarily required more tactile affection than members of the upper classes, but that they were simply, in some cases, more articulate about the losses and the indignities they had suffered.

The English public schools, as is well known, were breeding grounds for homosexuality, for these were all-boy schools in which all the teachers were males, and usually the only love a boy ever received was from another boy or a master. The parental inadequacies from which many of these boys suffered produced a high rate of homosexuality. Among writers such famous figures as Algernon Swinburne, J. A. Symonds, Oscar Wilde, Lord Alfred Douglas, A. E. Housman, E. M. Forster, T. E. Lawrence, W. H. Auden, and numerous others, were all products of such parents, and such schools. It is not to be

\*One of the best of these is George Orwell's *Such, Such Were the Joys* (New York: Harcourt, Brace, 1953).

wondered at that parentally abandoned children sought to find some human relationship in sexual friendship with others in the same predicament as themselves.

The conditioning in nontactility received by so many Englishmen of the upper classes seems to have produced a virtual negative sanction on tactility in English culture. This was so much the case that the sense of touch and the act of touching have both been culturally defined as vulgar. The public demonstration of affection is vulgar, touching is vulgar, and only men who are quite outside the pale, like Latin types, Italians, and the like, would ever dream of putting their arms around one another, not to mention committing such effeminacies as kissing one another upon the cheek!

The essentially human is dismissed as "effeminate."

It is of more than passing interest to note that in England the National Guidance Marriage Council, in one of its publications, suggested that the rising divorce rate is largely due to a lack of physical contact in the English family, even to the extent of admonishing small boys not to embrace their mothers during some little crisis, but to retain their manhood by maintaining a "stiff upper lip." The Council advised that the English "need to touch, stroke, and comfort one another more often."

Even more far gone in nontactility, if such a thing can be imagined, than the English, are the Germans. The emphasis upon the warrior virtues, the supremacy of the hardheaded martinet father, and the complete subordination of the mother in the German family made for a rigidified, unbending character which renders the average German, among other things, a not very tactile creature.

Austrian males, however, unlike Germans, are tactually more demonstrative, and will embrace close friends. In Germany this rarely occurred, except among men of Jewish extraction—but that is quite another thing, for among Jews tactility is highly developed.

The Jews, as a tribe, culture, or people, are characterized by a high degree of tactility. "The Jewish mother" has become a byword, for her deep and consuming care for her children. This

meant that until recent times the children were breastfed on demand, that there was a great deal of fondling of children by mother, father, and siblings. Hence, Jews tend to be tactually very demonstrative, and it is considered perfectly normal for an adult male to continue to greet his father with a kiss and an embrace and to do so also on parting. In forty years of close observation I have only once seen an adult American male (in this case in his middle twenties) publicly greet his father with a kiss. Of what cultural origins this American male may have been I do not know.

Americans of Anglo-Saxon origin are not quite as untactful as the English or the Germans, but they do not lag far behind. American boys neither kiss nor embrace their fathers after they have "grown up"—"grown up" in this sense is generally taken to be about ten years of age. Nor do American males embrace their friends as Latin Americans do.

There are occasions, however, when American males will spontaneously drop their inhibitions and joyfully embrace each other, even kiss each other with complete abandon. This is most likely to occur when they win an important match or series. The hugging on such occasions is something to behold, and it is all the more impressive because of its utter spontaneity.

There are clearly contact peoples and noncontact peoples, the Anglo-Saxon peoples being among the latter. Curious ways in which noncontactuality expresses itself are to be seen in the behavior of members of the noncontact cultures in various situations. It has, for example, been observed that the way an Anglo-Saxon shakes hands constitutes a signal to the other to keep his proper distance. In crowds this is also observable. For example, in a crowded vehicle like a subway, the Anglo-Saxon will remain stiff and rigid, with a blank expression on his face which seems to deny the existence of other passengers. As Germaine Greer has remarked, "Crushed against his brother in the Tube the average Englishman pretends desperately that he is alone." The contrast on the French Metro, for example, is striking. Here the passengers will lean and press against others, if not with complete abandon, at least without feeling the neces-

sity either to ignore or apologize to the person against whom they may be leaning or pressing. Often the leaning and lurching will give rise to good-natured laughter and joking, and there will be no attempt to avoid looking at the other passengers. A protesting Englishman on such occasions is regarded as a rather pathetic figure of fun.

While waiting for a bus Americans will space themselves like sparrows on a telephone wire, in contrast to Mediterranean peoples who will push and crowd together.

Sydney Smith, "The Smith of Smiths," the great English wit, writing in 1820, amusingly described the varieties of the handshake. "Have you noticed," he wrote,

how people shake your hand? There is the *high-official*—the body erect, and a rapid, short shake, near the chin. There is the *mortmain*—the flat hand introduced into your palm, and hardly conscious of its contiguity. The *digital*—one finger held out, much used by the higher clergy. There is the *shakus rusticus*, where your hand is seized in an iron grasp, betokening rude health, warm heart, and distance from the Metropolis; but producing a strong sense of relief on your part when you find your hand released and your fingers unbroken. The next to this is the *retentive shake*—one which, beginning with vigour, pauses as it were to take breath, but without relinquishing its prey, and before you are aware begins again, till you feel anxious as to the result, and have no shake left in you. Worse, there is the *pisces*—the damp palm like a dead fish, equally silent, equally clammy, and leaving its odour in your hand.

Sydney Smith did not quite exhaust the varieties of hand-shaking. Two forms of the handshake observable at the present day are the following: Shaking hands and at the same time grasping the elbow or forearm of the shaken arm. Or to grasp the shakee's hand with both hands. I know a young woman who does this. When I commented on the fact she surprised me by saying that she was quite unaware that she shook hands in this manner.

It is of interest to note that free-living chimpanzees will stretch out the hand to let it be touched by another as a gesture

of friendliness. So will the gorilla. It also constitutes a measure of one's opposite number's intentions. Contact greetings of this sort take a variety of forms among chimpanzees. For example, they will place a hand on the thigh, or place the hand on the other's body in gentle reassurance.

The reference to the handshake brings us to the matter of tactile salutations in general. These represent a form of tactile behavior that has received very little attention. The handshake is clearly an evidence of friendliness. Ortega y Gasset has elaborated an anthropologically quite unsound theory of the origin of the handshake. In this he sees the submission of the vanquished or of the slave to his master. The theory is not by any means novel, but, as Westermarck points out, handshaking in many cases seems to have the same origin as other ceremonies consisting in bodily contact. Salutatory gestures may express not only absence of evil intentions but positive friendliness. Whatever its origins the handshake is quite obviously a tactile communication. So is the placing together of the palms of the hands, placing the hand on the heart, nose rubbing, embracing, kissing, and even the backslapping, cheek-tweaking, and hair-mussing in which some people indulge. Westermarck long ago recognized that these various forms of salutation by contact "are obviously direct expressions of affection." He goes on to add that

we can hardly doubt that the joining of hands serves a similar object when we find it combined with other tokens of good will. Among some of the Australian natives, friends, on meeting after an absence, "will kiss, shake hands, and sometimes cry over one another."\* In Morocco equals salute each other by joining their hands with a quick motion, separating them immediately, and kissing each his own hand. The Soolimas, again, place the palms of the right hands together, carry them to the forehead, and from thence to the left side of the chest. [p. 151]

\*For an account of weeping as a form of salutation see W. G. Sumner, A. G. Keller, and M. R. Davie, *The Science of Society* (4 vols., New Haven: Yale University Press, 1927), vol. 4, pp. 568-70.

Dr. Sandor S. Feldman points out that in handshaking we cling to the other person. In his view, the gesture means that we should trust each other, as a baby has perfect and complete trust in his mother. There is a right way and a wrong way of handshaking. In the right way the hands of the two persons are fused, and both feel a certain pressure. Each expects the same pressure of the other. When one feels an uneven exchange of pressure, he feels let down.

The showoffs crush the hand they grasp. The handshake of the meek and mild is vapid. Feldman thinks that those who merely extend a finger, do so usually out of a fear of contact, a social anxiety.

Dr. August Coppola has very rightly drawn attention to the fact that in the handshake something immediate and direct is told us about the other person, that however much people may attempt to "put on" with their handshake, the tactile image is directly related to the effort involved, the way in which one person attempts to know the other. As Coppola says, "There are no poses, no lies, nothing static, for even a hand that is still, limp, effortless, would be read as withdrawn in relation to the other, and would in turn provoke a response. . . . Since our only way of knowing each other is to sense the slightest movements, it seems impossible for people to mask their reactions, for the very attempt would be sensed as a hesitation or restraint within the touch relation." In the world of touch personality constitutes the very process of engagement.

It is no accident that in being introduced to another we say such things as, "Delighted to meet you," "How do you do?" "I'm glad to know you," and the like, for as Coppola says, in the handshake the tactile awareness is underscored of the "very sensitive reciprocity of two persons attempting to know each other, opening a series of responses that go beyond the abyss at the edge of the touch world." Coppola very appropriately quotes from Rilke's poem, "Palm of the Hand," which shows Rilke's grasp of this idea when he says, "It enters into other hands, it turns its own kind into landscape: journeys and ends its journey in them, filling them with arrival."

So remember, when you next shake hands you may be—whether you are aware of it or not—embarking upon a journey of discovery.

Cheek patting, head patting, chin chucking are all, in the Western world, forms of behavior indicating affection, and all are tactile. Such tactile salutations, as evidence of friendliness or affection, are probably founded on the earliest experiences of tactile affection received from the mother (and others) as a child.

Sexual differences in salutations are of interest here. For example, in the Western world it is customary for men to shake hands, but not for women to do so. Women kiss or embrace when they are friends, and shake hands only when meeting for the first time or as casual acquaintances. Men do not shake hands with women, but bow, unless the woman extends her hand, when in the English-speaking world it will be shaken, and in the Latin-speaking world kissed. In recent years, in their growing affection for women, after some acquaintance men have taken to kissing them where formerly they would merely have bowed or shaken hands. Different times, different mores. In Elizabethan England kissing as a greeting was extended to all members of the same class, whether friends or strangers. Erasmus (1466?–1536) in one of his letters comments on this delightful custom of the English. It would not be too bold an inference from this that perhaps the English, as children, received a great deal more tender loving care in Elizabethan days than they did in a period like that of Victoria and her son Edward, a period, as Rupert Brooke said of Victorian Sundays, full of impalpable restraints.

It is of great interest that in the middle 1960's something of the importance of the skin should have been rediscovered by so-called Encounter, Marathon, and Sensitivity Training groups. These groups usually consist of adults or older adolescents. A principal emphasis in such groups is on touching. All diffidence is dropped and one is encouraged to embrace others, caress them, hold hands with them, bathe in the nude with them, and even be massaged by them.

In a most thoroughgoing investigation of encounter and sensitivity training groups Dr. Kurt W. Back concludes,

The encounter group is based on little coherent theory, mainly on the touch-and-go kind of technique, and even the practitioners do not claim to know particularly what they are doing. . . . In fact, most people leading encounter groups would not claim any lasting beneficial effects on the patients or participants, and thus the question of the danger involved becomes important. The question of breakdowns in encounter groups is controversial and we have to rest here on a few well-established facts: there have been some breakdowns, suicides, and psychotic episodes in members of encounter groups.

Of sensitivity training Dr. Back concludes that it may be more a symptom of what ails society than a cure for its ills.

Rather more favorable judgments concerning such groups have been expressed by Dr. J. R. Gibb, who examined 106 research studies on such human relations groups, and concluded that they were of distinct therapeutic value. Carl Rogers, after a broad survey of the evidence, concludes that encounter groups do bring about much in the way of constructive change.

Everyone enjoys having his back scratched, and to be massaged constitutes one of the supreme pleasures. But these are physical gratifications. These various groups are concerned with much more than physical pleasures. What they seek to achieve is a greater behavioral aliveness to their own and others' presence, relatedness to the environment; they seek to put people who have become dissociated back into touch with their fellow human and the world in which they are living.

The idea is a good one even though it comes late in the day for many of the participants. It runs counter to the Freudian notion that touching should comprise no part of therapy. Freud himself was a bit of a cold fish, and one cannot avoid the suspicion that he was insufficiently fondled when he was an infant. However that may be, the rediscovery of the skin as an organ which, in its own way, requires just as much attention as



the mind, is long overdue. Allowing for all the failures, the therapeutic benefits resulting from the experiences in these various groups in which tactility plays a significant role have been reported to be appreciable.

Canadians of Anglo-Saxon origins perhaps even outdo the English in their nontactuality. On the other hand, French Canadians are as tactually demonstrative as their counterparts are in their land of origin.

The manner in which Frenchmen will embrace and kiss their male friends, and the embracing and kissing that takes place on ceremonial occasions, as when a general conferring a decoration upon another officer will embrace and kiss him ceremonially on both cheeks, embarrasses Anglo-Saxons into deprecatory giggles. Whereas the nontactuality of Anglo-Saxons signifies to most tactual peoples that they are unemotional and cold.

The Russians, who are a highly tactual people, receive a great deal of cutaneous stimulation when they are young, and continue in the habit of tactility all through their lives. The swaddling which most Russians customarily underwent as infants ensured them a great deal of tactile stimulation, for they were usually unswaddled in order to be breastfed, otherwise fed, bathed, cleaned, and in other ways attended, a fact which seems to have been overlooked by the proponents of the "swaddling hypothesis" who claimed that many of the national traits of Great Russians (Central and Northeastern Russians) could be explained by the restraints such children suffered as infants as a consequence of swaddling. The child was kept isolated from its parents, with only siblings and maids for human contact, and was only brought out of the nursery or children's quarters in order to perform in some manner such as the recitation of poetry, the playing of a musical instrument, or singing. During infancy, according to the swaddling hypothesis, the swaddling inhibits muscular activity, while the release from swaddling in order to be fed and otherwise cared for becomes associated with an "all or none" feeling toward pleasure which the Russian adult displays in his emotional life, an emotional life in which

gratification is experienced as orgasmic.

There has been much misunderstanding concerning the nature of swaddling. It takes skill to do it. As Peter Wolff has written,

*Swaddling* is a very effective method to quiet a fussy baby, provided it is done by someone who knows how, and who sees to it that the baby is immobilized. When the swaddling is done unskillfully so that the clothing simply restricts the range of movement without inhibiting it totally, the procedure has a marked arousal effect and may provoke the "mad cry." The critical difference is probably that "poor" swaddling generates a constant background of *variable* proprioceptive feed-back, whereas "good" swaddling generates a constant background of tactile stimulation.

The swaddling hypothesis has been severely criticized and found wanting on virtually every ground. Under the Soviet system swaddling has been largely abandoned throughout the Russias.

In *The Study of Culture at a Distance*, edited by Mead and Métraux, there is a valuable account of the sense of touch among the Russians, written by a sensitive woman informant in the Research on Contemporary Cultures project. It is well worth reproducing here in its entirety.

The Dictionary of the Russian Language defines the sense of touch as follows: "In reality all five senses can be reduced to one—the sense of touch. The tongue and palate sense the food; the ear, sound waves; the nose, emanations; the eyes, rays of light." That is why in all textbooks the sense of touch is always mentioned first. It means to ascertain, to perceive, by body, hand, or fingers.

There are two words to express the idea "to feel." If one feels with some outer part of the body, it is *ossyazat*; but to feel without touching, without direct contact, is *oschuschat* physically, morally, or spiritually: "I feel (*oschuschat*) too cold or cold," or "I feel (*oschuschat*) happiness." But when I feel something with my fingers, I *ossyazat*—I don't really feel, I finger, grope.

Though there exists an adverb *ossyasetelny* (tangible), Russians avoid using it. I have never heard anybody using it, nor have I come across it in literature. Tangible evidence in Russian will be "material proof." Touch is not considered the right way of exploration. One does not have to finger a thing when one can see it with one's eyes. One of my [Russian] college professors complained that his students were "savages." When he showed them a bone, drawing their attention to a cavity, the majority of the students poked their fingers into it. Children were taught not to touch things. They learned very quickly, and when you handed a child something you wanted him to feel—like a piece of velvet or a kitten—the child picked it up and put it against his cheek.

The standard joke among lower-class people was for a man to ask a woman, "Nice calico you are wearing. How much did you pay a yard?" And under the pretext of feeling the material, he would pinch the woman.

Russians in general touch each other much less than Americans do. There is hardly any horseplay, slapping on the back, patting, fondling of children. The exception is when somebody is very happy or drunk. Then he hugs somebody. But that is not touching. He opens his arms wide as if to embrace the whole world, and then presses you against his breast. The breast is the dwelling place of the soul, and this gesture means that he has taken you to his heart.

These are interesting observations, though not entirely internally consistent. For example, if Russians are nontactile why is it that the students poked their fingers into the cavity of the bone? In spite of the fact that this informant states that hugging is not touching, the fact is that it is very much so. Soviet officials when they meet embrace and often kiss each other, and may behave in this manner towards nationals of other countries, if one may depend upon what one sees in TV news reports and photographs.

Several students have reported the emphasis they believe Russians place on visual experience. Thus Leites writes of their "desire to translate all the abstractions visually." Haimson believes that in contrast with the "objective" thinking that charac-

terizes Western society, and which he believes is largely founded on motor activity and tactile manipulation of external objects, the visual thinking of Great Russians is singularly lacking in specificity, especially when evaluated by the measure of manipulation. The suggestion is that tactual manipulation is important in the development of abstract and conceptual thought. These students suggest that an element is lacking in Russian abstract thought, present in the concrete situation, and which may be approached through tactual or physical manipulation. Combined with the supposed effects of swaddling upon the kinesthetic movements of the child, the lack of the tactual/-manipulative approach to experience is somehow seen to affect the Russian's ability to grasp the essentials of a given whole, to break up a given whole in parts, to isolate and synthesize them. The "whole," on the contrary, is likely to be seen as consisting of overlapping and contradictory items, all of which being lumped together, constitute one diffused whole, to which one responds with "emotion and intensity." Russian thinking is declared to be deficient in logical simplicity, consistency, and completeness.

Interesting as these observations are, it would be of value to have them explored further, and to have the comments of informed students of the childhood and development of "Great Russians."

**THE CRADLEBOARD.** The cradleboard is used among many peoples in managing the child. Among the Navaho Indians of the Southwest, the newborn was placed in a temporary cradle, and then after three or four weeks transferred to a permanent tightly laced cradle. Before being placed in the cradle the infant was tightly wrapped in cloths in such a way, sometimes, that its legs were separated and firmly encased. The cradle itself would be lined with some soft material, formerly the soft bark of the cliff rose. A canopy would be placed at the top and a footrest at the bottom of the board. The infant, fully wrapped, would then be strapped to the cradle by a lacing cord, which in zigzag fashion between cloth or buckskin loops was attached

to the sides of the board and was finally fastened through a loop on the footboard. From the canopy a cloth could be lowered to cover the whole cradle to keep out light, flies, and cold. Babies were taken out of the cradle only to be breastfed, cleaned, and bathed. Babies of two months averaged two hours a day out of the cradle; those of nine months averaged nearly six. In addition to these times of full release from the cradle, the child's arms might be freed for varying intervals two or three or four times a day.

An infant's movements are sharply restricted for most of the day and all of the night by its binding to the cradleboard. Its position is varied from the vertical to the horizontal, but the infant cannot move of its own volition. This would suggest a severe limitation on its tactile experience. There is also a restriction upon its response to internal stimuli, such as anger, hunger, or pain. It cannot kick or wriggle; it can only cry or refuse to suck or swallow. Leighton and Kluckhohn suggest that the desire for bodily movement may be lost after repeated frustration. I believe another more physiological explanation is possible. The snugness of the cradleboard continues the snugness of the womb, and far from feeling frustrated by the restriction of movement the baby may feel a great deal more secure than he would be were he abandoned to the insecurity of the open space of a crib. The mother carries the cradleboarded baby wherever she goes, on her back, and placed upright when she is spinning or similarly engaged, so that the child may always see her. In the cradle he receives a great deal of tactile stimulation from his mother and everyone else, for his face is continually being patted and caressed, and the cradled baby joggled by relatives and others. Furthermore the cradle permits the baby to be comfortably in an upright position so that he is able to keep in touch with what is going on around much more effectively than the baby who is lying down. The fact of interest is that far from being restricted in the cradle the Indian infant greatly enjoys its comforts, and will often cry to be returned to it.

When one observes the spasmodic movements of babies during the first two or three weeks, and especially soon after they

have been born, one cannot help being struck by their resemblance to the movements of a person falling through space. May it not be that with the removal from the snug comfort and support of the womb to the open space of a crib the baby experiences something of a similar feeling of insecurity—something the cradleboard and swaddling serve to prevent? May it not be that the complete lack of fear of great heights exhibited by American Indians, which makes them such popular and successful construction workers on skyscrapers, is related to their early cradleboard experience? Leighton and Kluckhohn comment upon the missionaries, teachers, and others who urge the Navaho mothers “to give up those savage cradles and use cribs like civilized folks,” that it should never be forgotten that every people’s way of life represents their particular set of solutions to the conditions of life with which they have been confronted. With the cradleboard they appear to have come a great deal nearer to providing the baby with a far superior environment than the modern crib.

The experience on the cradleboard in no way retards the motor development of the child. Hopi infants who have been kept on the cradleboard walk no later than those who have not experienced it at all, and show no differences whatever in motor skills. Indeed, the pediatrician, Margaret Fries, suggests that the practice of propping the cradled child in an upright position before he can even crawl may facilitate his motor development. Balance and vision are then in the same plane as when the child is walking. His legs are kept constantly extended, with the feet flexed against the footboard in the position for standing.

A white mother, a teacher living in Arizona, has written of the great advantages of the cradleboard on which she raised her own infants. Mrs. Louise Calley points out that the child feels snug and secure on the cradleboard, as if someone were holding him tightly and continuously. The child is more comfortable on the board for any prolonged period than he can possibly be in someone’s arms. In the evening her son would be rocked and sung to sleep in his own cradle made to fit his growing size, instead of being plunked into a big cagelike bed. He was always

sleeping in a familiar bed no matter where his parents might be. Mrs. Calley states that one of her sons would not go to sleep unless strapped on the cradleboard for the first eight months of his life. He always gratefully acquiesced in going back to the board after his abundant romps, and would voluntarily put his arms to his sides ready to be strapped in. "Surely," Mrs. Calley remarks, "the Indians have been ahead of their white brothers in the art of childrearing."

Far, then, from tight binding and swaddling exerting any unfavorable effects upon the development of the child, the very opposite seems to be true. These practices would seem to have very real psychological advantages, in no way interfering with the motor development of the child and, if anything, affording him more tactile satisfactions than many children receive in noncradleboard cultures.

**MOTHER, FATHER, CHILD, AND SKIN.** In the symbiotic relationship in which the infant is programmed to continue with his mother, skin contact, as we have seen, plays a fundamental role. It is a communication which the father is also designed to make through the skin, if not in quite as massive and continuous a manner as the mother. But in civilized societies men are even more enveloped by clothes than women and so this important cutaneous means of early communication between father and child tends to be nullified by this artificial barrier. A basic factor in the development of the ability to love is the growing reciprocal involvement in the source from which the pleasure-giving sensory stimulations are received. Between mother and child there is normally an exchange of pleasure-giving experiences. The father, in civilized societies, is to a large extent deprived of the possibility of such direct reciprocal pleasure-giving exchanges. It is, therefore, not surprising that children in these societies should develop such close identifications with the mother.

The male in all societies is at greater risk in this, as in all other connections. As Ritchie has pointed out, "The female, as she grows and develops, has before her in more or less continuous

direct relationship, the model of her mother. The man, as he goes through life, begins his life also in primary relationship to a maternal object but he has to give it up, he has to leave off identification with the mother, he has to take on the full male role. Males have to switch identification during development, and all sorts of things can go wrong in this." And, unfortunately, they frequently do. The male has a much harder time than the female does, in growing up and separating himself from the loving mother, and in identifying himself with a father with whom he is nowhere nearly as deeply involved as he remains with the mother; this often puts some strain upon him. The switch in identification he is called upon to make results in something of a conflict. This he usually seeks to resolve by, in part, rejecting the mother and relegating her to a status inferior to that into which he has, so to speak, been thrust. Masculine anti-feminism can be regarded as a reaction-formation designed to oppose the strong unconscious trend towards mother-worship. When the male's defenses are down, when he is *in extremis*, when he is dying, his last, like his first word, is likely to be *mother*, in a resurgence of his feeling for the mother he has never really repudiated, but from whom, at the overt level, he has been forced to disengage himself.

If in our culture we could learn to understand the importance of fathers as well as mothers giving their infants adequate tactile satisfactions, we would be taking a considerable step towards the improvement of human relations. There is nothing to prevent a father from bathing his infant child, from drying it, fondling it, caressing it, cuddling it, changing its diapers and cleaning it, from holding it, rocking it, carrying it, playing with it, and continuing to give it a good deal of affectionate tactile stimulation. The only thing that stands in the way of such behavior on the part of males is the ancient and outmoded tradition that such conduct is feminine and therefore unbecoming a male. Fortunately, this is a tradition which is rapidly breaking down; increasingly one sees young fathers involved with their children very much more deeply and in all sorts of "feminine" ways which only a generation or so ago were con-



sidered beneath the dignity of a "real" male. Dignity, as Laurence Sterne observed, is usually a mysterious carriage of the body calculated to conceal the infirmities of the mind.

There is good evidence that a strong bond of attachment is capable of being formed between father and child within the first few days of its life, and also of being reenforced by his subsequent attentions to the infant. Not only this, Dr. Ross D. Parke of Madison, Wisconsin, in an investigation of the interaction between middle-class fathers with their two- to four-day-old infants found that in the triadic situation—mother, father, and infant together in the mother's hospital room—the father tends to hold the baby nearly twice as much as the mother, vocalizes more, touches the baby slightly more, and smiles at the baby significantly less than the mother. The father's presence significantly influenced the mother's emotional state. In the presence of the father mothers smiled more at their infant and explored more.

Dr. Parke tentatively concluded that the father is much more involved in his infant and responsive to it than our culture has acknowledged; that the practice of excluding the father from early interaction with his infant merely reflects and reenforces a cultural stereotype. A critical issue for Dr. Parke is that the care of infants be acknowledged as natural and appropriate male behavior.

Winnicott has observed that the physical holding of the child is a form of loving, that it is, in fact, perhaps the principal way in which a mother can show the infant her love for it. This is equally true for the father or, for the matter of that, for anyone else. And as Winnicott says, "There are those who can love an infant and there are those who cannot; the latter quickly produce in the infant a sense of insecurity, and distressed crying."

**TACTILE STIMULATION AND THE EXPRESSION OF HOSTILITY.** During the nineteenth century, and probably also in earlier centuries, males in the Western world often indulged in the peculiar custom of greeting children with noxious manipulations of their skin. Such practices lasted well into the twentieth

century. The victims of these assaults must have been sorely puzzled by such behavior and in some cases probably developed strange ideas concerning the relationships between skin, pain, and the putative demonstration of affection. It is of interest to note that males exclusively were guilty of such sadistic practices, and then usually only towards male children, although girls with braids did not entirely escape their attentions. A favorite trick was to grasp the child's cheek between thumb and forefinger and give it a thorough tweak, or the ear might be so treated or pulled or given an even more painful flick with a finger. Graham Greene in his autobiography, *A Sort of Life*, tells how, when he was eight years old, his schoolmaster at Berkhamsted "indulged his jovial ogreish habit of screwing a fist in one's cheek till it hurt." Hair-mussing, pinching, a spank on the bottom or a push were among the other engaging indignities to which children, all in the guise of affection, were subjected. A hearty slap on the back was usually reserved for older adolescent boys and males up to middle age. Such demonstrations of affection by painful attacks on the skin could only have been performed by individuals who had themselves been the victims of such abnormal treatment.

Just as those who have been inadequately loved, or have been frustrated in their need for love as infants, will exhibit a great deal of hostility in their verbal activities, so, too, those who have been failed in the experience of tactile affection will often be awkward and crude in their attempts at demonstrations of such affection. There are men who almost crush the hand they shake when introduced to another male, who with their familiars punch them in the chest or abdomen, as a mark of affection. The same males tend to be rough, awkward, and crude with "the gentler sex." Since a lacklove infancy and the privation of tactile affection generally go together, it is not surprising to find that the unloved child grows up to be not only awkward in his demonstrations of love but also awkward in his body relationships towards others. Such persons rub others the wrong way because they have been failed in the experience of being stroked the right way.

There has been a great change in the earlier forms of hostile demonstration of "affection" towards boys, but what remains is the expression of anger towards the child in the form of aggressive tactilisms, such as slapping, spanking, or shoving. "Corporal punishment" is still widely practiced throughout the Western world, and the skin not only made a target and a vehicle for the experience of pain, but an organ which is directly associated with anger, punishment, sin, aggression, naughtiness, and evil. As Lawrence Frank has remarked,

Spanking and slapping are often used to punish a child, utilizing this tactual sensitivity as the chief mode of making him suffer, thus depriving him of his usual comforting, and giving instead painful contacts.

This infantile tactuality, like his other organic needs, is gradually transformed as the child learns to accept mother's voice as a surrogate, her reassuring tones of voice giving him an equivalent for his close physical contacts, her angry scolding voice serving as a punishment and making him cry as if hit.

An unkind remark "hurts" just as if it were a slap or a painful blow to the body. A cutting remark causes its target to "bleed" just as if his skin were slashed. Words may also "sting to the quick."

Class differences in the use of angry words containing the threat of tactile punishment were very marked in Clay's study. The working-class mothers used words harshly, the middle class used them sparingly, while the upper class "used them most often in a kind of affectionate play and, more than the other classes, they combined touch and words."

Some parents, particularly fathers, make it a point to tell their children before they strap them why they are being punished. One can thus learn to dissociate the infliction of bodily pain from the display of any emotion at all. The Nazis were particularly adept at this, and there can be little doubt, as we have seen, that their affectless inhumanity was in no little part due to their early conditioning, with tactile experience largely neglected or else restricted to a punishing kind. This would

seem to be an especially undesirable form of conditioning.

The canings, usually administered by senior prefects, customary in English public schools, during which any display of emotion on the part of either the caner or his victim was strictly tabooed, undoubtedly served to produce a dissociation between pain and emotion. Hence, one could not only remain uninvolved with the pain of others, but inflict it upon them without in any way feeling that one was being anything but just. Hence, the great pleasure educated Englishmen have often taken in wit that was cruel, and their indifference to and lack of understanding of the consequences of their conduct.\*

**TATTOOING.** One wonders whether those dermatological graffiti known as tattoos may not be related to an exhibitionistic desire to reward oneself and one's skin through a regressively painful experience resulting in a permanent embellishment or disfiguration of the abused organ. The tattoo has been seen as a defense practiced by those who expect to be attacked and who arm themselves this way by emphasizing appearances. This explanation would appear to fit the elaborate tattooing to which the Japanese *yakuza* or gangsters submit themselves, and who in the feudal period grew to be a symbol of resistance to despotism. Florence Rome, who made a special study of the *yakuza*, says that "Because it was such a test of strength to endure the pain of tattooing, it began to take on other aspects—manliness, courage, health, vitality and so on—and the *yakuza* in adhering to this custom feel themselves to be the possessors of such attributes."

Similar motivations appear to be at work among young gang members and delinquents in the Occident as well as in the Orient. Dr. J. H. Burma in a study of tattooing among male delinquents in one school found 67 percent to have tattoos. In a similar school for girls 33 percent were found to be tattooed.

\*This was strikingly exhibited in the English film *If*, widely seen in the United States in 1969.

There was an average of five to ten different kinds of tattoos over their bodies, and most were in clearly visible places, a greater proportion being visible in boys than in girls. The words and phrases associated with the tattoos frequently revealed identification with a gang or a significant friend. The delinquents themselves were not unaware of the fact that their tattoos advertised their affiliation with power sources. It is a way of declaring: "I am such and such a kind of a person and you can expect me to behave in certain brave, strong, forceful ways."

In the United States about 10 percent of the population is tattooed. Males are much more commonly tattooed than females. It is said that tattooing increases in frequency during periods of crisis.

The motivations for tattooing are probably many. In Egypt tattooing is believed to confer sexual potency on both male and female, and, indeed, is considered sexually attractive by each sex. In Iraq tattooing was used to induce and also to maintain pregnancy. Since the custom has been virtually worldwide and practiced for every conceivable reason it would be folly to attempt to attribute it to a single cause. However, whatever the cause—initiation, religious, sexual, ostentation, prestige—the element of self-gratification can be seen to run like a red thread through all the ostensible motivations. This is clearly evident in the tattoos with which so many sailors and soldiers, long deprived of the society of women, choose to decorate their bodies—usually their arms. The sexual motif is usually quite explicit, and its presence obviously gratifying. The tattoo legitimizes a continuous erotic involvement.

**CORPORAL PUNISHMENT.** It is astonishing to find how widely the barbarism of spanking children is still defended—principally among members of the working classes. A group of such women whom I met in June 1976 maintained that spanking was good for children. Two of the most articulate proponents of this view mentioned that they had divorced their husbands because they were wife-beaters. When I asked them whether they did

not think it possible that parent-beaten boys might later become wife-beaters, they considered the suggestion absurd.

It is becoming increasingly evident that parents who become child batterers and abusers were in most cases themselves neglected and abused as children. In the half dozen studies thus far reported it was found that 25 percent and more of batterers had themselves suffered separation from the mother.

Dr. Henry Kempe of the University of Colorado Medical School has stated that the most important indicator of whether a child will be abused is the mother's attitude at the time of the baby's birth. If she does not smile, does not want to see and hold the baby, and if the father behaves in the same way, they will need help in raising the child. Since some 2,000 children die of abuse annually in the United States, the follow-up of such families is imperative.

Dr. Ray Helfer in a study of about one hundred adolescent males brought into juvenile court found that more than 85 percent had abusive parents and suffered very negative experiences as children. Abusive parents cannot identify one friend who would help them in time of trouble, and a significant number tend to have phones with unlisted numbers. The prematurity rate of abused children is twice that of the general population, and the cesarean section rate is many times that of the general population.

Professor Selma Fraiberg, in discussing Dr. Helfer's paper, stated that although all the battering parents she had studied remember the actual abuse they had suffered in childhood in stunning and chilling detail, they did not remember the effect of the experience, that is, being abused and injured. When her group could help such parents reach the point of saying, "Oh, God, how I hated him when he would get that strap and lay me out and begin to beat me. Oh, how I hated him," only then could some progress be made. When her group helped the parents to remember the anxiety and the sense of terror that had come over them with the abuse of a powerful parent, they could demonstrate that the parents' behavior towards their own children changed. Thus, it was with the actual reexperiencing

of the terrifying feelings involved that changes occurred.

In immediate anticipation of a spanking and during the assault the child is often terrified, exhibiting all the accompaniments of extreme fear, pallor, muscle rigidity, accelerated heartbeat, and weeping. In later years, under conditions of emotional upset persons who have undergone such childhood experiences will frequently exhibit similar reactions. Or in an effort to defend themselves against the autonomic discharge of feeling, they will "bite their lips," grow rigid, or clasp one hand with the other in a firm grip. This is a method, like keeping "a stiff upper lip," of preventing one's emotions from expressing themselves, of holding back the tears, of bracing oneself for the blow by employing muscle tension. Muscle tension as a method of keeping emotionally disturbing feelings under control has been remarked by many observers. Or one can dig one's nails into the palms of one's hands until they bleed, in an effort to counteract the expression of emotion, or use the skin ambivalently as a means of both drawing attention to one's needs and at the same time rejecting the other. As Clemens Benda has put it, "Skin diseases vividly demonstrate the difficulties of maintaining contact—a sore skin, a running nose, an infected mouth—each area of external or internal contact is a possible spot for an interference with the even flow of human exchange."

It is here being suggested that behavior of this kind is significantly related to the tactile experiences of the individual during infancy and childhood.

The weeping which is usually associated with physical punishment in childhood may, in later years, express itself in weeping through the skin. Kepecs and his co-workers in a series of ingenious experiments have shown that in emotional weeping the visible expression "is not limited in its effects to the lacrimal glands, but also finds expression in other parts of the body, including the skin." Having, under hypnosis, induced an artificial cantharides blister in the skin of their experimental subjects, the investigators then induced various emotional states in them and measured the amount of fluid exudation into the blister site. Emotional states were associated with a rise in the

exudation rate, especially in weeping; the heavier the weeping the higher the exudation rate. Interestingly enough, as would be expected, inhibition of weeping was associated first with a fall and then with a great rise in exudation rate. Thus, the male of the English-speaking world who is everywhere taught that "a little man" doesn't cry, having repeatedly been caused to repress his desire to weep until he has become incapable of weeping from his lacrimal glands, often begins, in later life, to weep through his skin or his gastrointestinal tract. It is now well established that in a large proportion of cases of atopic dermatitis there is associated a strong but inhibited desire to weep.

INFANT-DIRECTED TACTILE BEHAVIOR TOWARDS THE MOTHER. Harlow has made it clear, in his studies of rhesus monkeys, that the most important of the young animal's experiences, for its subsequent development, is bodily contact with its mother, and so it is with the young of *Homo sapiens*.

The four phases of the child-mother affectional system, in both human infants and infant monkeys, are: (1) a reflex stage in which the infant reacts automatically to the stimuli presented by the mother; (2) a stage of affectionate attachment; (3) a security stage; and (4) a stage of independence. The reflex stage lasts only a few weeks in rhesus monkeys and a few months in human infants. The phase of affectionate attachment begins in the human infant within the first thirty minutes after birth, but it is not until between two and three months of age that this becomes very evident in the infant's behavior. By smiling, cuddling, gurgling, and the like the baby begins to show active voluntary affection for its mother. The primary tie to the mother appears to operate, in the rhesus monkey, through the two systems of nursing and contacting; these are primarily operative during the first year. Clinging and following, that is, visual and auditory responsiveness to the mother, are at their peak in the second year.

The third stage, the security stage, follows shortly after the commencement of the attachment phase. The so-called six-months anxiety is thought to mark the beginning of this phase,



which is considered to be the period at which the infant begins to experience visually induced fear reactions. However, in the human infant visually induced fear reactions may occur as early as the end of the second week. Fear of heights seems to develop only after the infant has had some experience of locomotion. Among the maternal responses to the infant at this stage are acts of comfort, protection, and reassurance in all situations in which the infant feels fearful and insecure. Under such conditions little monkeys run to their mother and attach to her. "Within minutes or even seconds after attaching, the subject's hands and body relax and the monkey (or child) will visually explore the frightening stimulus with little or no sign of anxiety." In time, the security responses of the infant, derived from the security-giving satisfactions his mother has afforded him, enable the young monkey to leave the mother, and explore the world tentatively at first, and later, more securely, for himself.

As Clay puts it, "The mother can be thought of as the center or pivot of the small child's security. As the child becomes able to move about he no longer wants to remain physically in contact with the mother; visual contact is sufficient. The concept of behavior distance can be used to explain the distance from the mother that the mobile child is able to experience comfortably." As a child grows older in the socialization process behavior distance is increased.

In her study Clay found that it was the nonwalking toddlers who spent most time in contact with their mothers. It was at this period that the children's affectionate attachment to their mothers was at its height. As soon as the child is able to walk his independent forays away from the mother in the "exhilaration of his new mobility and excitement of learning about the world around him" grow more frequent. His independence, however, is tentative, for he must maintain visual contact with his mother or know where she is in order to feel safe.

The child, Clay found, who had not experienced satisfactory tactile contact with his mother did not make any tactile approaches to her. There were two examples of this behavior, both of them in children in the crawling stage, who stayed away from

their mothers during the period when affectionate attachment is usually at its height. However, it appeared that children who had experienced a highly satisfactory tactile relationship with the mother did not come to the mother for more. Finally, overanxious children tended to have very high tactile needs, a condition which showed itself in the physical use of the mother as a haven of security. One of these children had suffered from inadequate maternal responsiveness, while two others appeared to be reacting to marital difficulties between their parents. "Like the infant monkeys, all three children clung to their mothers and were unable, except for relatively short sallies, to go out, explore and play in the environment."

In Clay's group middle-class children expressed more tactual affection towards their mothers than did the children of the other two classes. Clay suggests that this may have been due to the greater duration of tactile contact they received in the neonate and just-walking stages of development.

The Harlows remark that "all the mother-infant interactions relating to nursing, bodily contact, and following-imitation contribute to security, although there is evidence that sheer bodily contact-comfort is the dominant variable in the rhesus monkey." This appears also to be the case in the human infant.

**CONTACT AND PLAY.** The importance of play in learning is now recognized by almost everyone, and, as Harlow has pointed out, all forms of play behavior reduce to expressions of the fundamental motive of exploration and manipulation. "Social play is preceded by exploration of the physical environment and play with inanimate objects, and apparently social exploration and play take precedence over environmental exploration and play because of the greater regard and feedback given by animate rather than inanimate objects."

Among the monkeys observed by the Harlows, object exploration preceded social exploration, and each involved three identifiable components: (1) a visual exploration, in which the monkey orients closely to, and peers intently at, the object or other animal; (2) an oral exploration, a gentle mouthing re-

sponse; and (3) a tactual exploration, limited to a transient clasp, either of a physical object or of another animal. Here, once more, we perceive that the tactile sense remains the dominant one, and it is important to note that these components are not separate but interrelated, so that when one speaks of visual exploration, this is not to be construed as a behavior unrelated to the tactual-oral explorations, but coordinated with them.

In the rhesus monkey close physical ties between infant and mother must cease before play can develop with age-mates and peers. Here, too, three stages may be identified: (1) a reflex stage; (2) a manipulation stage; and (3) a stage of interactive play. In the reflex stage during the early weeks of life infants will fixate each other visually and make approach attempts. If they contact each other, they cling to one another reflexly as they do to their mothers. When two infants are involved they cling in a ventral-to-ventral manner, if more than two are involved they will cling in a typical "choo-choo" pattern. In the manipulation stage, beginning at the end of the first month, the infants explore each other as they would objects, with eyes, hands, mouth, and body, alternating manipulation of age-mates with manipulation of the physical environment. Like the preceding stage, this is a presocial period in peer relationships, the exploratory activity characterizing it persisting into the stage of interactive play. As they come to learn more from their experiences of each other they gradually begin to respond to one another as social rather than as physical objects, and social play emerges from the matrix of manipulatory play. The third stage, interactive play, marks the development of genuine social interactions between peers. This occurs at about three months of age, and overlaps with manipulatory play and sequence of exploration of the physical environment. Interactive play develops in the human infant during the second year of life.

Clay observed a pattern of development of play behavior in her subjects consisting of alternating periods of mother-child interaction, followed by periods of play at a distance from the mother, with a subsequent return to her for further communication.

As the child grows older and extends his behavior distance, the time actually in contact with the mother, or next to her, decreases and the time spent away from her increases. The kinds of contact and the kinds of feedback that the child requires from the mother for his emotional well-being change also. Where at first the small child or toddler might want to sit upon the mother's lap for several minutes, the actively mobile child may just run up to his mother and say, "Hi!" This kind of psychological tagging in at the source of security is a pattern that was observed for almost all the children. It was especially noticeable among the older children whose mothers allowed them a larger circle of play.

The "tagging in" is especially important in making certain that contact is still maintained, especially when one is beginning to explore other parts of the world for oneself. As Clay found, with time the child comes to depend less and less upon his mother for physical contact, and devotes more and more time to play away from her. At the younger ages he is still not ready to play independently at any remove from her for more than short periods of time. He still needs the reassurance of contact with her, to keep in touch both physically and visually.

As Clay emphasizes, the young of all mammals must learn to play. The development of the ability to play in relation to the mother will depend on whether or not the infant's tentatively playful approaches are rewarded. Working-class mothers apparently do not encourage their young to play with them as much as middle-class and upper-class mothers do—the upper-class children, in Clay's study, make more tactile play approaches to their mothers than do middle-class children.

Interestingly, Clay found that mothers who did not give their youngsters much tactile stimulation nevertheless encouraged their children to play with them. It was almost as though the direct physical contact and the feelings it arouses were considered uncomfortable, but that physical contact, through games, mediated often through objects like a ball, a picnic spoon, or a popsicle stick, were acceptable substitutes.

Clay refers to Williams' study of tactility among the Dusun

of Borneo, in which he called attention to the need to study "... ways in which individuals are required, or expected, to relinquish particular tactile experiences and develop compensatory symbolic substitutes at different periods in enculturation." This kind of learning of symbolic substitutes for tactility is seen in the behavior of the children who approached their mothers with various play objects. And it is important to understand that a great many other forms of symbolic learning of a similar kind constitute but an extension of the learning based on the mind of the skin.

Tsumori has shown how important the prolonged experience of exploratory play activities is in the development and discovery of new adaptive behaviors in Japanese macaques, and Hall makes it quite clear that much of the later behavior of the nonhuman primate is learned in social situations and practiced in play.

These observations hold true with even greater force in the human species.\*

The separation or detachment from the mother in all mammals plays an important role in the initiation and extension of the infant's contacts with the rest of the world. As Rheingold and Eckerman point out, even when the infant is carried about, his contacts with the world are necessarily circumscribed. Only when he leaves his mother's side by himself can many new kinds of learning occur.

The infant comes in contact with an increasing number and variety of objects. Through touching them he learns their shapes, dimensions, slopes, edges, and textures. He also fingers, grasps,

\*For several other valuable books on play see J. Huizinga, *Homo Ludens* (New York: Roy Publishers, 1950); H. C. Lehman and P. A. Witty, *The Psychology of Play Activities* (New York: A. S. Barnes Co., 1927); P. A. Jewell and C. Loizos (eds.), *Play, Exploration and Territory* (New York: Academic Press, 1966); S. Miller, *The Psychology of Play* (Baltimore: Penguin Books, 1968); J. S. Bruner, A. Jolly, and K. Sylva (eds.), *Play: Its Role in Development and Evolution* (New York: Basic Books, 1976); J. N. Lieberman, *Playfulness: Its Relationship to Imagination and Creativity* (New York: Academic Press, 1977).

pushes, and pulls, and thus learns the material variables of heaviness, mass, and rigidity, as well as the changes in visual and auditory stimuli that some objects provide. He moves from place to place within a room, and from one room to another. From the consequent changes in visual experience, coupled with his own kinesthetic sensations, he learns the position of objects relative to other objects. He also learns the invariant nature of many sources of stimulation. In a word, he learns the properties of the physical world, including the principles of object constancy and the conservation of matter.

**CONTACT, INDIVIDUATION, AND AFFECTION.** Awareness of self is largely a matter of tactile experience. Whether we are walking, standing, sitting, lying, running, or jumping, whatever the other messages we receive from muscle, joint, and other tissue, the first and most extensive of these messages are received from the skin. Long before body temperature either falls or rises from external causes, it is the skin that will register the change and communicate to the cortex the necessary messages designed to initiate those behaviors which will lead to the appropriate response.

In separating himself from the mother the exploratory activities in which the infant engages, though based on what he sees, fundamentally constitute an extension of learning through tactile experience. Vision endows the tactile experience with a formal meaning, but it is the tactile meanings which largely endow the objects seen with form and dimension.

In summarizing the results of her study Clay concludes: "The question that we have been pursuing in this project, whether the amount and kind of tactile stimulation and contact that American mothers give their babies and young children is adequate to their physiological and emotional needs, must therefore be answered negatively." The mothers observed at the beach were not so much concerned with holding, cradling, cuddling, caressing, or expressing love to their babies and young children, as with controlling their behavior and attending to their nurturance needs. "Comforting, playing and giving

tactile affection were maternal behaviors of much less importance and frequency." Repeatedly Clay observed that tactile contact between mothers and preverbal children most often expressed caretaking and nurturance, rather than love and affection.

The impersonal child-rearing practices that have long been the mode in the United States, with the early severance of the mother-child tie, and the separation of mothers and children by the interposition of bottles, blankets, clothes, carriages, cribs, and other physical objects, will produce individuals who are able to lead lonely, isolated lives in the crowded urban world with its materialistic values and its addiction to things. Clay properly feels that perhaps a higher degree of closeness within the family, commencing with the primary mother-child tactile tie, would help Americans to feel somewhat more anchored in the family, while an acceptance of the importance of emotional tactile needs beyond childhood might help them to withstand the impersonal pressures of our times and the inevitable vicissitudes of life.

This is, perhaps, expecting too much of touch relationships within the family, but the common adoption of such tactile practices is certainly a consummation devoutly to be wished. The contemporary American family constitutes only too often an institution for the systematic production of mental illness in each of its members, as a consequence of its concentration on making each of them a "success." Which, in practice, means that the individual is gradually converted into a device with a built-in design for achievement in accordance with the prevailing requirements, entailing the suppression of emotion, the denial of love and friendship, the ability to trade with whatever serves one for a conscience, while conveying an unvarying appearance of rectitude. Towards this end, parents feel that they must not give their children "too much" affection, even in the reflex and affectionate stages when children, so much in need of it, literally cannot receive too much affection. All sorts of reasons and pseudological rationalizations are produced: the child will be spoiled, he will become too dependent upon others,

he will develop abnormal interests in his mother, or in other boys or even girls, he will become feminine, and so on. The cultural goal is to make "a he-man" of the male, and a successful manipulator of her world of the female. Given the emphasis on such goals, whether consciously or unconsciously followed, the success-oriented American would still constitute the problem he presents, no matter how adequate the tactile experience of the young might be. The importance of tactility in the socialization process, therefore, is not likely to be overemphasized, nor should it be, as it has been, underemphasized.

The importance of tactile experience, especially in the preverbal stages of human development, cannot, in fact, be overemphasized, and it is the burden of this book to convey that message.



# ENVOI

---

Camerado, this is no book,  
Who touches this touches a man.  
—Walt Whitman, *So Long!*

In the preceding pages we have seen that the human significance of touching is considerably more profound than has hitherto been understood. The skin as the sensory receptor organ which responds to contact with the sensation of touch, a sensation to which basic human meanings become attached almost from the moment of birth, is fundamental in the development of human behavior. The raw sensation of touch as stimulus is vitally necessary for the physical survival of the organism. In that sense it may be postulated that the need for tactile stimulation must be added to the repertoire of basic needs in all vertebrates, if not in all invertebrates as well.

Basic needs, defined as tensions which must be satisfied if the organism is to survive, are the needs for oxygen, liquid, food, rest, activity, sleep, bowel and bladder elimination, escape from danger, and the avoidance of pain. It should be noted that sex is not a basic need since the survival of the organism is not dependent upon its satisfaction. Only a certain number of organisms need satisfy sexual tensions if the species is to survive.\* However that may be, the evidence points unequivocally to the

\*For a discussion of the basic needs see A. Montagu, *The Direction of Human Development* (Revised edition, New York: Hawthorn Books, 1970).

fact that no organism can survive very long without externally originating cutaneous stimulation.

Cutaneous stimulation may take innumerable forms, such as those of temperature or radiation, liquid or atmospheric stimulation, pressure, and the like. Such cutaneous stimulation is clearly necessary for the physical survival of the organism. Yet even this elementary fact does not seem to have been adequately recognized. Important as such cutaneous stimulation is, the form with which we have been principally concerned in this book is tactile stimulation, that is, touching. By touching is meant the satisfying contact or feeling of another's or one's own skin. Touching may take the form of caressing, cuddling, holding, stroking or patting with the fingers or whole hand, or vary from simple body contact to the massive tactile stimulation involved in sexual intercourse.

As we have seen, in our brief survey, different cultures vary in both the manner in which they express the need for tactile stimulation and the manner in which they satisfy it. But the need is universal and is everywhere the same, though the form of its satisfaction may vary according to time and place.

The evidence presented in these pages suggests that adequate tactile satisfaction during infancy and childhood is of fundamental importance for the subsequent healthy behavioral development of the individual. The experimental and other research findings on other animals, as well as those on humans, show that tactile deprivation in infancy usually results in behavioral inadequacies in later life. Significant as these theoretic findings are, it is their practical value that is of principal interest to us. In short, how may these findings be utilized in the raising of healthy human beings?

It should be evident that in the development of the person tactile stimulation should begin with the newborn baby. The newborn should, whenever possible, be placed in his mother's arms, and allowed to remain by her side as long as she may desire. The newborn should be put to nurse at his mother's breast as soon as possible. The newborn should not be removed to a "nursery" nor placed in a crib. The cradle should be

restored to universal usage as the best auxiliary and substitute for cradling in the mother's arms ever invented. Fondling of the infant can scarcely be overdone—a reasonably sensible human being is not likely to overstimulate an infant—hence, if one is to err in any direction it were better in the direction of too much rather than too little fondling. Instead of baby carriages infants should be carried on their mother's backs, and also on their fathers' backs, in the equivalent of the Chinese *madai* or Eskimo parka.\*

Any abrupt cessation of fondling should be avoided, and it is recommended that in cultures of the Western world, and in the United States particularly, parents express their affection for each other and for their children more demonstratively than they have in the past. It is not words so much as acts communicating affection and involvement that children, and, indeed, adults, require. Tactile sensations become tactile perceptions according to the meanings with which they have been invested by experience. Inadequate tactile experience will result in a lack of such associations and a consequent inability to relate to others in many fundamental human ways. When affection and involvement are conveyed through touch, it is those meanings, as well as the security-giving satisfactions, with which touch will become associated. Hence, the human significance of touching.

\*Such a baby-carrier may be obtained from the La Leche League, 9616 Minneapolis Avenue, Franklin Park, Illinois, 60131; from Mrs. Anne Marshall, 260 Woodham Road, Linwood, Christchurch 6, New Zealand; and from Gerry Designs Inc., Boulder, Colorado. The Gerry Designs baby-carrier is obtainable in many retail shops throughout the United States. For a good evaluation of baby-carriers see *Consumers Reports*, November 1975, pp. 667–671.

## APPENDIX: TOUCH AND AGE

The wiser mind  
Mourns less for what age takes away  
Than what it leaves behind.

—Wordsworth, *The Fountain*

Everyone wants to live long, but no one wants to grow old, for old age, as someone has aptly put it, is a dirty trick. The answer to that, of course, is to die young—as late as possible. But that is mainly a matter of the spirit. In most cases the body wears out long before we are ready to vacate the premises. The skin presents the most visible of the evidences of aging: wrinkling, spotting, pigmentary changes, dryness, loss of elasticity, and so wearisomely on. With aging the various tactile nerve endings undergo significant changes. The structure of nerve endings within the organized corpuscles of the skin undergoes neurofibril breakdown. Tactile or Meissner's corpuscles decrease, exhibiting marked changes in size, shape, and relationship to the epidermis. Throughout the nervous system and its appendages there is evidence of change, mostly in the form of cell and fiber loss. This is reflected in decreased acuity in the sense of touch, in the ability to sharply localize stimuli, speed of reaction to tactile stimuli, and speed of reaction to pain stimuli. One of the striking changes with age is, in many cases, the apparent loss of the great sensitivity of the palmar surfaces

of the hands. The fingers and palms, in which the greatest number of neurotactile elements are located, seem as it were to have become indurated, as if the "callused" skin has undergone a loss of its ability to transmit and receive its former communications.

However, tactile needs do not seem to change with aging—if anything they seem to increase. Yet, in the Anglo-Saxon world we are taught that the tactual behavior of childhood is inappropriate in adolescents and adults. The taboo upon such behavior is almost complete for the male, for females much less so. Males as adolescents and adults may embrace their mothers, but not their fathers; a favored aunt or grandmother may also be embraced, but not their male counterparts. Males may embrace girls on certain private occasions, but may not do so publicly unless a generally accepted mutual understanding exists between them. Compared to the female the male is culturally encouraged, in the Western world, to remain all the days of his life a virtually nontactile creature—hungering for tactual experience, and seeking it, mainly, through sexual contacts. When, in old age, the male's sexual capacities are diminished or completely reduced the tactual hunger is more powerful than ever, for it is the only sensuous experience that remains to him. It is at this time, when he has again become so much dependent upon others for human support, that he is in need of embraces, of an arm around his shoulder, of being taken by the hand, caressed, and given the opportunity to respond. Women need such communications at least as much as men. Yet this is where we fail the aging quite miserably—as we do in so much else. Because we are unwilling to face the fact of aging, we behave as if it isn't there. It is this massive evasion that is the principal reason for our failure to understand the needs of the aging.

The most important and neglected of these needs is the need for tactile stimulation. One has only to observe the responses of older people to a caress, an embrace, a handpat or clasp, to appreciate how vitally necessary such experiences are for their well-being. On the basis of the kind of evidence cited in this book it may be conjectured that the course and outcome of

many an illness in the aged has been greatly influenced by the quality of tactile support the individual has received before and during the illness. Furthermore, in a substantial number of cases one may suspect that it was the individual's history of tactile experience prior to his or her illness, and particularly during it, as well as expectations of its continuation, that made the difference between life and death.

In the aged especially the need for tactile stimulation is a hunger which has so often remained unsatisfied that, in their disappointment, its victims tend to become uncommunicative concerning their need for it. A perfunctory peck on the cheek is no substitute for a warm embrace, nor is a conventional handshake capable of replacing a caressing hand, "the only touch of love."

# REFERENCES

## CHAPTER ONE. THE MIND OF THE SKIN

### Page and Line

- 1:9-10 RICHARD REGISTER, "In Touch with Feeling," *Human Behavior*, vol. 4 (1975), pp. 16-23.
- :11-13 GILBERT GOTTLIEB, "Ontogenesis of Sensory Function in Birds and Mammals," in E. Tobach, L. R. Aronson, and E. Shaw (eds.), *The Biopsychology of Development* (New York: Academic Press, 1971), pp. 67-128.
- 2:1-5 D. HOOKER, *The Prenatal Origin of Behavior* (Lawrence, Kansas: University of Kansas Press, 1952), p. 63.
- 3:2-6 F. WOOD JONES, *The Principles of Anatomy as Seen in the Hand* (2nd ed., Baltimore: Williams & Wilkins, 1942), pp. 324 et seq.
- :21-25 C. M. JACKSON, "Some Aspects of Form and Growth," in W. J. ROBBINS (ed.), *Growth* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1928), pp. 125-127; G. R. De Beer, *Growth* (London: Arnold, 1924), pp. 10, 34.
- :27-29 L. CARMICHAEL, "The Onset and Early Development of Behavior," in L. Carmichael (ed.), *Manual of Child Psychology* (2nd ed., New York: Wiley, 1954) pp. 97-98; E. T. Raney and L. Carmichael, "Localizing Responses to Tactual Stimuli in the Fetal Rat in Relation to the Psychological Problem of Space Perception," *Journal of Genetic Psychology*, vol. 43 (1934), pp. 3-21; A. W. Angulo y Gonzalez, "The Prenatal Development of Behavior in the Albino Rat," *Journal of Comparative Neurology*, vol. 55 (1932), pp. 395-442; E. A. Swenson, "The Development of Movement of the Albino Rat Before Birth," (Ph.D. diss., University of Kansas, 1926); W. Preyer, *Specielle Physiologie des Embryo* (Leipzig: Grieben, 1885); A. Peiper, *Cere-*

## Page and Line

- bral Function in Infancy and Childhood* (New York: Consultants Bureau, 1963), pp. 34-40.
- :31-32 S. ROTHMAN (ed.), *The Human Integument* (Washington, D.C.: American Association for the Advancement of Science, 1959); D. R. Kenshalo (ed.), *The Skin Senses* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C. Thomas, 1968).
- 4:12-15 H. STRUGHOLD, "Ueber die Dichte und Schwellen der Schmerzpunkte der Epidermis in den verschiedenen Körperregionen," *Zeitschrift der Biologie*, vol. 80 (1924), p. 367.
- :15-16 C. INGBERT, "On the Density of the Cutaneous Innervation in Man," *Journal of Comparative Neurology*, vol. 13 (1903), pp. 209-222.
- :24-28 E. F. DUBOIS, *Basal Metabolism in Health and Disease* (Philadelphia: Lea & Febiger, 1936), pp. 125-144.
- :33 S. ROTHMAN, *Physiology and Biochemistry of the Skin* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1954), pp. 493-514.
- :36 to H. YOSHIMURA, "Organ Systems in Adaptation: The Skin,"  
5:1 in D. B. Dill, et al. (eds.), *Adaptation to Environment* (Washington, D. C.,: American Physiological Society, 1964), p. 109.
- :5-10 R. F. RUSHMER, et al., "The Skin," *Science*, vol. 154 (1966), pp. 343-348.
- :12-17 ROTHMAN, *Physiology and Biochemistry of the Skin*; W. Montagna, *Structure and Function of Skin* (New York: Academic Press, 1956); D. Sinclair, *Cutaneous Sensation* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1967); H. Piéron, *The Sensations* (London: Miller, 1956); Rothman, *The Human Integument*.
- 6:33 to B. RUSSELL, *The ABC of Relativity* (New York: Harper &  
7:2 Bros., 1925).
- :28 to G. H. BISHOP, "Neural Mechanisms of Cutaneous Sense.,"  
8:4 *Physiological Reviews*, vol. 26 (1946), pp. 77-102.
- :4-16 W. PENFIELD and T. RASMUSSEN, *The Cerebral Cortex of Man* (New York: The Macmillan Co. 1950), p. 214.
- :35 to A. R. LURIA, "The Functional Organization of the Brain,"  
9:3 *Scientific American*, vol. 222 (1970), pp. 66-78.
- 10:5-7 A. MONTAGU, "The Sensory Influences of the Skin," *Texas Reports on Biology and Medicine*, vol. 2 (1953), pp. 291-301.
- :24-29 W. J. O'DONOVAN, *Dermatological Neuroses* (London: Kegan Paul, 1927).



## Page and Line

- :29-31 M. E. OBERMAYER, *Psychocutaneous Medicine* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1955). See also J. A. Aita, *Neurocutaneous Diseases* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1966); H. C. Bethune and C. B. Kidd, "Psychophysiological Mechanisms in Skin Diseases," *The Lancet*, vol. 2 (1961), pp. 1419-1422.
- 13:8-9 F. S. HAMMETT, "Studies in the Thyroid Apparatus: I," *American Journal of Physiology*, vol. 56 (1921), pp. 196-204, p. 199.
- 14:2-13 F. S. HAMMETT, "Studies of the Thyroid Apparatus: V," *Endocrinology*, vol. 6 (1922), pp. 221-229.
- :14-16 M. J. GREENMAN and F. L. DUHRING, *Breeding and Care of the Albino Rat for Research Purposes* (2nd ed., Philadelphia: Wistar Institute, 1931).
- 15:33 to J. A. REYNIERS, "Germ-Free Life Studies," *Lobund Reports*,  
16:2 University of Notre Dame, No. 1 (1946); No. 2 (1949).  
:5-10 *Ibid.*, No. 1, p. 20.  
:12-26 Personal communication, 10 November 1950.  
:30-33 R. A. McCANCE and M. OTLEY, "Course of the Blood Urea in Newborn Rats, Pigs and Kittens," *Journal of Physiology*, vol. 113 (1951), pp. 18-22.
- 17:3-11 L. RHINE, "One Little Kitten and How It Grew," *McCall's Magazine*, 10 July 1953, pp. 4-6.
- :18 R. W. SCHAEFFER and D. PREMACK, "Licking Rates in Infant Albino Rats," *Science*, vol. 134 (1962), pp. 1980-1981.
- :19 to J. S. ROSENBLATT and D. S. LEHRMAN, "Maternal Behavior  
18:6 of the Laboratory Rat," in H. L. Rheingold (ed.), *Maternal Behavior in Mammals* (New York: Wiley, 1963) p. 14; T. C. Schneirla, J. S. Rosenblatt, and E. Tobach, "Maternal Behavior in the Cat," *ibid.*, in Rheingold, p. 123; H. L. Rheingold, "Maternal Behavior in the Dog," *ibid.*, pp. 179-181; P. Jay, "Mother-Infant Relations in Langurs," *ibid.*, p. 286; I. DeVore, "Mother-Infant Relations in Free-Ranging Baboons," *ibid.*, pp. 310-311.
- :7-8 H. FOX, "The Birth of Two Anthropoid Apes," *Journal of Mammalogy*, vol. 10 (1929), pp. 37-51; R. D. Nadler, "Three Gorillas Born at Yerkes in One Month," *Yerkes Newsletter* (Emory University), vol. 13, no. 2 (1976), pp. 15-19.
- :24 to L. L. ROTH and J. S. ROSENBLATT, "Mammary Glands of  
19:5 Pregnant Rats: Development Stimulated by Licking," *Science*, vol. 151 (1965), pp. 1403-1404.

## Page and Line

- :6-15 H. G. BIRCH, "Source of Order in the Maternal Behavior of Animals," *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, vol. 26 (1956), pp. 279-284; T. C. Schneirla, "A Consideration of Some Problems in the Ontogeny of Family Life and Social Adjustments in Various Infrahuman Animals," in M. J. E. Senn (ed.), *Problems of Infancy and Childhood* (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation, 1951), p. 96.
- :36 to G. F. SOLOMON, S. LEVINE, and J. K. KRAFT, "Early  
20:7 Experiences and Immunity," *Nature*, vol. 220 (1968), pp. 821-823.
- :9-14 G. F. SOLOMON, and R. H. MOOS, "Emotions, Immunity, and Disease," *Archives of General Psychiatry*, vol. 2 (1964), pp. 657-674.
- :20-24 O. WEININGER, "Mortality of Rats under Stress as a Function of Early Handling," *Canadian Journal of Psychology*, vol. 7 (1953), pp. 111-114; O. Weininger, W. J. McClelland, and R. K. Arima, "Gentling and Weight Gain in the Albino Rat," *Canadian Journal of Psychology*, vol. 8 (1954), pp. 147-151; L. Bernstein and H. Elrick, "The Handling of Experimental Animals as a Control Factor in Animal Research—A Review," *Metabolism*, vol. 6 (1957), pp. 479-482; S. Levine, "Stimulation in Infancy," *Scientific American*, vol. 202 (1960), pp. 81-86; W. R. Ruegamer, L. Bernstein, and J. D. Benjamin, "Growth, Food Utilization, and Thyroid Activity in the Albino Rat as a Function of Extra Handling," *Science*, vol. 120 (1954), pp. 184-185.
- :28 to G. ALEXANDER and D. WILLIAMS, "Maternal Facilitation  
21:1 of Sucking Drive in Newborn Lambs," *Science*, vol. 146 (1964), pp. 665-666.
- :4-8 H. BLAUVELT, "Neonate-Mother Relationship in Goat and Man," in B. Schaffner (ed.), *Group Processes* (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation, 1956), pp. 94-140; p. 116; *ibid.*, p. 116, H.S. Liddell.
- :9-17 R. A. MAIER, *Maternal Behavior in the Domestic Hen; III: The Role of Physical Contact*, Loyola Behavior Laboratory Series, vol. 3, No. 3 (1962-1963), pp. 1-12.
- :19-22 W. H. BURROWS and T. C. BYERLY, "The Effects of Certain Groups of Environmental Factors upon the Expression of Broodiness," *Poultry Science*, vol. 17 (1938), pp. 324-330; Y. Saeki and Y. Tanabe, "Changes in Prolactin Content of Fowl Pituitary during Broody Periods and Some Experiments on the Induction of Broodiness," *Poultry Science*, vol. 34 (1955), pp. 909-919.

## Page and Line

- :22-24 D. S. LEHRMAN, "Hormonal Regulation of Parental Behavior in Birds and Infrahuman Mammals," in W. C. Young (ed.), *Sex and the Internal Secretions* (2 vols., Baltimore: Williams & Wilkins, 1961), vol. 2, pp. 1268-1382; A. T. Cowie and S. J. Folley, "The Mammary Gland and Lactation," *ibid.*, pp. 590-642.
- :25-28 N. E. COLLIAS, "The Analysis of Socialization in Sheep and Goats," *Ecology*, vol. 37 (1956), pp. 228-239.
- 22:6-12 L. HERSHER, A. U. MOORE, and J. B. RICHMOND, "Effect of Postpartum Separation of Mother and Kid on Maternal Care in the Domestic Goat," *Science*, vol. 128 (1958), pp. 1342-1343.
- :13-18 L. HERSHER, J. B. RICHMOND, and A. U. MOORE, "Modifiability of the Critical Period for the Development of Maternal Behavior in Sheep and Goats," *Behaviour*, vol. 20 (1963), pp. 311-320.
- :19-27 B. M. MCKINNEY, "The Effects upon the Mother of Removal of the Infant Immediately after Birth," *Child-Family Digest*, vol. 10 (1954), pp. 63-65.
- :27-28 M. H. KLAUS and J. H. KENNEL, *Maternal-Infant Bonding* (St. Louis, Missouri: C. V. Mosby Co., 1976); Sheila Kitzinger, *Some Mothers' Experiences of Induced Labour* (London: The National Childbirth Trust, 1975); D. Haire, "The Cultural Warping of Childbirth," Milwaukee, Wisconsin: International Childbirth Education Association, *I.C.E.A.: News*, vol. 11 (1972), pp. 27-28.
- :29-32 H. F. HARLOW, M. K. HARLOW, and E. W. HANSEN, "The Maternal Affectional System of Rhesus Monkeys," in Rheingold (ed.), *Maternal Behavior in Mammals* (New York: Wiley, 1963), p. 268.
- 23:12-20 V. H. DENENBERG and A. E. WHIMBEY, "Behavior of Adult Rats Is Modified by the Experience Their Mothers Had as Infants," *Science*, vol. 142 (1963), pp. 1192-1193.
- :21-25 R. ADER and P. M. CONKLIN, "Handling of Pregnant Rats: Effects on Emotionality of Their Offspring," *Science*, vol. 142 (1963), pp. 412-413.
- :26-30 J. WERBOFF, A. ANDERSON, and B. N. HAGGETT, "Handling of Pregnant Mice: Gestational and Postnatal Behavioral Effects," *Physiology and Behavior*, vol. 3 (1968), pp. 35-39.
- :31 to  
24:4 A. SAYLER and M. SALMON, "Communal Nursing in Mice: Influence of Multiple Mothers on the Growth of the Young," *Science*, vol. 164 (1969), pp. 1309-1310.

## Page and Line

- 24:4-8 R. B. CAIRNS, "Fighting and Punishment from a Developmental Perspective," in *Nebraska Symposium on Motivation* (Lincoln, Nebraska: University of Nebraska Press, 1972), pp. 59-124.
- :25-30 H. SELYE, *The Physiology and Pathology of Exposure to Stress* (Montreal: Acta, 1950); C. Newman (ed.), *The Nature of Stress Disorder* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1959); H. G. Wolff, *Stress and Disease* (2nd ed., Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1968).
- :32 to O. WEININGER, "Physiological Damage under Emotional  
25:8 Stress as a Function of Early Experience," *Science*, vol. 119 (1954), pp. 285-286.
- :21-24 J. L. FULLER, "Experiential Deprivation and Later Behavior," *Science*, vol. 158 (1967), pp. 1645-1652.
- :25-31 L. HERSHER, J. B. RICHMOND, and U. MOORE, "Maternal Behavior in Sheep and Goats," in Rheingold, *Maternal Behavior in Mammals*, p. 209.
- :31-33 D. H. BARRON, "Mother-Newborn Relationship in Goats," in Schaffner, *Group Processes*, pp. 225-226.
- :36 to G. G. KARAS, "The Effect of Time and Amount of Infantile  
26:2 Experience upon Later Avoidance Learning" (M. A. thesis, Purdue University, 1957).
- :2-8 S. LEVINE and G. W. LEWIS, "Critical Period for the Effects of Infantile Experience on Maturation of Stress Response," *Science*, vol. 129 (1959), p. 42.
- :8-12 R. W. BELL, G. REISNER, and T. LINN, "Recovery From Electroconvulsive Shock as a Function of Infantile Stimulation," *Science*, vol. 133 (1961), p. 1428.
- :12-14 V. H. DENENBERG and G. G. KARAS, "Effects of Differential Handling upon Weight Gain and Mortality in the Rat and Mouse," *Science*, vol. 130 (1959), pp. 629-630; V. H. Denenberg and G. G. Karas, "Interactive Effects of Age and Duration of Infantile Experience on Adult Learning," *Psychological Reports*, vol. 7 (1960), pp. 313-322; V. H. Denenberg and G. G. Karas, "Interactive Effects of Infant and Adult Experience upon Weight Gain and Mortality in the Rat," *Journal of Comparative and Physiological Psychology*, vol. 54 (1961), pp. 658-689.
- :31-37 G. HENDRIX, J. D. VAN VALCK, and W. E. MITCHELL, "Early Handling by Humans Is Found to Benefit Horses," *New York Times*, 27 December 1968.

## Page and Line

- 27:20-31 A. F. McBRIDE and H. KRITZLER, "Observations on Pregnancy, Parturition, and Post-Natal Behavior in the Bottlenose Dolphin," *Journal of Mammalogy*, vol. 32 (1951), pp. 251-266.
- 28:2-5 R. A. GILMORE, "The Friendly Whales of Laguna San Ignacio, *Terra*, vol. 15 (1976), pp. 24-28.
- :6-19 A. GUNNER, "A London Hedgehog," *The Listener* (London), 16 February 1956, p. 255.
- 29:4-6 H. F. HARLOW, "The Nature of Love," *The American Psychologist*, vol. 13 (1958), pp. 673-685.
- :32 to Ibid., p. 676.
- 30:35
- 31:22 to HARLOW, HARLOW, and HANSEN, "The Maternal Affec-
- 32:2 tional System . . .," p. 260.
- :4-7 Ibid., p. 279.
- 33:23-26 L. L. ROTH, "Effects of Young and of Social Isolation on Maternal Behavior in the Virgin Rat," *American Zoologist*, vol. 7 (1967), p. 800.
- :26-30 J. TERKEL and J. S. ROSENBLATT, quoted in J. S. Rosenblatt, "Onset and Maintenance of Maternal Behavior in the Rat," in Lester R. Aronson, *et al.* (eds.), *Development and Evolution of Behavior* (San Francisco: W. H. Freeman & Co., 1970), pp. 502-503.
- 34:15-21 HARLOW, HARLOW, and HANSEN, "The Maternal Affec-
- :22-27 tional System . . .," pp. 260-261.
- :33-36 P. JAY, "Mother-Infant Relations in Langurs," in Rheingold, *Maternal Behavior in Mammals*, p. 286.
- PETER MARLER, "Communication in Monkeys and Apes," in I. DeVore (ed.), *Primate Behavior* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1965), p. 551.
- 35:1-2 H. HEDIGER, *Wild Animals in Captivity* (London: Butterworth, 1950).
- :7-10 A. JOLLY, *The Evolution of Primate Behavior* (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1972).
- :10-14 T. R. ANTHONY, "The Ontogeny of Greeting, Grooming, and Sexual Motor Patterns in Captive Baboons (Superspecies *Papio cynocephalus*)," *Behaviour*, vol. 31 (1968), pp. 358-372; J. Sparks, "Allogrooming in Primates: A Review," in Desmond Morris, ed., *Primate Ethology* (Chicago: Aldine Publishing Co., 1967), pp. 148-175.
- :17-23 J. VAN LAWICK-GOODALL, "Mother-Offspring Relation-

## Page and Line

- ships in Free-Hanging Chimpanzees," in *ibid.*, pp. 287-346.
- :24-28 JOLLY, *Primate Behavior*.
- :28-30 ANTHONY, "Patterns in Captive Baboons," pp. 358-372.

## CHAPTER TWO. THE WOMB OF TIME

- 38:7-17 MAY SARTON, "An Informal Portrait of George Sarton," *Texas Quarterly*, Autumn 1962, p. 105.
- 42:22-25 R. W. JONDORF, R. P. MAICHEL, and B. B. BRODIE, "Inability of Newborn Mice and Guinea Pigs to Metabolize Drugs," *Biochemical Pharmacology*, vol. 1 (1958), pp. 352-354.
- :27-29 I. D. ROSS and I. F. DEFORGES, "Further Evidence of Deficient Enzyme Activity in the Newborn Period," *Pediatrics*, vol. 23 (1959), pp. 718-725.
- :29-33 C. SMITH, *The Physiology of the Newborn Infant* (3rd ed., Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1960); E. H. Watson and G. H. Lowrey, *Growth and Development of Children* (5th ed., Chicago: Yearbook Medical Publishers, 1967), pp. 203-204; C. A. Villee, "Enzymes in the Development of Homeostatic Mechanisms," in G. W. Wolstenholme and M. O'Connor (eds.), *Somatic Stability in the Newly Born* (Boston: Little, Brown, 1961), pp. 246-278; H. F. R. Prechtl, "Problems of Behavioral Studies in the Newborn Infant," in D. S. Lehrman, R. A. Hinde, and E. Shaw (eds.), *Advances in the Study of Behavior* (2 vols., New York: Academic Press, 1965), vol. 1, p. 79.
- 43:26-36 A. MONTAGU, *The Human Revolution* (New York: Bantam Books, 1967), pp. 126-138; A. Montagu, "Time, Morphology and Neoteny in the Evolution of Man," *American Anthropologist*, vol. 57 (1955), pp. 13-27; A. Montagu, "Neoteny and the Evolution of the Human Mind," *Explorations*, No. 6 (Toronto, 1956), pp. 85-90; G. De Beer, *Embryos and Ancestors* (3rd ed., New York: Oxford University Press, 1958); F. Kovács, "Biological Interpretation of the Nine Months Duration of human Pregnancy," *Acta Biologica Magyar*, vol. 10 (1960), pp. 331-361; A. Portmann, *Biologische Fragmente* (Basel: Benno Schwabe & Co., 1944); A. Montagu, "The Origin and Significance of Neonatal Immaturity in Man," *Journal of the American Medical Association*, vol. 178 (1961), pp. 156-157.

## Page and Line

- 44:5-7 J. BOSTOCK, "Exterior Gestation, Primitive Sleep, Enuresis and Asthma: A Study in Aetiology," *Medical Journal of Australia*, vol. 2 (1958), pp. 149-153; 185-188.
- 44:13-16 D. B. and E. F. P. JELLIFE, "Human Milk, Nutrition, and the World Resource Crisis," *Science*, vol. 188 (1975), pp. 557-561.
- 46:17-30 A. MONTAGU, *Prenatal Influences* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1962), pp. 413-414; P. Gruenwald, "The Fetus in Prolonged Pregnancy," *American Journal of Obstetrics and Gynecology*, vol. 89 (1964), pp. 503-505; P. B. Mead, "Prolonged Pregnancy," *American Journal of Obstetrics and Gynecology*, vol. 89 (1964), pp. 495-502; W. E. Lucas, "The Problems of Postterm Pregnancy," *American Journal of Obstetrics and Gynecology*, vol. 91 (1965), pp. 241-250; M. Zwerdling, "Complications of Prolonged Pregnancies," *Journal of the American Medical Association*, vol. 195 (1966), pp. 39-40; R. L. Naeye, "Infants of Prolonged Gestation," *Archives of Pathology*, vol. 84 (1967), pp. 37-41.
- 47:21-25 A. MONTAGU, *Prenatal Influences*; A. Montagu, *Life Before Birth* (New York: New American Library, 1964); N. J. Berrill, *The Person in the Womb* (New York: Dodd, Mead), 1968.
- 51:28-33 C. M. DRILLIEN, "Physical and Mental Handicap in the Prematurely Born," *Journal of Obstetrics and Gynaecology of the British Empire*, vol. 66 (1959), pp. 721-728; see also B. Corner, *Prematures* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1960).
- :34 to M. SHIRLEY, "A Behavior Syndrome Characterizing Prema-  
52:24 turely-Born Children," *Child Development*, vol. 10 (1939), pp. 115-128.
- :29 to A. J. SCHAFFER, *Diseases of the Newborn* (Philadelphia:  
53:1 W. B. Saunders, 1965), pp. 45-46.
- :2-4 A. P. KIMBALL and R. J. OLIVER, "Extra-Amniotic Caesar-  
ean Section in the Prevention of Fatal Hyaline Membrane  
Disease," *American Journal of Obstetrics and Gynecology*,  
vol. 90 (1964), pp. 919-924.
- :10-12 R. J. MCKAY, JR., and C. A. SMITH, in W. E. NELSON (ed.),  
*Textbook of Pediatrics* (7th ed., Philadelphia: W. B. Saun-  
ders, 1959), p. 286.
- :13-24 G. W. MEIER, "Behavior of Infant Monkeys: Differences  
Attributable to Mode of Birth," *Science*, vol. 143 (1964),  
pp. 968-970.

## Page and Line

- :30-35 S. SEGAL, in T. K. OLIVER, JR. (ed.), *Neonatal Respiratory Adaptation* (Bethesda, Maryland: U. S. Dept. of Health, Education, and Welfare, National Institutes of Health, 1966), pp. 183-188.
- :36 to  
54:2 T. K. OLIVER, JR., A. DEMIS, and G. D. BATES, "Serial Blood-Gas Tensions and Acid-Base Balance during the First Hour of Life in Human Infants," *Acta Paediatrica*, vol. 50 (Stockholm, 1961), pp. 346-360.
- :3-11 M. CORNBATH, *et al.*, "Studies of Carbohydrate Metabolism in the Newborn Infant," *Pediatrics*, vol. 27 (1961), pp. 378-389.
- :14-17 L. J. GROTA, V. H. DENENBERG, and M. X. ZARROW, "Neonatal Versus Caesarean Delivery: Effects upon Survival Probability, Weaning Weight, and Open-Field Activity," *Journal of Comparative and Physiological Psychology*, vol. 61 (1966), pp. 159-160.
- :37 to  
55:20 W. J. PIEPER, E. E. LESSING, and H. A. GREENBERG, "Personality Traits in Cesarean-Normally Delivered Children," *Archives of General Psychiatry*, vol. 2 (1964), pp. 466-471.
- :32-34 M. STRAKER, "Comparative Studies of Effects of Normal and Caesarean Delivery upon Later Manifestations of Anxiety," *Comprehensive Psychiatry*, vol. 3 (1962), pp. 113-124.
- :34-37 W. T. LIBERSON and W. H. FRAZIER, "Evaluation of EEG Patterns of Newborn Babies," *American Journal of Psychiatry*, vol. 118 (1962), pp. 1125-1131.
- 56:5-17 D. H. BARRON, "Mother-Newborn Relationships in Goats," in B. Schaffner (ed.), *Group Processes* (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation, 1955), p. 225.
- :18-33 *Ibid.*, p. 226.
- :34-37 MEIER, "Behavior of Infant Monkeys . . .", *Science*, vol. 143 (1964), pp. 968-970.
- :37 to  
57:5 R. A. MCCANCE and M. OTLEY, "Course of the Blood Urea in Newborn Rats, Pigs and Kittens," *Journal of Physiology*, vol. 113 (1951), pp. 18-22.
- :11-12 H. B. PACK, "Mother-Newborn Relationship in Goats," in Schaffner, *Group Processes*, p. 228.
- :13-14 Editorial, "The Gut and the Skin," *Journal of the American Medical Association*, vol. 196 (1966), pp. 1151-1152.
- :14-16 M. E. OBERMAYER, *Psychocutaneous Medicine* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1955), pp. 376-377; L. Fry, S. Shuster, and R. M. H. McMinn, "The Small Intestine in Skin Disease," *Archives of Dermatology*, vol. 93



## Page and Line

- (1966), pp. 647-653; M. L. Johnson and H. T. H. Wilson, "Skin Lesions in Ulcerative Colitis," *Gut*, vol. 10 (1969), pp. 255-263.
- :17-26 F. REITZENSTEIN, "Aberglauben," in M. Marcuse (ed.), *Handwörterbuch der Sexualwissenschaft* (2nd ed., Bonn: Marcus & Weber, 1926), p. 5.
- CHAPTER THREE. BREASTFEEDING
- 59:1-3 O. RANK, *The Trauma of Birth* (London: Allen & Unwin, 1929).
- 61:31-33 Personal communication, 2 April 1976.
- :35 to Associated Press, May 1975. See also *Leaven*, La Leche
- 62:12 League International, Franklin Park, Illinois, July-August 1975, p. 21.
- :25-33 *Infant Care* (Washington, D. C.: U. S. Government Printing Office, 1963), p. 16.
- 63:30-32 M. H. KLAUS and J. H. KENNEL, *Maternal-Infant Bonding* (St. Louis, Missouri: C. V. Mosby Co., 1976).
- :34 to M. P. MIDDLEMORE, *The Nursing Couple* (London: Cassell,
- 64:1 1941), pp. 18-19.
- :24-26 T. SMITH and R. B. LITTLE, "The Significance of Colostrum to the New-Born Calf," *Journal of Experimental Medicine*, vol. 36 (1922), pp. 181-198.
- :26-32 J. A. TOOMEY, "Agglutinins in Mother's Blood, Mother's Milk, and Placental Blood," *American Journal of Diseases of Children*, vol. 47 (1934), pp. 521-528; J. A. Toomey, "Infection and Immunity," *Journal of Pediatrics*, vol. 4 (1934), pp. 529-539.
- 66:15-17 N. BLURTON JONES, "Comparative Aspects of Mother-Child Contact," in N. Blurton Jones (ed.), *Ethological Studies of Child Behaviour* (Cambridge: The University Press, 1972), pp. 305-328.
- :17-25 D. M. BEN SHAUL, "The Composition of the Milk of Wild Animals," *International Zoo Yearbook*, vol. 4, 1962, pp. 333-342.
- :31-34 R. C. BOELKINS, "Large-Scale Rearing of Infant Rhesus Monkeys (*M. mulatta*) in the Laboratory," *International Zoo Yearbook*, *ibid.*, pp. 286-289.
- 67:1-11 ALBRECHT PEIPER, *Cerebral Function in Infancy and Childhood* (New York: Consultants Bureau, 1963), pp. 570-571.
- :13-17 T. J. CRONIN, "Influence of Lactation upon Ovulation," *The*

## Page and Line

- Lancet*, vol. 2 (1968), pp. 422-424; R. Gioiosa, "Incidence of Pregnancy during Lactation in 500 Cases," *American Journal of Obstetrics and Gynecology*, vol. 70 (1955), pp. 162-174; I. C. Udesky, "Ovulation and Lactating Women," *American Journal of Obstetrics and Gynecology*, vol. 59 (1950), pp. 843-851; N. L. Solien de Gonzales, "Lactation and Pregnancy: A Hypothesis," *American Anthropologist*, vol. 66 (1964), pp. 873-878.
- :18-20 D. B. and E. F. P. JELLIFE, "Human Milk, Nutrition, and the World Resource Crisis," *Science*, vol. 188 (1975), pp. 557-561.
- :21-28 E. R. KIMBALL, "How I Get Mothers to Breastfeed," OB/GYN's Supplement in *Physician's Management*, June 1968.
- :29-37 C. HOEFER and M. C. HARDY, "Later Development of Breast Fed and Artificially Fed Infants," *Journal of the American Medical Association*, vol. 96 (1929), pp. 615-619.
- 68:2-20 "Phenotype: Postnatal Development," *Science*, vol. 159 (1968), pp. 658-659.
- :29 to F. M. POTTENGER, JR., and B. KROHN, "Influence of Breast  
69:2 Feeding on Facial Development," *Archives of Pediatrics*, vol. 67 (1950), pp. 454-461; F. M. Pottenger, Jr., "The Responsibility of the Pediatrician in the Orthodontic Problem," *California Medicine*, vol. 65 (1946), pp. 169-170.
- :14-17 PHILIP SLATER, *Earthwalk* (New York: Doubleday, 1974), p. 188.
- :19-23 MARGARET WRIGHT, "On the Importance of Skin Contact," *Sounding Board*, vol. 3, no. 4 (1969), p. 7.
- :27-29 W. PAINTER, *The Palace of Pleasure* (London: Tottell and Jones, 1566), I, 43.
- :30 to FRANCES E. BROAD, "The Effects of Infant Feeding on  
70:12 Speech Quality," *New Zealand Medical Journal*, vol. 76 (1972), pp. 28-31; Frances E. Broad, "Further Studies on the Effects of Infant Feeding on Speech Quality," *New Zealand Medical Journal*, vol. 82 (1975), pp. 373-376; Frances E. Broad, "Suckling and Speech," *Parents Centres Bulletin* 53, November 1972, pp. 4-6.
- :13-14 D. L. RAPHAEL, "The Lactation-Suckling Process within a Matrix of Supportive Behavior" (Ph. D. diss., Columbia University, 1966), p. 246.
- :14-17 See Chapter 2 of the above work for a survey of the ethological evidence.
- :17-19 For further discussion of this subject see F. H. Richardson,

## Page and Line

- The Nursing Mother* (New York: Prentice-Hall, 1953); M. P. Middlemore, *The Nursing Couple* (London: Cassell & Co., 1953); La Leche League International, *The Womanly Art of Breastfeeding* (Franklin Park, Illinois, 1963); B. M. Caldwell, "The Effects of Infant Care," in M. L. Hoffman and L. W. Hoffman (eds.), *Review of Child Development Research* (New York: Russell Sage Foundation, 1964), vol. 1, pp. ii-41.
- 71:3-25 M. KING, *Truby King the Man* (London: Allen & Unwin, 1948), pp. 170-178.
- 72:14-22 Ibid., p. 167.
- :27 to H. MOLTZ, R. LEVIN, and M. LEON, "Prolactin in the Postpartum Rat: Synthesis and Release in the Absence of Suckling Stimulation," *Science*, vol. 163 (1969), pp. 1083-1084.
- 73:4 S. LORAND and S. ASBOT, "Über die durch Reizung der Brustwarze reflektorischen Uterus Kontraktionen," *Zentralblatt für Gynäkologie*, vol. 74 (1952), pp. 345-352.
- :10-12
- 74:1-15 E. DARWIN, *Zoonomia, or the Laws of Organic Life* (4 vols., 3rd ed., London: J. Johnson, 1801), vol. 1, p. 206.
- :21-35 Ibid., p. 210.
- 75:10-22 R. ST. BARBE BAKER, *Kabongo* (New York: A. S. Barnes & Co., 1955), p. 18.

## CHAPTER FOUR. TENDER, LOVING CARE

- 76:3 to J. L. HALLIDAY, *Psychosocial Medicine: A Study of the Sick Society* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1948), pp. 244-245.
- 77:12
- :18-21 H. D. CHAPIN, "A Plea for Accurate Statistics in Children's Institutions," *Transactions of the American Pediatric Society*, vol. 27 (1915), p. 180.
- 78:13-22 F. TALBOT, "Discussion," *Transactions of the American Pediatric Society*, vol. 62 (1941), p. 469.
- :26-28 L. E. HOLT, *The Care and Feeding of Children* (15th ed., New York: Appleton-Century, 1935); E. Holt, Jr., *Holt's Care and Feeding of Children* (New York: Appleton-Century, 1948).
- 79:14-18 J. Brennemann, "The Infant Ward," *American Journal of Diseases of Children*, vol. 43 (1932), p. 577.
- :18-21 H. BAKWIN, "Emotional Deprivation in Infants," *Journal of Pediatrics*, vol. 35 (1949), pp. 512-521.
- 79:37 to M. H. ELLIOTT and F. H. HALL, *Laura Bridgman* (Boston: Little, Brown, 1903); Helen Keller, *The Story of My Life* (New York: Doubleday, 1954).
- 80:16

## Page and Line

- :17-36 K. DAVIS, "Extreme Social Isolation of a Child," *American Journal of Sociology*, vol. 45 (1940), pp. 554-565; K. Davis, "Final Note on a Case of Extreme Isolation," *American Journal of Sociology*, vol. 52 (1947), pp. 432-437; M. K. Mason, "Learning to Speak after Six and One Half Years," *Journal of Speech Disorders*, vol. 7 (1942), pp. 295-304.
- 81:20-32 The historian Salimbene (13th Century), in J. B. Ross and M. M. McLaughlin (eds.) *A Portable Medieval Reader* (New York: Viking Press, 1949), p. 366.
- 82:3-10 H. BAKWIN, "Emotional Deprivation in Infants," *Journal of Pediatrics*, vol. 35 (1949), pp. 512-521.
- :13-17 "Annotation, Perinatal Body Temperatures," *The Lancet*, vol. 1 (1968), p. 964.
- :20-21 B. D. BOWER, "Neonatal Cold Injury," *The Lancet*, vol. 1 (1962), p. 426.
- :27 to O. FENICHEL, *The Psychoanalytic Theory of Neurosis* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1945), pp. 69-70.
- 83:3 Editorial, "At What Temperature Should You Keep a Baby?" *The Lancet*, vol. 2 (1970), p. 556.
- :4-10
- :19-23 L. GLASS, "Wrapping Up Small Babies," *The Lancet*, vol. 2 (1970), pp. 1039-1040.
- 83:24-28 J. W. SCOPES, "Control of Body Temperature in Newborn Babies," in *The Scientific Basis of Medicine, Annual Reviews* (London: The Athlone Press, 1970), pp. 31-50.
- :29 to W. AHERNE and D. HULL, "The Site of Heat Production in the Newborn Infant," *Proceedings of the Royal Society of Medicine*, vol. 57 (1964), pp. 1172-1173.
- 84:3
- :7-8 F. A. GELDARD, *The Human Senses* (New York: Wiley, 1953), pp. 211-232.
- :7-14 T. P. MANN and R. I. K. ELIOT, "Neonatal Cold Injury Due to Accidental Exposure to Cold," *The Lancet*, vol. 1 (1957), pp. 229-234; W. A. Silverman, J. W. Fertig, and A. P. Berger, "The Influence of the Thermal Environment upon the Survival of Newly Born Premature Infants," *Pediatrics*, vol. 22 (1958), pp. 876-886.
- :18-25 E. N. HEY, S. KOHLINSKY, and B. O'CONNELL, "Heat-Losses from Babies during Exchange Transfusion," *The Lancet*, vol. 1 (1969), pp. 335-338.
- :26-27 C. P. BOYAN, "Cold or Warmed Blood for Massive Transfusions," *Annals of Surgery*, vol. 160 (1964), pp. 282-286.

## Page and Line

- 85:11-13 M. S. ELDER, "The Effects of Temperature and Position on the Sucking Pressure of Newborn Infants," *Child Development*, vol. 41 (1970), pp. 94-102.
- :13-16 R. E. COOKE, "The Behavioral Response of Infants to Heat Stress," *Yale Journal of Biology and Medicine*, vol. 24 (1952), pp. 334-340.
- :27-30 T. SCHAEFER, JR., F. S. WEINGARTEN, and J. C. TOWNE, "Temperature Change: The Basic Variable in the Early Handling Phenomenon?" *Science*, vol. 135 (1962), pp. 41-42.
- :30-33 R. ADER, "The Basic Variable in the Early Handling Phenomenon," *Science*, vol. 136 (1962), pp. 580-583; also G. W. Meier, pp. 583-584, and T. Schaefer, Jr., *et al.*, "Temperature Change . . .", *Science*, pp. 584-587.
- 87:9-11 R. G. PATTON and L. I. GARDNER, *Growth Failure in Maternal Deprivation* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1963).
- :20-23 R. L. BIRDWHISTELL, "Kinesic Analysis of Filmed Behavior of Children," in B. Schaffner (ed.), *Group Processes* (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation, 1956), p. 143; R. L. Birdwhistell, *Kinesics and Context* (Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1970); J. Fast, *Body Language* (New York: M. Evans, 1970); see also M. ARGYLE, *Bodily Communication* (New York: International Universities Press, 1975); M. Argyle and M. Cook, *Gaze and Mutual Gaze* (London & New York: Cambridge University Press, 1976).
- 88:11-13 P. LACOMBE, "Du Rôle de la Peau dans l'Attachement Mère-Enfant," *Revue Française du Psychoanalyse*, vol. 23 (1959), pp. 83-101.
- :19 to P. F. D. SEITZ, "Psychocutaneous Conditioning during the  
89:30 First Two Weeks of Life," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, vol. 12 (1950), pp. 187-188.
- 91:20-33 M. A. RIBBLE, "Disorganizing Factors of Infant Personality," *American Journal of Psychiatry*, vol. 98 (1941), pp. 459-463.
- 92:8-9 L. S. KUBIE, "Instincts and Homeostasis," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, vol. 10 (1948), pp. 15-30.
- :28-30 D. B. DILL, *Life, Heat, and Altitude* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1938).
- 93:12-14 V. V. ROZANOV, *Solitaria* (London: Wishart, 1927).
- 94:14-24 M. I. HEINSTEIN, "Behavioral Correlates of Breast-Bottle

## Page and Line

- Regimes under Varying Parent-Infant Relationships," *Monographs of the Society for Child Growth and Development*, Serial No. 88, vol. 28, no. 4 (1963); M. I. Heinsteins, "Influence of Breast Feeding on Children's Behavior," *Children*, vol. 10 (1963), pp. 93-97.
- 95:25-30 G. STANLEY HALL, "Notes on the Study of Infants," *Pedagogical Seminary*, vol. 1 (1891), pp. 127-138.
- :33 to S. FREUD, *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality* [1905] (London: Imago, 1949), p. 60.
- 96:11 S. RADO, "The Psychical Effects of Intoxication," *Psychoanalytic Review*, vol. 18 (1931), pp. 69-84.
- :29-33 H. F. HARLOW and M. K. HARLOW, "The Effect of Rearing Conditions on Behavior," in John Money (ed.), *Sex Research: New Developments* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1965), pp. 161-175.
- 97:7-22 G. W. HENRY, *All The Sexes* (New York: Rinehart, 1955); R. J. Stoller, *Sex and Gender* (New York: Science House, 1968); S. Brody, *Patterns of Mothering* (New York: International Universities Press, 1956).
- :31-33 M. P. MIDDLEMORE, *The Nursing Couple* (London: Cassell, 1941).
- 97:33 to 98:1 L. J. YARROW, "Maternal Deprivation: Toward an Empirical and Conceptual Re-valuation," *Psychological Bulletin*, vol. 58 (1961), pp. 459-490; p. 485. See also John Bowlby, *Attachment and Loss*, vol. 1, *Attachment* (New York: Basic Books, 1969).
- :6-10 E. GAMPER, "Bau und Leistung eines menschlichen Mittelhirnwesens, II," *Zeitschrift für die Gesamte Neurologie und Psychiatrie*, vol. 104 (1926), pp. 48 et seq.
- :18-24 R. A. SPITZ, *No and Yes* (New York: International Universities Press 1957), pp. 21-22.
- :34 to 99:2 I. DEVORE, "Mother-Infant Relations in Free-Ranging Baboons," in H. L. Rheingold (ed.), *Maternal Behavior in Mammals* (New York: Wiley, 1963), p. 312.
- :4-11 *Ibid.*, pp. 314, 317-318.
- :15-17 R. LANG, *The Birth Book* (Palo Alto, California: Science and Behavior Books, 1972); M. H. Klaus and J. H. Kennell, *Maternal-Infant Bonding* (St. Louis, Missouri: 1976), p. 73.
- :33-36 W. ONG, *The Presence of the Word* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1967), pp. 169-170.
- 100:24-26 ABRAHAM LEVITSKY, quoted by Richard Register, "In
- :26-29

## Page and Line

- Touch with Feeling," *Human Behavior*, vol. 4 (1975), pp. 16-23.
- 101:2-15 JOSÉ ORTEGA Y GASSET, *Man and People* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1957), pp. 72 et seq.
- :25-29 M. A. RIBBLE, *The Rights of Infants* (2nd ed., New York: Columbia University Press).
- :37 to W. HOFFER, "Mouth, Hand, and Ego-Integration," in A. Freud, *et al.* (eds.), *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, vols. 3/4 (New York: International Universities Press, 1949), pp. 49-56; W. Hoffer, "Development of the Body Ego," in *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, vol. 5 (New York: International Universities Press, 1950), pp. 18-23.
- 102:3
- :7-8 J. W. WIEFFENBACH (ed.) *Taste and Development* (Bethesda, Maryland: U. S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, Publication N. NIH 77-1068, 1977); G. H. Nowlis and W. Kessen, "Human Newborns Differentiate Differing Concentrations of Sucrose and Glucose," *Science*, vol. 191 (1976), pp. 865-866.
- 104:9-17 BRUNO BETTELHEIM, "Where Self Begins," *The New York Times Magazine*, 12 February 1967. Reprinted in *Child and Family*, vol. 7 (1967), pp. 5-9.
- :35 to RAVEN LANG, "Delivery in the Home," in Marshall S. Klaus, T. Leger, and Mary Anne Trause (eds.), *Maternal Attachment and Mothering Disorders: A Round Table* (New Brunswick, New Jersey: Johnson & Johnson, 1975), pp. 45-49.
- 107:3
- :5-30 R. RUBIN, "Maternal Touch," *Nursing Outlook*, vol. 11 (1963), pp. 828-831.
- 108:15-19 M. PAPOUSEK, "Discussion," in M. A. Hofer (ed.), *Parent-Infant Interaction* (New York & Amsterdam: Elsevier, 1975), p. 82.
- :22-26 M. H. KLAUS, J. H. KENNEL, N. PLUMB, and S. ZUEHLKE, "Human Maternal Behavior at the First Contact with Her Young," *Pediatrics*, vol. 46 (1970), pp. 187-192.
- :32 to C. R. BARNETT, P. H. LEIDERMAN, R. GROBSTEIN, and K. MARSHALL, "Neonatal Separation: the Maternal Side of Interactional Deprivation," *Pediatrics*, vol. 45 (1970), pp. 197-205.
- 109:1
- :1-2 C. P. S. WILLIAMS and T. K. OLIVER, JR., "Nursery Routines and Staphylococcal Colonization of the Newborn," *Pediatrics*, vol. 44 (1969), pp. 640-646.

## Page and Line

- :4-21 Editorial, "Mothers of Premature Babies," *British Medical Journal*, 6 June 1970, p. 556.
- 109:25 to SHEILA KITZINGER, *Some Mothers' Experiences of Induced*  
110:21 *Labour* (London: The National Childbirth Trust, 1975).
- :27 to KLAUS and KENNEL, *Maternal-Infant Bonding*, p. 51.
- 111:1
- :7-16 Ibid., pp. 93-94.
- :22-24 E. FURMAN, In Klaus and Kennell, *Maternal-Infant Bonding*, p. 52.
- :25-35 M. J. SEASHORE, A. D. LEIFER, C. R. BARNETT, and P. H. LEIDERMAN, "The Effects of Denial of Early Mother-Infant Interaction on Maternal Self-Confidence," *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, vol. 26 (1973), pp. 369-378.
- :36 to P. H. LEIDERMAN, "Mother-Infant Separation: Delayed  
112:11 Consequences," in Klaus, Leger, and Trause, *Maternal Attachment and Mothering Disorders: A Round Table*, pp. 67-70.
- :18-28 P. DE CHATEAU, "Neonatal Care Routines: Influences on Maternal and Infant Behavior and on Breast Feeding," (Doctoral thesis, Umea University Medical Dissertations, N.S., no. 20) Umea, Sweden, 1976, quoted in Klaus and Kennell, *Maternal Infant-Bonding*, pp. 62-65.
- 113:18-28 M. A. HOFER, "Infant Separation Responses and the Maternal Role," *Biological Psychiatry*, vol. 10 (1975), pp. 149-153.
- :28-30 M. A. HOFER, "Studies on How Maternal Separation Produces Behavioral Change in Young Rats," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, vol. 37 (1975), pp. 245-264; M. A. Hofer, "Physiological and Behavioural Processes in Early Maternal Deprivation," in D. Hill (ed.), *Physiology, Emotion and Psychosomatic Illness* (London & Amsterdam: Elsevier, 1972), pp. 175-200; M. A. Hofer, "Maternal Separation Affects Infant Rats' Behavior," *Behavioral Biology*, vol. 9 (1973), pp. 629-633.
- :31 to HOFER, "Physiological and Behavioural Processes in Early  
114:2 Maternal Deprivation," p. 185.
- :23-31 KLAUS, LEGER, and TRAUSE, *Maternal Attachment and Mothering Disorders: A Round Table*, p. 43.
- 115:1-12 G. BATESON and M. MEAD, *Balinese Character* (Special Publication, New York: New York Academy of Sciences, 1942), p. 30.



## Page and Line

- 116:3-5 R. S. ILLINGWORTH, *The Development of the Infant and Young Child* (Edinburgh: Livingstone, 1960), pp. 130-132.
- 116:9-15 E. L. THORNDIKE, *Animal Intelligence* (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1911), p. 244. For an account of learning theory see A. Montagu, *The Direction of Human Development* (Revised edition, New York: Hawthorn Books, 1970), pp. 317-345.
- 117:12-15 M. MEAD and F. C. MACGREGOR, *Growth and Culture* (New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1951), pp. 42-43.
- :19-24 C. MCPHEE, quoted in Mead and Macgregor, *Growth and Culture*, p. 43. See also C. McPhee, *Music in Bali* (New Haven: Yale University Press), 1966.
- :24-27 B. NETTL, *Ethnomusicology* (New York: Free Press, 1964).
- 119:17-20 MEAD and MACGREGOR, *Growth and Culture*, p. 50.
- 120:20-27 J. ZAHOVSKY, "Discard of the Cradle," *Journal of Pediatrics*, vol. 4 (1934), pp. 660-667.
- 122:36 to J. B. WATSON, *Psychological Care of Infant and Child* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1928).
- 123:13
- 124:20 to B. CHISHOLM, *Prescription for Survival* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1957), pp. 37-38.
- 125:20
- 126:14-21 E. SYLVESTER, "Discussion," in M. J. E. Senn (ed.), *Problems of Infancy* (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation, 1953), p. 29.
- :29-31 A. B. BERGMAN, J. B. BECKWITH, and C. G. RAY (eds.), *Sudden Infant Death Syndrome* (Seattle: University of Washington Press, 1970).
- 127:20-25 A. PEIPER, *Cerebral Function in Infancy and Childhood* (New York: Consultants' Bureau, 1963), p. 606.
- :29-31 G. R. FORRER, *Weaning and Human Development* (New York: Libra Publishers, 1969).
- 128:27-36 ZAHOVSKY, "Discard of the Cradle," pp. 660-670; see also Ashley Montagu, "What Ever Happened to the Cradle?" *Family Weekly* (New York), 14 May 1967.
- 129:16-33 M. A. POWELL, "Riverside Is Rockin' Along With Old-Fashioned Rhythm," *Toledo Blade Sun*, 2 February 1958, p. 13.
- 130:5-14 M. NEAL, "Vestibular Stimulation and Developmental Behavior of the Small Premature Infant," *Nursing Research Report*, vol. 3, nos. 1-4, New York: American Nurses Foundation, 1968.
- :19-27 J. M. WOODCOCK, "The Effects of Rocking Stimulation on

## Page and Line

- the Neonatus Reactivity," Purdue University, Lafayette, Indiana, 1969.
- 131:11-21 J. C. SOLOMON, "Passive Motion and Infancy," *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, vol. 29 (1959), pp. 650-651.
- :22-33 W. J. GREENE, JR., "Early Object Relations, Somatic, Affective, and Personal," *The Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, vol. 126 (1958), pp. 225-253.
- 132:5-14 W. J. GREENE, JR., quoted by A. P. Shasberg, "Of Reading, Rocking, and Rollicking," *New York Times Magazine*, 5 January 1969.
- :21-28 D. G. FREEDMAN, H. BOVERMAN, and N. FREEDMAN, "Effects of Kinesthetic Stimulation on Weight Gain and Smiling in Premature Infants," paper presented at the meeting of the American Orthopsychiatry Association, San Francisco, April 1960.
- :33 to N. SOKOLOFF, S. YAFFE, D. WEINTRAUB, and B. BLASE,  
133:8 "Effects of Handling on the Subsequent Development of Premature Infants," *Developmental Psychology*, vol. 1 (1969), pp. 765-768.
- :8-13 E. G. HASSELMAYER, "The Premature Neonate's Response to Handling," *Journal of the American Nurses Association*, vol. 2 (1964), pp. 14-15.
- 133:14 to KLAUS and KENNEL, *Maternal-Infant Bonding*,  
134:8 pp. 99-166.
- :9-11 A. J. SOLNIT, "Comment," in *ibid.*, p. 190.
- 134:30 to W. A. MASON, "Early Deprivation in the Nonhuman Pri-  
135:5 mates: Implications for Human Behavior," in D. C. Glass (ed.), *Environmental Influences* (New York: The Rockefeller University Press, 1968), pp. 70-101.
- 136:4-10 L. H. FUCHS, *Family Matters* (New York: Random House, 1972), p. 57.
- :14-18 S. CARRIGHAR, *Home to the Wilderness* (Baltimore: Penguin Books, 1974), p. 37.
- :19-21 E. CARPENTER, *Oh, What a Blow the Phantom Gave Me* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1973), p. 23.
- :22-27 L. K. FRANK, "Tactile Communication," *Genetic Psychology Monographs*, vol. 56 (1957), p. 227.
- 137:14-21 W. DEVLIN, "Touch Dancing—Where It's At," *Harpers Bazaar*, February 1974, p. 131.
- 138:9-28 L. SALK, "The Effects of the Normal Heartbeat Sound on the

## Page and Line

- Behavior of the Newborn Infant: Implications for Mental Health," *World Mental Health*, vol. 12 (1960), pp. 1-8.
- 139:6-17 J. A. M. MEERLOO, *The Dance* (Philadelphia: Chilton Co., 1960), pp. 13-14.
- :23 to Ibid., pp. 15-16.
- 140:9
- :10-18 Ibid., p. 35.
- 142:9-15 O. C. IRWIN and L. WEISS, "The Effect of Clothing and Vocal Activity of the Newborn Infant," in W. Dennis (ed.), *Readings in Child Psychology* (New York: Prentice-Hall, 1951).
- 143:35 to L. WILSON, "Of Babies and Water Beds," *Childbirth and Parent Education Association*, Miami, Florida, Newsletter, vol. 8, no. 9, September 1973.
- 144:10
- :15-19 J. C. FLÜGEL, *The Psychology of Clothes* (London: Hogarth Press, 1930), p. 87; J. C. FLÜGEL, "Clothes Symbolism and Clothes Ambivalence," *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, vol. 10 (1929), p. 205.
- :27 to W. E. HARTMAN, M. FITHIAN, and D. JOHNSON, *Nudist Society* (New York: Crown, 1970), pp. 289, 293.
- 145:10
- :24-27 K. STEWART, *Pygmies and Dream Giants* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1954), p. 105.
- 146:11-13 S. R. ARBEIT, B. PARKER, and I. L. RUBIN, "Controlling the Electrocutation Hazard in the Hospital," *Journal of the American Medical Association*, vol. 220 (1972), pp. 1581-1584.
- :20-21 JULES ROMAINS, *Vision Extra-Rétinienne* (Paris, 1919; English translation, *Eyeless Sight*, New York: Putnam, 1924).
- :30-32 M. GARDNER, "Dermo-Optical Perception: A Peek Down the Nose," *Science*, vol. 151 (1966), pp. 654-657.
- 147:35 to M. R. OSTROW, "Dermographia: A Critical Review," *Annals of Allergy*, vol. 25 (1967), pp. 591-597.
- 148:2
- :17 to P. BACH-Y-RITA, "System May Let Blind 'See with Their Skins,'" *Journal of the American Medical Association*, vol. 207 (1967), pp. 2204-2205.
- 149:2
- :5-21 F. A. GELDARD, "Body English," *Readings in Psychology Today* (Del Mar, California: CRM Associates, 1969), pp. 237-241; F. A. Geldard, "Some Neglected Possibilities of Communication," *Science*, vol. 131 (1960), pp. 1583-1588. See also J. R. Hennessy, "Cutaneous Sensitivity Communication," *Human Factors*, vol. 8 (1966), pp. 463-

## Page and Line

- 469; G. A. Gescheider, "Cutaneous Sound Localization" (Ph.D. diss., University of Virginia, 1964); G. von Békésy, "Similarities between Hearing and Skin Sensation," *Psychological Reviews*, vol. 66 (1959), pp. 1-22.
- :25-27 "Replacing Braille?" *Time*, 19 September 1969.
- :27 to B. VON HALLER GILMER and L. W. GREGG, "The Skin as  
150:4 a Channel of Communication," *Etc.*, vol. 18 (1961),  
pp. 199-209.
- :7-8 J. F. HAHN, "Cutaneous Vibratory Thresholds for Square-  
Wave Electrical Pulses," *Science*, vol. 127 (1958),  
pp. 879-880.
- 151:5-12 H. MUSAPH, *Itching and Scratching: Psychodynamics in Der-  
matology* (Philadelphia: F. A. Davis Co., 1964).
- :12-18 P. F. D. SEITZ, "Psychocutaneous Aspects of Persistent  
Pruritis and Excessive Excoriation," *Archives of Dermatol-  
ogy and Syphilology*, vol. 64 (1951), pp. 136-141; M. E.  
Obermayer, *Psychocutaneous Medicine* (Springfield; Illi-  
nois: Charles C Thomas, 1955); S. Ayres, "The Fine Art  
of Scratching," *Journal of the American Medical Associa-  
tion*, vol. 189 (1964), pp. 1003-1007; J. J. Kopecs and M.  
Robin, "Studies on Itching," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, vol.  
17 (1955), pp. 87-95; B. Russell, "Pruritic Skin Condi-  
tions," in C. Newman (ed.), *The Nature of Stress Disorder*  
(Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1959), pp. 40-51.
- 151:19-21 SEITZ, "Psychocutaneous Aspects of Persistent Pruritis  
. . .," *Archives of Dermatology and Syphilology*, vol. 64  
(1951), pp. 136-141.
- 151:22-29 M. A. BEREZIN, "Dynamic Factors in Pruritis Ani: A  
Case Report," *Psychoanalytic Review*, vol. 41 (1954),  
pp. 160-172.
- 152:9-14 O. NASH, *Verses from 1919 On* (Boston: Little, Brown, 1959).
- :15-19 RUSSELL, "Pruritic Skin Conditions," in Newman, *The Na-  
ture of Stress Disorder*, p. 48.
- :20-23 E. STERN, "Le Prurit," *Étude Psychosomatique, Acta Psy-  
chotherapeutica*, vol. 3 (1955), pp. 107-116.
- 154:29 to C. W. SALEEBY, *Sunlight and Health* (London: Nisbet,  
155:2 1928), p. 67.
- :3-5 PLATO, *The Republic*, Book 5; G. V. N. Dearborn, "The  
Psychology of Clothing," *Psychological Monographs*,  
vol. 26 (1918/19), no. 1 (1928), p. 64; Hilaire Hiler, *From  
Nudity to Raiment* (London: Simpkin Marshall, 1930);  
Maurice Parmelee, *The New Gymnosophy* (New York:  
Hitchcock, 1927); Flügel, *The Psychology of Clothes*; L. E.

## Page and Line

- Langner, *The Importance of Wearing Clothes* (New York: Hastings House, 1959).
- :11-13 J. M. KNOX, Symposium on Cosmetics, "The Sunny Side of the Street Is Not the Place to Be," *Journal of the American Medical Association*, vol. 195 (1966), p. 10.
- :13-15 A. L. LORINCZ, "Physiological and Pathological Changes in Skin from Sunburn and Suntan," *Journal of the American Medical Association*, vol. 173 (1963), pp. 1227-1231; R. G. Freeman, "Carcinogenic Effects of Solar Radiation and Prevention Measured," *Cancer*, vol. 21 (1968), pp. 1114-1120; A. M. Kligman, "Early Destructive Effect of Sunlight on Human Skin," *Journal of the American Medical Association*, vol. 210 (1969), pp. 2377-2380.
- 156:7-11 C. PINCHER, *Sleep* (London: Daily Express, 1954), pp. 18-19; G. G. Luce and J. Segal, *Sleep and Dreams* (London: Heinemann, 1967).
- :12-17 ANNA FREUD, "Psychoanalysis and Education," *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, vol. 9 (1954), p. 12.
- :22 to C. M. HEINICKE and I. WESTHEIMER, *Brief Separations*  
157:1 (New York: International Universities Press, 1965), pp. 165, 266.
- :2-9 FENICHEL, *The Psychoanalytic Theory of Neurosis*, pp. 120-121.
- :13-21 A. ALDRICH, CHIEH SUNG, and C. KNOP, "The Crying of Newly Born Babies," *Journal of Pediatrics*, vol. 27 (1945), p. 95.

## CHAPTER FIVE. SKIN AND SEX

- 158:1-6 *Our Bodies Our Selves* (2nd ed., New York: Simon & Schuster, 1976), p. 41.
- 159:16-19 A. MONTAGU, *The Human Revolution* (New York: Bantam Books, 1967), pp. 150-151.
- 159:30-33 R. C. KOLODNY, L. S. JACOBS, and W. H. DAGHHADAY, "Mammary Stimulation Causes Prolactin Secretion in Non-Lactating Women," *Nature*, vol. 238 (1972), pp. 284-285.
- :34-37 A. BRODAL, *Neurological Anatomy in Relation to Clinical Medicine* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1969), p. 33.
- 160:13-20 DONALD GOULD, "Spirits, Doctors and Disease," *New Scientist*, 17 May 1976, pp. 474-475.
- :29-34 H. F. HARLOW, M. K. HARLOW, and E. W. HANSEN, "The Maternal Affectional System of Rhesus Monkeys," in H. L.

## Page and Line

- Rheingold (ed.), *Maternal Behavior in Mammals* (New York: Wiley, 1963), pp. 277-278.
- 161:4-5 R. J. STOLLER, *Sex and Gender* (New York: Science House, 1968).
- :21-29 A. FREUD, *Normality and Pathology in Childhood* (New York: International Universities Press, 1965), p. 199.
- 162:1-30 M. H. HOLLENDER, L. LUBORSKY, and T. J. SCARAMELLA, "Body Contact and Sexual Excitement," *Archives of General Psychiatry*, vol. 20 (1969), pp. 188-191; M. H. Hollender, "The Wish to Be Held," *Archives of General Psychiatry*, vol. 22 (1970), pp. 445-453.
- :31-32 M. H. HOLLENDER, "Prostitution, the Body, and Human Relations," *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, vol. 42 (1961), pp. 404-413.
- :32-37 M. G. BLINDER, "Differential Diagnosis and Treatment of Depressive Disorders," *Journal of the American Medical Association*, vol. 195 (1966), pp. 8-12.
- :37 to 163:7 C. P. MALMQUIST, T. J. KIRESU, and R. M. SPANO, "Personality Characteristics of Women with Repeated Illegitimate Pregnancies: Descriptive Aspects," *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, vol. 36 (1966), pp. 476-484.
- :7-8 A. MOLL, *The Sexual Life of the Child* (London: Allen & Unwin, 1912); H. Graff and R. Mallin, "The Syndrome of the Wrist Cutter," *American Journal of Psychiatry*, vol. 124 (1967), pp. 36-42.
- 164:16-18 M. H. HOLLENDER, "Women's Wish to Be Held: Sexual and Nonsexual Aspects," *Medical Aspects of Human Sexuality*, October 1971, pp. 12, 17, 19, 21, 25, 26.
- :19-31 M. H. HOLLENDER, L. LUBORSKY, and R. B. HARVEY, "Correlates of the Desire to Be Held in Women," *Journal of Psychosomatic Research*, vol. 14 (1970), pp. 387-390.
- :32 to 165:7 M. H. HOLLENDER and J. B. MCGHEE, "The Wish to Be Held during Pregnancy," *Journal of Psychosomatic Research*, vol. 18 (1974), pp. 193-197.
- :9-18 M. H. HOLLENDER and A. J. MERCER, "Wish to Be Held and Wish to Hold in Men and Women," *Archives of General Psychiatry*, vol. 33 (1976), pp. 49-51.
- :19 to 166:9 L. T. HUANG, R. PHARES, and M. H. HOLLENDER, "The Wish to Be Held," *Archives of General Psychiatry*, vol. 33 (1976), pp. 41-43.
- :10-19 A. LOWEN, *The Betrayal of the Body* (New York: Collier Books, 1969), p. 102.
- :25-26 *Ibid.* p. 24.

## Page and Line

- :29-30 B. MALIVER, *The Encounter Game* (New York: Stein & Day, 1972), p. 130.
- 167:7-8 S. FREUD, *An Outline of Psychoanalysis* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1949), p. 24.
- :8-19 O. FENICHEL, *The Psychoanalytic Theory of Neurosis* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1945), p. 70
- 167:20-24 *Our Bodies, Our Selves*, p. 50.
- :28-31 *Ibid.*, p. 47.
- 168:3-15 M. FRIEDMAN, *Buried Alive: The Biography of Janis Joplin* (New York: William Morrow & Co., 1973), p. 16.
- :21-23 E. S. SCHAEFER and NANCY BAYLEY, "Maternal Behavior, Child Behavior, and Their Intercorrelations from Infancy through Adolescence," *Monographs of the Society for Research in Child Development*, vol. 28, no. 3 (1963), pp. 1-117.
- :26-36 J. RUESCH, *Disturbed Communication* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1957), pp. 31-32.
- 169:1-9 MOLL, *The Sexual Life of the Child*, pp. 29-31.
- :35 to S. BRODY, *Patterns of Mothering* (New York: International Universities Press, 1956), p. 340.
- 170:2 S. FREUD, *Introductory Lectures on Psycho-Analysis* (London: Allen & Unwin, 1922), pp. 269-284.
- :6-10
- 171:5-13 L. K. FRANK, "Genetic Psychology and Its Prospects," *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, vol. 21 (1951), p. 517.
- :15-22 L. K. FRANK, "The Psychosocial Approach in Sex Research," *Social Problems*, vol. 1 (1954), p. 134.
- 172:11-13 J. S. PLANT, *Personality and the Cultural Pattern* (New York: The Commonwealth Fund, 1937), p. 22.
- :13-14 W. A. WEISSKOPF, *The Psychology of Economics* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1955), p. 147.
- :16-18 FRANK, "The Psychosocial Approach in Sex Research," *Social Problems*, vol. 1 (1954), p. 137.
- :21-32 LOWEN, *The Betrayal of the Body*, p. 105.
- 173:30-34 ANDREW BARCLAY, "The Effects of Pregnancy and Child-birth on the Sexual Relationship," *The CEA Philadelphia Chronicler*, vol. 11, no. 8, December 1975, pp. 6-7, and personal communications from Dr. Barclay.
- 174:13-18 J. C. MOLONEY, "Thumbsucking," *Child and Family*, vol. 6 (1967), pp. 29-30.
- :21-23 V. LOWENFELD, *Creative and Mental Growth* (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1947).

## Page and Line

- 174:35 to 175:1 For the gentle touch of the free-living gorilla see Dian Fossey, "More Years with Mountain Gorillas," *National Geographic*, vol. 140 (1971), pp. 574-585.
- :6-29 L. K. FRANK, "Tactile Communication," *Genetic Psychology Monographs*, vol. 56 (1957), pp. 209-255; p. 233.
- 176:19-36 H. HARLOW, M. HARLOW, and E. W. HANSEN, "The Maternal Affectional System of Rhesus Monkeys," in H. L. Rheingold (ed.), *Maternal Behavior in Mammals* (New York: Wiley, 1963), pp. 254-281.
- 177:5-12 B. F. STEELE and C. B. POLLACK, "A Psychiatric Study of Parents Who Abuse Infants and Small Children," in R. Helfer and C. Kempe (eds.), *The Battered Child* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1968).
- 178:1-11 J. H. PRESCOTT, "Body Pleasure and the Origins of Violence," *The Futurist*, April 1975, pp. 64-65; J. H. Prescott, "Early Somatosensory Deprivation as an Ontogenetic Process in the Abnormal Development of the Brain and Behavior," in E. I. Goldsmith and J. Moor-Jankowski (eds.), *Medical Primatology* (Basel & New York: S. Karger, 1971), pp. 1-20.
- :29 to 179:4 R. VON KRAFFT-EBING, *Psychopathia Sexualis* (New York: Putnam, 1965); G. R. Taylor, *Sex in History* (New York: Vanguard Press, 1954).
- :20-27 J.-J. ROUSSEAU, *Confessions*, Book 1, 1782.
- 180:35 to 181:8 TH. VAN DE VELDE, *Ideal Marriage* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1932), p. 159.
- :18-20 H. ELLIS, *Studies in the Psychology of Sex* (New York: Random House, 1936).
- :21-27 M. A. OBERMAYER, *Psychocutaneous Medicine* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1955), p. 244 et seq.; J. T. McLaughlin, R. J. Shoemaker, and W. B. Guy, "Personal-ity Factors in Adult Atopic Eczema," *Archives of Dermatology and Syphilology*, vol. 68 (1953), p. 506; I. Rosen (ed.), *The Pathology and Treatment of Sexual Deviation* (New York: Oxford University Press), 1964.
- :31-37 I. ROSEN, "Exhibitionism, Scopophilia and Voyeurism," in Rosen, *The Pathology and Treatment of Sexual Deviation*, p. 308.
- 182:6-11 S. FREUD, "Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality" [1905], in *Complete Psychological Works of Sigmund Freud* (Standard Edition, 24 vols., London: Hogarth Press, 1953), vol. 7, pp. 120-243.
- 183:11-13 J. K. SKIPPER, JR., and C. H. MCCAGHY, "Stripteasers: The



## Page and Line

- Anatomy and Career Contingencies of a Deviant Occupation," *Social Problems*, vol. 17 (1970), pp. 391-405.
- :21-27 A. C. KINSEY, *et al.*, *Sexual Behavior in the Human Female* (Philadelphia: W. B. Saunders, 1953), pp. 570-590, p. 688; J. Money, "Psychosexual Differentiation," in J. Money (ed.), *Sex Research: New Developments* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1965), p. 20.
- 183:33 to B. FAGOT, "Sex Differences in Toddlers' Behavior and Parental Reaction," *Developmental Psychology*, vol. 10 (1974), pp. 554-555.
- 184:2
- :4-8 F. KAHN, *Our Sex Life* (New York: A. A. Knopf, 1939), p. 70.
- :12-20 J. MONEY and A. A. EHRHARDT, *Man & Woman: Boy & Girl* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1972), p. 148.
- :32 to M. MEAD, *Male and Female* (New York: William Morrow & Co., 1949), Chapter 7.
- 185:1
- :1-2 R. R. SEARS, E. E. MACCOBY, and H. LEVIN, *Patterns of Child Rearing* (New York: Row, Peterson & Co., 1957), pp. 56-57, p. 402.
- 185:2-9 S. GOLDBERG and M. LEWIS, "Play Behavior in the Year-Old Infant: Early Sex Differences," *Child Development*, vol. 40 (1969), pp. 21-33. See also H. A. Moss, "Sex, Age, and State as Determinants of Mother-Infant Interaction," *Merrill-Palmer Quarterly*, vol. 13 (1967), pp. 1936 et seq.
- :10-13 E. H. ERIKSON, *Childhood and Society* (2nd ed., New York: W. W. Norton, 1963), p. 309.
- :18-21 J. L. and A. FISCHER, "The New Englanders of Orchard Town, U.S.A.," in B. B. Whiting (ed.), *Six Cultures* (New York: Wiley, 1963).
- :21-23 V. S. CLAY, "The Effect of Culture on Mother-Child Tactile Communication," (Ph.D. diss., Teachers College, Columbia University, 1966), pp. 219 et seq.
- :23-27 REVA RUBIN, "Basic Maternal Behavior," *Nursing Outlook*, vol. 9 (1961), p. 684.

## CHAPTER SIX. GROWTH AND DEVELOPMENT

- 186:8-11 L. CASLER, "Maternal Deprivation: A Critical Review of the Literature," *Monographs of the Society for Research in Child Development*, vol. 26, no. 2 (1961).
- :9 J. BOWLBY, *Maternal Care and Mental Health* (Geneva: World Health Organization, 1961).
- 187:8-16 Cited in G. W. GRAY, "Human Growth," *Scientific Ameri-*

## Page and Line

- can, vol. 189 (1953), pp. 65-67. The citation is misattributed in this article to Dr. Alfred F. Washburn, when in fact it belongs to Dr. J. D. Benjamin. See W. R. Ruegamer, L. Bernstein, and J. D. Benjamin, "Growth, Food Utilization, and Thyroid Activity in the Albino Rat as a Function of Extra Handling," *Science*, vol. 120 (1954), p. 314.
- :21-26 V. H. DENENBERG and J. R. C. MORTON, "Effects of Environmental Complexity and Social Groupings upon Modification of Emotional Behavior," *Journal of Comparative Psychology*, vol. 55 (1962), pp. 242-246.
- :27-29 S. LEVINE, "A Further Study of Infantile Handling and Avoidance Learning," *Journal of Personality*, vol. 25 (1962), pp. 242-246; V. H. Denenberg and C. G. Karas, "Interactive Effects of Age and Duration of Infantile Experience on Adult Learning," *Psychological Reports*, vol. 7 (1960), pp. 313-322.
- :27-31 J. T. TAPP and H. MARKOWITZ, "Infant Handling: Effects on Avoidance Learning, Brain Weight, and Cholinesterase Activity," *Science*, vol. 140 (1963), pp. 486-487.
- :34-35 L. BERNSTEIN, "A Note on Christie's 'Experimental Naiveté and Experiential Naiveté,'" *Psychological Bulletin*, vol. 49 (1952), pp. 38-40.
- :35-36 J. ROSEN, "Dominance Behavior as a Function of Early Gentling Experience in the Albino Rat" (M. A. thesis, University of Toronto, 1957).
- 188:1-2 O. WEININGER, W. J. MCCLELLAND, and K. ARIMA, "Gentling and Weight Gain in the Albino Rat," *Canadian Journal of Psychology*, vol. 8 (1954), pp. 147-151.
- :2 RUEGAMER, BERNSTEIN, and BENJAMIN, "Growth, Food Utilization, and Thyroid Activity in the Albino Rat as a Function of Extra Handling," pp. 184-185.
- :8-14 G. F. SOLOMON, "Early Experience and Immunity," *Nature*, vol. 220 (1968), pp. 821-822.
- :15-17 S. LEVINE, M. ALPERT, and G. W. LEWIS, "Infantile Experience and the Maturation of the Pituitary Adrenal Axis," *Science*, vol. 126 (1957), p. 1347.
- :17-19 R. W. BELL, G. REISNER, and T. LINN, "Recovery from Electroconvulsive Shock as a Function of Infantile Stimulation," *Science*, vol. 133 (1961), p. 1428.
- :23-25 S. LEVINE, "Noxious Stimulation in Infant and Adult Rats and Consummatory Behavior," *Journal of Comparative and Physiological Psychology*, vol. 51 (1958), pp. 230-233.
- :26-28 L. BERNSTEIN, "The Effects of Variation in Handling upon

## Page and Line

- Learning and Retention," *Journal of Comparative and Physiological Psychology*, vol. 50 (1957), pp. 162-167.
- 188:29-31 K. LARSSON, "Mating Behavior of the Male Rat," in L. R. Aronson, *et al.* (eds.), *Development and Evolution of Behavior*, (San Francisco: W. H. Freeman Co., 1970), pp. 337-351.
- :32-34 K. LARSSON, "Non-Specific Stimulation and Sexual Behaviour in the Male Rat," *Behaviour*, vol. 20 (1963), pp. 110-114.
- :37 to J. A. KING, "Effects of Early Handling upon Adult Behavior in Two Subspecies of Deermice, *Peromyscus maniculatus*,"
- 189:5 *Journal of Comparative and Physiological Psychology*, vol. 52 (1959), pp. 82-88.
- :7-13 U. BRONFENBRENNER, "Early Deprivation in Mammals: A Cross-Species Analysis," in G. Newton and S. Levine (eds.), *Early Experience and Behavior* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1968), p. 661; L. Bernstein, "A Note on Christie's 'Experimental Naiveté and Experiential Naiveté,'" *Psychological Bulletin*, vol. 49 (1952), pp. 38-40; L. Bernstein, "The Effects of Variations in Handling upon Learning and Retention," *Journal of Comparative and Physiological Psychology*, vol. 50 (1957), pp. 162-167; V. H. Denenberg, "A Consideration of the Usefulness of the Critical Period Hypothesis as Applied to the Stimulation of Rodents in Infancy," in Newton and Levine, *Early Experience and Behavior*, pp. 42-167.
- :22-26 RUEGAMER, BERNSTEIN, and BENJAMIN, "Growth, Food Utilization, and Thyroid Activity in the Albino Rat," pp. 184-185.
- 190:7-11 W. VON BUDDENBROCK, *The Senses* (Ann Arbor, Michigan: The University of Michigan Press, 1958), p. 127.
- :19-29 V. S. CLAY, "The Effect of Culture on Mother-Child Tactile Communication" (Ph.D. diss., Teachers College, Columbia University, 1966), p. 308.
- :30 to M. RIBBLE, *The Rights of Infants* (2nd ed., New York: Columbia University Press, 1965), p. 54 et seq.
- 191:2 G. E. COGHILL, *Anatomy and the Problem of Behavior* (New York & London: Cambridge University Press, 1929; reprinted New York: Hafner Publishing Co., 1964).
- :3-5 L. J. YARROW, "Research in Dimension of Early Maternal Care," *Merrill-Palmer Quarterly*, vol. 9 (1963), pp. 101-122.
- :7-22 S. PROVINCE and R. C. LIPTON, *Infants in Institutions* (New York: International Universities Press), 1962.
- :23 to
- 192:2

## Page and Line

- :3-24 H. SHEVRIN and P. W. TOUSSIENG, "Vicissitudes of the Need for Tactile Stimulation in Instinctual Development," *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, vol. 20 (1965), pp. 310-339; H. Shevrin and P. W. Toussieng, "Conflict over Tactile Experiences in Emotionally Disturbed Children," *Journal of the American Academy of Child Psychiatry*, vol. 1 (1962), pp. 564-590.
- 193:15-19 R. SPITZ, *The First Year of Life* (New York: International Universities Press, 1965); Ribble, *The Rights of Infants*.
- :20-25 R. G. PATTON and L. I. GARDNER, *Growth Failure in Maternal Deprivation* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1963).
- :25-27 E. M. WIDDOWSON, "Mental Contentment and Physical Growth," *The Lancet*, vol. 1 (1951), pp. 1316-1318; L. J. Yarrow, "Maternal Deprivation: Toward an Empirical and Conceptual Revaluation," *Psychological Bulletin*, vol. 58 (1961), pp. 459-490; A. Montagu (ed.), *Culture and Human Development* (Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1974).
- :28-34 G. F. POWELL, J. A. BRASEL, and R. M. BLIZZARD, "Emotional Deprivation and Growth Retardation Simulating Idiopathic Hypopituitarism," *New England Journal of Medicine*, vol. 276 (1967), pp. 1271-1278; G. F. Powell, J. A. Brasel, S. Raiti, and R. M. Blizzard, "Emotional Deprivation and Growth Retardation Simulating Hypopituitarism," *New England Journal of Medicine*, vol. 276 (1967), pp. 1279-1283; J. B. Reinhardt and A. L. Drash, "Psychosocial Dwarfism: Environmentally Induced Recovery," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, vol. 31 (1969), pp. 165-172. See also C. Whitten, *et al.*, "Evidence that Growth Failure from Maternal Deprivation Is Secondary to Undereating," *Journal of the American Medical Association*, vol. 209 (1969), pp. 1675-1682; Montagu, *Culture and Human Development*.
- 194:17-29 For a detailed discussion see W. SCHUMER and R. SPERLING, "Shock and Its Effect on the Cell," *Journal of the American Medical Association*, vol. 205 (1968), pp. 215-219.
- 195:9-13 M. K. TEMERLIN, *et al.*, "Effects of Increased Mothering and Skin Contact on Retarded Boys," *American Journal of Mental Deficiency*, vol. 71 (1967), pp. 890-893.
- :16-24 M. MCGRAW, *Neuromuscular Maturation of the Human Infant* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1943), p. 102.

## Page and Line

- :25-26 P. GREENACRE, *Trauma, Growth, and Personality* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1952), pp. 12-14; M. Sherman and I. C. Sherman, "Sensorimotor Response in Infants," *Journal of Comparative Psychology*, vol. 5 (1925), pp. 53-68; A. Thomas, et al., *Examen Neurologique du Nourrison* (Paris: La Vie Medicale, 1955); E. H. Watson and G. H. Lowrey, *Growth and Development of Children* (5th ed., Chicago: Year Book Medical Publishers, 1967).
- :27-28 E. DEWEY, *Behavior Development in Infants* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1935).
- :28-30 D. SINCLAIR, *Cutaneous Sensation* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1967), p. 38.
- :31 to H. HEAD, *Studies in Neurology* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1922).
- 196:7
- :14-18 S. ESCALONA, "Emotional Development in the First Year of Life," in M. J. E. Senn (ed.), *Problems of Infancy and Childhood* (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation, 1953), p. 17.
- :26-33 RIBBLE, *The Rights of Infants*, p. 57.
- 197:3-6 WATSON and LOWREY, *Growth and Development of Children*, pp. 220-221.
- 197:21-28 R. S. LOURIE, "The First Three Years of Life: An Overview of a New Frontier of Psychiatry," *American Journal of Psychiatry*, vol. 127 (1971), pp. 1457-1463.
- 198:17-32 E. SYLVESTER, "Discussion," in Senn, *Problems of Infancy and Childhood*, p. 29.
- 199:1-6 Ibid.
- 199:18-25 H. SINCLAIR, "Sensorimotor Action Patterns a Condition for the Acquisition of Syntax," in R. Huxley and E. Ingram (eds.), *Language Acquisition: Models and Methods* (New York: Academic Press, 1971), pp. 121-135; Harry Beilin, et al., *Studies in the Cognitive Basis of Language Development* (New York: Academic Press, 1975), p. 340.
- 200:2-25 ESCALONA, "Emotional Development in the First Year of Life," in Senn, *Problems of Infancy and Childhood*, p. 25.
- 201:3-17 SPITZ, *The First Year of Life*, pp. 232-233.
- 202:5-10 M. S. MAHLER, "On Two Crucial Phases of Integration Concerning Problems of Identity: Separation-Individuation and Bisexual Identity," *Journal of the American Psychoanalytic Association*, vol. 6 (1958), pp. 136-142.
- :16 to E. DARWIN, *Zoonomia, or The Laws of Organic Life* (2 vols., London: J. Johnson, vol. 1, 1794), pp. 109-111.
- 203:6

## Page and Line

- :11-23 ESCALONA, "Emotional Development in the First Year of Life," p. 24.
- :29 to T. K. LANDAUER and J. W. M. WHITING, "Infantile Stimu-  
204:15 lation and Adult Stature of Human Males," *American An-  
thropologist*, vol. 66 (1964), pp. 1007-1028.
- 205:8-10 D. H. WILLIAMS, "Management of Atopic Dermatitis in  
Children, Control of the Maternal Rejection Factor," *Ar-  
chives of Dermatology and Syphilology*, vol. 63 (1951),  
pp. 545-560.
- :10-16 F. DUNBAR, *Emotions and Bodily Changes* (4th ed., New  
York: Columbia University Press, 1954), p. 647.
- :16-22 D. W. WINNICOTT, "Pediatrics and Psychiatry," *British  
Journal of Medical Psychology*, vol. 21 (1948), pp. 229-240.
- :29-32 R. SPITZ, *The First Year of Life* (New York: International  
Universities Press, 1965); M. E. Allerhand, *et al.*, "Person-  
ality Factors in Neurodermatitis," *Psychosomatic Medi-  
cine*, vol. 12 (1950), pp. 386-390; E. Wittkower and B.  
Russell, *Emotional Factors in Skin Disease* (New York:  
Hoeber, 1955).
- :32-33 M. E. OBERMAYER, *Psychocutaneous Medicine* (Springfield,  
Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1955).
- :33 H. C. BETHUNE and C. B. KIDD, "Physiological Mechanisms  
in Skin Diseases," *The Lancet*, vol. 2 (1961), pp. 1419-  
1422; J. G. Kepecs, *et al.*, "Atopic Dermatitis," *Psychoso-  
matic Medicine*, vol. 13 (1951), pp. 2-9; Dunbar, *Emotions  
and Bodily Changes*, p. 647.
- :36 to A. LOWEN, *The Betrayal of the Body* (New York: Collier  
206:11 Books, 1969), pp. 2-3.
- :33 to O. FENICHEL, *The Psychoanalytic Theory of Neurosis* (New  
207:2 York: W. W. Norton, 1945), p. 445.
- :8-10 H. WEINER, "Diagnosis and Symptomatology," in L. Bellak  
(ed.), *Schizophrenia* (New York: Logos Press, 1958),  
p. 120.
- 208:12-26 R. J. BEHAN, *Pain, Its Origin, Conduction, Perception and  
Diagnostic Significance* (New York: Appleton, 1922); S.  
Renshaw and R. J. Wherry, Studies on Cutaneous Local-  
ization, III. "The Age of Onset of Ocular Dominance,"  
*Journal of Genetic Psychology*, vol. 39 (1931), pp. 493-496.
- 209:3-8 A. F. SILVERMAN, M. E. PRESSMAN, and H. W. BARTEL,  
"Self-Esteem and Tactile Communication," *Journal of Hu-  
manistic Psychology*, vol. 13 (1973), pp. 73-77.
- :14-37 JIMMIE HOLLAND, "Acute Leukemia: Psychological Aspects  
of Treatment," in B. Elkerbout, P. Thomas, and A. Zwav-

## Page and Line

- eling (eds.), *Cancer Chemotherapy* (Leiden, Holland: Leiden University Press, 1971), pp. 199–300. See also Jimmie Holland, *et al.*, "Psychological Response of Patients with Acute Leukemia to Germ-Free Environments," *Cancer, Journal of the American Cancer Society*, vol. 40 (1977), pp. 871–879.
- 210:1–3 SUZANNE GORDON, *Lonely in America* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1976).
- :12–18 LILLIAN LEIBER, *et al.*, "The Communication of Affection between Cancer Patients and Their Spouses," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, vol. 38 (1976), pp. 379–389.
- :31–32 YEVGENY VINOKUROV, "Passer-By," trans. Daniel Weissbort, *Poetry*, July 1974, p. 187.
- :35 to KENNETH J. GERGEN, MARY M. GERGEN, and WILLIAM H. BARTON, "Deviance in the Dark," *Psychology Today*, October 1973, pp. 129–130.
- 211:25
- :26 to D. A., "You're Only Allowed to Touch When . . ." (Paper written for anthropology class at a California college, 1971).
- 212:12
- :23–32 A. F. COPPOLA, "Reality and the Haptic World," *Phi Kappa Phi Journal*, Winter 1970, pp. 14–15.
- 214:3–6 MARC BLOCH, *The Royal Touch* (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1973), p. 240.
- :7–19 *Ibid.*, p. 223.
- :20–25 I. R. MILBERG, "Pinpointing Emotional Factors in Skin Diseases," *Practical Psychology*, vol. 3 (1976), pp. 49–56.
- :29–37 "Seventh Son of a Seventh Son," *The Listener* (London), 11 April 1974, pp. 443–455.
- 215:1–10 M. J. ROSENTHAL, "Psychosomatic Study of Infantile Eczema," *Pediatrics*, vol. 10 (1952), pp. 581–593.
- :11–19 R. SPITZ, *The First Year of Life*, p. 24.
- 215:20–24 R. BERGMAN and C. K. ALDRICH, "The Natural History of Infantile Eczema: A Follow-Up Study," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, vol. 25 (1963), p. 495.
- :25–31 E. L. LIPTON, A. STEINSCHNEIDER, and J. B. RICHMOND, "Psychophysiological Disorders in Children," in L. W. and M. L. Hoddman (eds.), *Review of Child Development Research*, vol. 2 (1966), p. 192.
- 216:26–30 J. C. MOLONEY, "Thumbsucking," *Child and Family*, vol. 6 (1967), p. 28.
- 217:4–10 J. A. M. MEERLOO, "Human Camouflage and Identification with the Environment," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, vol. 19 (1957), pp. 89–98.

## Page and Line

- :13-24 LOWEN, *The Betrayal of the Body*, pp. 187-188.
- :32 to M. EUSTIS (ed.), *Players at Work* (New York: Theater Arts, 218:1 1937).
- :12-25 E. T. HALL, *The Hidden Dimension* (New York: Doubleday, 1966), p. 59.
- :26 to J. BOWLBY, "The Nature of the Child's Tie to His Mother," 219:2 *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, vol. 39 (1958), pp. 364-365; J. Bowlby, *Attachment and Loss*. vol. 1, *Attachment* (New York: Basic Books, 1969).
- :3-15 M. BALINT, "Friendly Expanses—Horrid Empty Spaces," *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, vol. 36 (1955), pp. 225-241.
- 219:33-37 A. BURTON and R. E. KANTOR, "The Touching of the Body," *Psychoanalytic Review*, vol. 51 (1964), pp. 122-134.
- 220:4-10 D. SECREST, "'Catatonics' Cure Is Found," *International News Service*, 27 May 1955.
- :10-12 G. SCHWING, *A Way to the Souls of the Mentally Ill* (New York: International Universities Press, 1954).
- :12-30 N. WAAL, "A Special Technique of Psychotherapy with an Autistic Child," in G. Caplan (ed.), *Emotional Problems of Early Childhood* (New York: Basic Books, 1955), pp. 443-444.
- :31-34 N. ICKERINGILL, "An Approach to Schizophrenia that Is Rooted in Family Love," *New York Times*, 28 April 1968, p. 44.
- 221:6 to B. R. FORER, "The Taboo against Touching in Psychotherapy," 222:8 *Psychotherapy, Theory, Research and Practice*, vol. 6 (1969), pp. 229-231. See also B. R. Forer, "The Use of Physical Contact in Group Therapy," in L. N. Solomon and B. Berson (eds.) *New Perspectives on Encounter Groups* (San Francisco: Jossey-Bass, Inc., 1972), pp. 195-210.
- :11-13 C. BRENNER, *Psychoanalytic Technique and Psychic Conflict* (New York: International Universities Press, 1976), p. 30.
- :23-25 See Freud's letter to Ferenczi in E. Jones, *The Life and Works of Sigmund Freud* (New York: Basic Books, 1955), vol. 3, p. 163.
- 223:1-14 FORER, "The Taboo against Touching in Psychotherapy," p. 230.
- :15-22 A. BURTON and R. E. KANTOR, "The Touching of the Body," *Psychoanalytic Review*, vol. 51 (1964), pp. 122-134.
- 224:5-7 A. MONTAGU, "On Touching Your Patient," *Practical Psychology for Physicians*, February 1975, pp. 43-47.



## Page and Line

- :7-13 A. BURTON and A. G. HELLER, "The Touching of the Body," *Psychoanalytic Review*, vol. 51 (1964), pp. 122-134; J. De Augustinis, R. S. Isani, and F. R. Kumler, "Ward Study: The Meaning of Touch in Inter-Personal Communication," in S. F. Burd and M. A. Marshall (eds.), *Some Clinical Approaches to Psychiatric Nursing* (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1963), pp. 271-306; A. Charlton, "Identification of Reciprocal Influences of Nurse and Patient Initiated Physical Contact in the Psychiatric Setting" (Masters thesis, University of Maryland, 1959); L. S. Mercer, "Touch: Comfort or Threat?" *Perspectives in Psychiatric Care*, vol. 4 (1966), pp. 20-25; L. Cashar and B. K. Dixon, "The Therapeutic Use of Touch," *Journal of Psychiatric Nursing*, vol. 5 (1967), pp. 442-451; E. Mintz, "Touch and Psychoanalytic Tradition," *Psychoanalytic Review*, vol. 56 (1969), pp. 367-376; M. T. De Thomaso, "Touch Power," *Perspectives in Psychiatric Care*, vol. 9 (1971), pp. 112-118; A. L. Clark, *Maternal Tenderness—Cultural and Generational Implications* (Evanston, Illinois: American Nursing Association, No. G. 94, 1973), pp. 98-123; B. Unger, "Please Touch," *Journal of Practical Nursing*, vol. 24 (1974), p. 29; D. Krieger, "'Therapeutic Touch': An Ancient But Unorthodox Nursing Intervention," Lecture, 12 October 1974, Lake Placid, N.Y.; D. Krieger, "The Relationship of Touch, with Intent to Help or to Heal, to Subjects' In-Vivo Hemoglobin Values: A Study in Personalized Interaction," *Proceedings of the American Nurses Association 9th Council of Nurse Researchers* (Kansas City, Missouri: The Association, 1973), pp. 53-76; B. S. Johnson, "Meaning of Touch," *Nursing Outlook*, vol. 35 (1965), p. 59; M. S. Saltenis, "Physical Touch and Nursing Support," (Unpublished master's thesis, Yale University, 1962); J. E. Pattison, "Effects of Touch on Self-Exploration and the Therapeutic Relationship," *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, vol. 40 (1973) pp. 170-175.
- :14 to 226:2 A. MONTAGU, "The Sensory Influences of the Skin," *Texas Reports on Biology and Medicine*, vol. 2 (1953), pp. 291-301.
- :32-35 A. M. GARNER and C. WENAR, *The Mother-Child Interaction in Psychosomatic Disorders* (Urbana, Illinois: University of Illinois Press, 1959).

## Page and Line

- 227:11-20 H. W. NISSEN, K. L. CHOW, and J. SEMMES, "Effects of Restricted Opportunity for Tactual, Kinesthetic, and Manipulative Experience on the Behavior of a Chimpanzee," *American Journal of Psychology*, vol. 64 (1951), pp. 485-507.
- :34-36 W. M. MASON, "Early Social Deprivation in the Nonhuman Primates: Implications for Human Behavior," in D. C. Glass (ed.), *Environmental Influences* (New York: Rockefeller University Press, 1968), pp. 70-101.
- 228:6-9 J. P. ZUBEK, J. FLYE, and M. AFTANAS, "Cutaneous Sensitivity after Prolonged Visual Deprivation," *Science*, vol. 144 (1964), pp. 1591-1593.
- :10-12 S. AXELROD, *Effects of Early Blindness* (New York: American Foundation for the Blind, 1959).
- :19-23 D. STEWART, *Outlines of Moral Philosophy* (Edinburgh: Creech, 1793), I, X, #87.
- 229:29-31 D. OGSTON, C. M. OGSTON, and O. D. RATNOFF, "Studies on Clot-Promoting Effect of the Skin," *Journal of Laboratory and Clinical Medicine*, vol. 73 (1969), pp. 70-77.

## CHAPTER SEVEN. CULTURE AND CONTACT

- 235:35 to 236:30 R. JAMES DE BOER, "The Netsilik Eskimo and the Origin of Human Behavior," MS, 1969, p. 8.
- 237:8-25 Ibid., p. 15.
- 238:21-33 E. CARPENTER, "Space Concepts of Aivilik Eskimos," *Explorations Five*, June 1955, pp. 131-145.
- 240:7-13 J. GIBSON, "Pictures, Perspective and Perception," *Daedalus*, Winter 1961.
- 241:1-19 H. H. ROBERTS and D. JENNESS, *Eskimo Songs, Report of the Canadian Arctic Expedition, 1913-18* (Ottawa), vol. 14 (1925), pp. 9, 12.
- :35 to 242:8 K. RASMUSSEN, *The Intellectual Culture of the Iglulik Eskimos* (Copenhagen: Gyldendalske boghandel, 1929), p. 27.
- :11-16 V. STEFANSSON, *The Friendly Arctic* (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1943), p. 418; V. Stefansson, *My Life with the Eskimo* (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1915).
- 243:7-14 C. OSGOOD, "Ingalik Social Culture," *Yale University Publications in Anthropology*, no. 53 (1958), p. 178.
- :16-36 E. CARPENTER, F. VARLEY, and R. FLAHERTY, *Eskimo: Explorations Nine* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1959), p. 32.

## Page and Line

- 244:7-33 JULES HENRY, *Jungle People* (New York: Vintage Books, 1964), pp. 18-19.
- 245:6-26 PEGGY DURDIN, "From the Space Age to the Tasaday Age," *New York Times Magazine*, 8 October 1972, p. 14.
- :27-29 Y. and R. F. MURPHY, *Women of the Forest* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1974), p. 106.
- 246:8-19 A. S. MIRKIN, "Resonance Phenomena in Isolated Mechanoreceptors (Pacinian Bodies) with Acoustic Stimulation," *Biofizika*, vol. 2 (1966), pp. 638-645 (in Russian).
- :20-25 C. K. MADSEN and W. G. MEARS, "The Effect of Sound upon the Tactile Threshold of Deaf Subjects," *Journal of Music Therapy*, vol. 2 (1965), pp. 64-68.
- :26-27 G. A. GESCHIEDER, "Cutaneous Sound Localization" (Ph.D. diss., University of Virginia, 1964; *Dissertation Abstracts*, vol. 25 [1964], no. 6, 3701).
- :29 to B. BERENSON, *Aesthetics and History* (New York: Pantheon, 247:14 1948), pp. 66-70.
- 247:29-37 ROBERT HUGHES, "When God Was an Englishman," *Time*, 1 March 1976, p. 56.
- 248:1-5 M. MCLUHAN and H. PARKER, *Through the Vanishing Point* (New York: Harper & Row, 1969), p. 265.
- :5-26 T. KROEBER, *Alfred Kroeber: A Personal Configuration* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1970), pp. 267-268.
- 248:34-38 M. ARGYLE and M. COOK, *Gaze and Mutual Gaze* (Cambridge and New York: Cambridge University Press, 1976).
- 249:1-12 E. G. SCHACHTEL, "On Memory and Childhood Amnesia," in P. Mullahy (ed.), *A Study of Interpersonal Relations* (New York: Hermitage Press, 1949), pp. 23-24.
- :14-19 *Ibid.*, pp. 25-26.
- :20-23 H. MARCUSE, *Eros and Civilization* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1955), p. 39.
- 250:7-11 H. L. PICK, A. D. PICK, and R. E. KLEIN, "Perceptual Integration in Children, in L. P. Lipsitt and C. C. Spiker (eds.), *Advances in Child Behavior and Development*, vol. 3 (New York: Academic Press, 1967), pp. 191-220.
- :11-13 E. J. GIBSON and R. D. WALK, "The Visual Cliff," *Scientific American*, vol. 202 (1960), pp. 64-71.
- :14-20 T. G. R. BOWER, "The Object in the World of the Infant," *Scientific American*, vol. 225 (1971), pp. 30-38.
- :21-26 H. R. SCHAFFER and P. E. EMERSON, "Patterns of Response to Physical Contact in Early Human Development," *Jour-*

## Page and Line

- nal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, vol. 5 (1964), pp. 1-13.
- :31 to A. V. ZAPOROZHETS, "The Development of Perception in the  
251:9 Preschool Child," in P. H. Mussen (ed.), *European Research in Cognitive Development*, Monographs of the Society for Research in Child Growth and Development, vol. 30. ser. no. 100, Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1965.
- :10-14 IRVIN ROCK and CHARLES S. HARRIS, "Vision and Touch," *Scientific American*, vol. 216 (1967), pp. 96-104.
- :17-24 SHEILA HOCKEN, "Life at First Sight—The Surprising World of Sheila Hocken," *The Listener* (London), 10 June 1976, pp. 730-731.
- 252:2-9 M. D. S. AINSWORTH, *Infancy in Uganda* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins Press, 1967), p. 451. See also L. K. Fox (ed.), *East African Childhood* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1970).
- :12-16 *Ibid.*, p. 330.
- 252:20 J. ROSCOE, *The Baganda* (London: Macmillan, 1911); L. P. Mair, *An African People in the Twentieth Century* (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1934).
- :22-29 A. I. RICHARDS, "Traditional Values and Current Political Behavior," in L. A. Fallers (ed.), *The King's Men: Leadership and Status in Modern Buganda* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1964), pp. 297-300.
- :33 to M. GEBER, "The Psychomotor Development of African  
253:34 Children in the First Year and the Influence of Maternal Behavior," *Journal of Social Psychology*, vol. 47 (1958), pp. 185-195; M. Géber and R. F. A. Dean, "The State of Development of Newborn African Children," *The Lancet*, vol. 272 (1957), pp. 1216-1219; M. Géber, "Problèmes Posés par le Développement du Jeune Enfant Africain en Fonction de son Milieu Social," *Le Travail Humain*, vol. 23 (1960), pp. 99-111.
- :35 to PATRICIA DRAPER, "Crowding Among Hunter-Gatherers: The !Kung Bushmen," *Science*, vol. 182 (1973),  
254:6 pp. 301-303.
- :9-37 L. MARSHALL, *The !Kung of Nyae Nyae* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1976), pp. 315-318.
- 255:15-19 A. GESELL and C. AMATRUDA, *Developmental Diagnosis* (New York: Harper & Row, 1947), p. 42.
- :20-33 M. J. KONNER, "Aspects of the Developmental Ethology of a Foraging People," in N. Blurton Jones (ed.), *Ethological*

## Page and Line

- Studies of Child Behaviour* (Cambridge: The University Press, 1972), pp. 285–304; S. R. Tulkin and M. J. Konner, "Alternative Conceptions of Intellectual Functioning," in K. F. Riegel (ed.), *Intelligence: Alternative Views of a Paradigm* (Basel & New York: Karger, 1973), pp. 33–52; M. J. Konner, "Maternal Care, Infant Behavior, and Development Among the !Kung," in R. B. Lee and Irven DeVore (eds.), *Kalahari-Hunter Gatherers* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1976), pp. 219–245.
- 256:1 E. M. THOMAS, *The Harmless People* (New York: A. A. Knopf, 1959); L. van der Post, *The Lost World of the Kalahari* (New York: William Morrow, 1958); L. van der Post, *The Heart of the Hunter* (New York: William Morrow, 1961); I. Schapera, *The Khoisan Peoples of South Africa* (London: Routledge & Sons, 1930); L. Marshall, "The !Kung Bushmen of the Kalahari Desert," in J. Gibbs (ed.), *Peoples of Africa* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1965).
- :5–6 See W. D. HAMMOND-TOOKE (ed.), *The Bantu-Speaking Peoples of Southern Africa* (London & Boston: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1974).
- :13–20 M. MEAD, *Sex and Temperament in Three Primitive Societies* (New York: William Morrow, 1935), pp. 40–41.
- :35 to Ibid., pp. 42–43.
- 257:2
- 258:27–33 J. RITCHIE, Review of A. Montagu, *Touching*, *Parents Centres Bulletin* 52, August 1972, p. 22.
- 259:1–8 C. DUBOIS, *The People of Alor* (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1937), p. 152.
- :13–22 T. R. WILLIAMS, "Cultural Structuring of Tactile Experience in a Borneo Society," *American Anthropologist*, vol. 68 (1966), pp. 27–39.
- :23 to Ibid., p. 29.
- 260:9
- 260:23 to J. W. PRESCOTT and DOUGLAS WALLACE, "Developmental Sociobiology and the Origins of Aggressive Behavior," Paper presented at the XXIst International Congress of Psychology, July 18–25, 1976, Paris.
- 261:10
- :19–21 V. S. CLAY, "The Effect of Culture on Mother-Child Tactile Communication" (Ph.D. diss., Teachers College, Columbia University, 1966).
- :34 to Ibid., pp. 199–201.
- 262:17

## Page and Line

- 263:10-17 R. RUBIN, "Maternal Touch," *Nursing Outlook*, vol. 11 (1963), pp. 828-831.
- :18-20 H. F. HARLOW, M. K. HARLOW, and E. W. HANSEN, "The Maternal Affectional System of Rhesus Monkeys," in H. L. Rheingold (ed.), *Maternal Behavior in Mammals* (New York: Wiley, 1963), pp. 258 et seq.
- 264:13-30 CLAY, "The Effect of Culture . . .," pp. 201-202.
- 265:8-12 R. E. SEARS, E. E. MACCOBY, and H. LEVIN, *Patterns of Child Rearing* (New York: Row, Petersen & Co., 1957), pp. 56-57, 402; J. L. Fischer and A. Fischer, "The New Englanders of Orchard Town, U. S. A.," in B. B. Whiting (ed.), *Six Cultures* (New York: Wiley, 1963), p. 941.
- :12-33 H. A. MOSS, K. S. ROBSON, and F. PEDERSEN, "Determinants of Maternal Stimulation of Infants and Consequences of Treatment for Later Reactions to Strangers," *Developmental Psychology*, vol. 1, (1969), pp. 239-246; H. A. Moss and K. S. Robson, "Maternal Influences in Early Social-Visual Behavior," *Child Development*, vol. 38 (1968), pp. 401-408.
- :34 to R. H. WALTERS and R. D. PARKE, "The Role of the Distance  
266:20 Receptors in the Development of Social Responsiveness," in L. P. Lipsitt and C. C. Spiker (eds.), *Advances in Child Development and Behavior* (New York: Academic Press, 1965).
- :35 to A. MONTAGU, "Some Factors in Family Cohesion," *Psychiatry*, vol. 7 (1944), pp. 349-352.
- 267:6 L. SMITH, *Strange Fruit* (New York: Reynal, 1944), p. 74.
- :11-23 W. CAUDILL and D. W. PLATH, "Who Sleeps by Whom?  
:26 to Parent-Child Involvement in Urban Japanese Families,"  
268:9 *Psychiatry*, vol. 29 (1966), p. 363.
- :11-19 *Ibid.*, p. 363.
- 268:30 to E. T. HALL, *Beyond Culture* (New York: Anchor Books,  
269:9 Doubleday, 1976), pp. 56-58.
- :14-19 See FISCHER and FISCHER, "The New Englanders . . .," in Whiting, *Six Cultures*, p. 947.
- 270:13-32 E. M. FORSTER, *Abinger Harvest* (New York: Harcourt, Brace, 1947).
- :33 to JANE AUSTEN, *Emma* (London, 1816), Chapter 12.
- 271:4
- :5-7 TIMOTHY EDEN, *The Tribulations of a Baronet* (London: Macmillan, 1933).
- :5-8 R. HART-DAVIS, *Hugh Walpole: A Biography* (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1952).

## Page and Line

- :8-9 W. A. SWANBERG, *William Randolph Hearst* (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1961).
- :10-12 CECIL KING, *Strictly Personal* (London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson), 1969.
- :21-34 M. MEAD, "Cultural Differences in the Bathing of Babies," in K. Soddy (ed.), *Mental Health and Infant Development* (New York: Basic Books, vol. 1, 1956), pp. 170-171.
- 272:3-8 CLAY, "The Effect of Culture . . .," p. 273.
- 272:21-29 NANCY M. HENLEY, "The Politics of Touch," in Phil Brown (ed.), *Radical Psychology* (New York: Colophon Books, 1973), pp. 420-433.
- 273:12-13 S. GOLDBERG and M. LEWIS, "Play Behavior in the Year-Old Infant: Early Sex Differences," *Child Development*, vol. 40 (1966), pp. 21-31; V. S. Clay, "The Effect of Culture on Mother-Child Tactile Communication" (Ph.D. diss., Teachers College, Columbia University, 1966).
- :13-30 S. M. JOURARD, "An Exploratory Study of Body Accessibility," *British Journal of Social and Clinical Psychology*, vol. 5 (1966), pp. 221-231; S. M. Jourard and J. E. Rubin, "Self-Disclosure and Touching: A Study of Two Modes of Interpersonal Encounter and Their Interaction," *Journal of Humanistic Psychology*, vol. 8 (1968), pp. 39-48.
- :31 to HENLEY, "The Politics of Touch," p. 431.
- 274:8
- :12-25 A. FREUD, *Normality and Pathology in Childhood* (New York: International Universities Press, 1965), p. 155.
- :26-33 *Ibid.*, p. 156.
- 275:10-12 T. THEVENIN, *The Family Bed: An Age Old Concept in Child Rearing*, P. O. Box 16004, Minneapolis, Minn., 55416.
- :21-34 Editorial, "Baby-Care Lambskin Rugs," *Parents Centres* (Auckland, N.Z.), Bulletin 38, March 1969, p. 8. See also Bulletin 35, June 1968.
- 276:5-12 N. F. ROBERTS, "Baby Care Lambskin Rugs," *Parents Centres* (Auckland, N.Z.), Bulletin 39, June 1969, pp. 12-18.
- 276:21 to R. H. PASSMAN and P. WEISBERG, "Mothers and Blankets as Agents for Promoting Play and Exploration by Young Children in a Novel Environment: The Effects of Social and Nonsocial Attachment Objects," *Developmental Psychology*, vol. 11 (1975), pp. 170-177. For earlier studies see D. W. Winnicott, "Transitional Objects and Transitional Phenomena," *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, vol. 24 (1953); O. Stevenson, "The First Treasured Possession: A Study of the Part Played by Specially Loved

## Page and Line

- Objects and Toys in the Lives of Certain Children," in *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, vol. 9 (1954), pp. 199-217.
- :3 R. H. PASSMAN, "The Effects of Mothers and 'Security' Blankets upon Learning in Children (Should Linus Bring His Blanket to School?)," Paper presented at the American Psychological Association Convention, New Orleans, Louisiana, September 1974.
- :4-9 R. H. PASSMAN, "Arousal Reducing Properties of Attachment Objects: Testing the Functional Limits of the Security Blanket Relative to the Mother," *Developmental Psychology*, vol. 12 (1976), pp. 468-469.
- :9-11 W. A. MASON, "Motivational Factors in Psychosocial Development," in W. A. and M. Page (eds.), *Nebraska Symposium on Motivation* (Lincoln: University of Nebraska, 1970), pp. 35-67.
- :14-15 P. WEISBERG and J. E. RUSSELL, "Proximity and Interactional Behavior of Young Children to Their 'Security' Blanket," *Child Development*, vol. 42 (1971), pp. 1575-1579.
- 278:1-4 *Webster's New World Dictionary of the American Language* (New York & Cleveland: World Publishing Co., 1970), p. 1064.
- :5-11 BORIS M. LEVINSON, *Pet-Oriented Child Psychotherapy* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1969), p. xiv; B. M. Levinson, *Pets and Human Development* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C Thomas, 1972).
- :15 to 279:7 S. A. CORSON, *et al.*, "The Socializing Role of Pet Animals in Nursing Homes: An Experiment in Nonverbal Communication Therapy," in L. Levi (ed.), *Society, Stress and Disease: Aging and Old Age* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1977); S. A. Corson, E. O'L. Corson, and P. H. Gwynne, "Pet-Facilitated Psychotherapy," in R. S. Anderson (ed.), *Pet Animals and Society* (Baltimore: Williams & Wilkins, 1975), pp. 19-35.
- :8-10 R. HELFER, "The Relationship between Lack of Bonding and Child Abuse and Neglect," in M. H. Klaus, T. Leger, and M. A. Trause (eds.), *Maternal Attachment and Mothering Disorders: A Round Table* (New Brunswick, New Jersey: Johnson & Johnson, 1975), pp. 21-25.
- :11-17 PRAFULLA MOHANTI, *My Village, My Life: Portrait of an Indian Village* (New York: Praeger, 1974), pp. 103-107.



## Page and Line

- :18-22 F. LEBOYER, *Loving Hands: The Traditional Indian Art of Baby Massage* (New York: A. A. Knopf, 1976).
- :23 to W. A. CAUDILL and H. WEINSTEIN, "Maternal Care and  
280:11 Infant Behavior in Japan and America," *Psychiatry*, vol. 32 (1969), pp. 12-43; p. 13.
- :18-26 Ibid., pp. 14-15.
- 281:1-3 E. F. VOGEL, *Japan's New Middle Class: The Salary Man and His Family in a Tokyo Suburb* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1963).
- :16-26 CAUDILL and WEINSTEIN, "Maternal Care and Infant Behavior . . .," p. 42. See also W. A. Caudill and C. Schooler, "Child Behavior and Child Rearing in Japan and the United States: An Interim Report," *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, vol. 157 (1973), pp. 323-338.
- :32 to D. G. HARING, "Aspects of Personal Character in Japan," in  
282:9 D. G. Haring (ed.), *Personal Character and Cultural Milieu* (Syracuse, New York: Syracuse University Press, 1956), p. 416.
- :26-33 Ibid., p. 417.
- 283:5-11 Ibid.
- 286:21-22 Quoted in A. F. COPPOLA, "Reality and the Haptic World," *Phi Kappa Phi Journal*, Winter 1970, p. 29.
- :23-29 B. SCHAFFNER, *Father Land* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1948).
- 287:32-35 GERMAINE GREER, *The Female Eunuch* (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1971), p. 112.
- 288:10-27 E. A. DUYCKINCK (ed.), *Wit and Wisdom of the Rev. Sydney Smith* (New York: Widdleton, 1866) p. 426.
- :36 to J. VAN LAWICK-GOODALL, *In the Shadow of Man* (Boston:  
289:5 Houghton Mifflin, 1971), pp. 241 et seq.
- 289:1 DIAN FOSSEY, "More Years with Mountain Gorillas," *National Geographic*, October 1971, pp. 574-585.
- :9-12 ORTEGA Y GASSET, *Man and People* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1957), pp. 192-221.
- :12-15 E. WESTERMARCK, *The Origin and Development of the Moral Ideas*. (2 vols., London: Macmillan, 1917), vol. 2, pp. 150-151.
- 290:1-8 S. F. FELDMAN, *Mannerisms of Speech and Gestures in Everyday Life* (New York: International Universities Press, 1959), p. 270.
- :13-25 A. F. COPPOLA, "Reality and the Haptic World," *Phi Kappa Phi Journal*, Winter 1970, pp. 30-31.
- 291:24-29 I. PINCHBECK and M. HEWITT, *Children in English Society*,

## Page and Line

- Vol. 1: *From Tudor Times to the Eighteenth Century* (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1970); L. L. Schucking, *The Puritan Family* (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1970); P. Aries, *Centuries of Childhood* (New York: A. A. Knopf, 1962).
- 292:3-12 KURT W. BACK, *Beyond Words* (New York: Russell Sage Foundation, 1972), p. 154.
- :13-14 Ibid., p. 46. For additional works on encounter and sensitivity training see R. Gustaitis, *Turning On* (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1969); D. Alchen, *What the Hell Are They Trying to Prove, Martha?* (New York: John Day, 1970); J. Howard, *Please Touch* (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1970); B. L. Maliver, *The Encounter Game* (New York: Stein & Day, 1972); L. N. Solomon and B. Berson (eds.) *New Perspectives on Encounter Groups* (San Francisco: Jossey-Bass, Inc., 1972).
- :15-18 J. R. GIBB, "The Effects of Human Relations Training," in A. E. Bergin and S. L. Garfield (eds.), *Handbook of Psychotherapy and Behavior Change* (New York: Wiley, 1970), pp. 2114-2176.
- :18-21 C. R. ROGERS, *Carl Rogers on Encounter Groups* (New York: Harper & Row, 1973), p. 146.
- :24 to 293:4 W. E. HARTMAN, M. FIFTHIAN, and D. JOHNSON, *Nudist Society* (New York: Crown, 1970), pp. 278-86. See also J. Howard, *Please Touch* (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1970); M. Shepard and M. Lee, *Marathon 16* (New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1970); B. L. Austin, *Sad Nun at Syanon* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1970).
- :17 to 294:1 M. MEAD and R. MÉTRAUX (eds.), *The Study of Culture at a Distance* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1953), p. 107-115, 352-353; G. Gorer and J. Rickman, *The People of Great Russia: A Psychological Study* (New York: Chanticleer Press, 1950).
- :5-14 P. H. WOLFF, "The Natural History of Crying and Other Vocalizations in Early Infancy," in E. B. Foss (ed.), *Determinants of Infant Behavior* (London: Methuen, 1969), vol. 4, p. 92.
- :15-18 H. ORLANSKY, "Infant Care and Personality," *Psychological Bulletin*, vol. 46 (1949), pp. 1-48.
- :24 V. DAL, *The Dictionary of the Living Great Russian Language (Tolkovyi slovar Velikomusskavo Yazkaya)* (St. Petersburg, 1903).

## Page and Line

- :24 to MEAD and MÉTRAUX, *The Study of Culture at a Distance*, p. 163.
- 295:25
- :36-37 N. LEITES, *The Operational Code of the Politburo* (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1951).
- :37 to L. H. HAIMSON, "Russian 'Visual Thinking,'" in Mead and
- 296:20 Métraux, p. 247.
- 297:17-19 D. LEIGHTON and C. KLUCKHOHN, *Children of the People* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1947), pp. 24-25.
- :33-35 R. E. RITZENTHALER and P. RITZENTHALER, *The Woodland Indians* (New York: The Natural History Press, 1970), p. 29.
- 298:10-16 Quoted by Leighton and Kluckhohn, *Children of the People*, pp. 29-30.
- :19-28 W. DENNIS, *The Hopi Child* (New York: Appleton-Century Co., 1940), p. 101.
- :31 to L. CALLEY, "A Baby on a Cradle Board," *Child and Family*,
- 299:8 vol. 5 (1966), pp. 8-10.
- :35 to J. E. RITCHIE, "The Husband's Role," *Parents Centres*
- 300:6 (Auckland, N.Z.), *Bulletin* 38, March 1969, pp. 4-7.
- 301:18-24 ROSS D. PARKE, "Father-Infant Interaction," in Klaus, Leger, and Trause, *Maternal Attachment and Mothering Disorders*, pp. 61-63. See also M. H. Klaus and J. H. Kennell, *Maternal-Infant Bonding* (St. Louis, Missouri: C. V. Mosby Co., 1976).
- :25-31 D. W. WINNICOTT, "The Theory of Parent-Infant Relationship," *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, vol. 41 (1958), p. 591.
- 302:11-14 GRAHAM GREENE, *A Sort of Life* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1971), p. 64.
- 303:10-18 L. K. FRANK, "The Psychological Approach in Sex Research," *Social Problems*, vol. 1 (1954), pp. 133-139.
- :23-28 CLAY, "The Effect of Culture . . .," p. 278.
- :29-32 L. M. STOLZ, *Influences on Parent Behavior* (Stanford: Stanford University Press, 1967), p. 141.
- 304:16-18 R. E. HAWKINS and J. A. POPPLESTONE, "The Tattoo as an Exoskeletal Defense," *Perceptual and Motor Skills*, vol. 19 (1964), p. 500; J. A. Popplestone, "A Syllabus of Exoskeletal Defenses," *Psychological Record*, vol. 13 (1963), pp. 15-25; H. Eberstein, *Pierced Hearts and True Love* (London: Derek Verschoyle, 1953).
- :22-27 F. ROME, *The Tattooed Men* (New York: Delacorte Press, 1975), p. 54.

## Page and Line

- :30 to J. H. BURMA, "Self-Tattooing among Delinquents," *Sociology and Social Research*, vol. 43 (1959), pp. 341-345.
- 305:10 S. FISHER, *Body Consciousness* (Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1973), p. 91.
- :11-14
- :15-19 A. M. HOCART, "Tattooing and Healing," in his *The Life-Giving Myth* (New York: Grove Press, n.d.) pp. 169-172.
- :19-20 For a good survey see W. G. SUMNER and A. G. KELLER, *The Science of Society* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1929), vol. 3, pp. 2130-2135. See also C. Jenkinson, "Tattooing," in J. Hastings (ed.), *Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics* (New York: Scribners, 1920), vol. 12, pp. 208-214; Henry Field, "Body-Marking in Southwestern Asia," *Papers of the Peabody Museum of Archaeology and Ethnology*, Harvard University, vol. 45, 1958, pp. xiii-162.
- 306:5-7 These studies are summarized in Klaus and Kennell, *Maternal-Infant Bonding*, pp. 2-3.
- :8-15 H. KEMPE, "Detecting Child Abuse," *Intercom* (Washington, D.C.), vol. 4, no. 11 (1976), p. 5.
- :16-24 R. HELFER, "The Relationship between Lack of Bonding and Child Abuse and Neglect," in Klaus, Leger, and Trause, *Maternal Attachment and Mothering Disorders*, pp. 21-25.
- 307:13-15 F. DUNBAR, *Psychosomatic Diagnosis* (New York: Hoeber, 1943), pp. 86-87; J. G. Kepecs, "Some Patterns of Somatic Displacement," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, vol. 15 (1953), pp. 425-432.
- :19-23 C. E. BENDA, *The Image of Love* (New York: Free Press, 1961), p. 162.
- :29 to J. G. KEPECS, M. ROBIN, and M. J. BRUNNER, "Relationship between Certain Emotional States and Exudation into the Skin," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, vol. 13 (1951), pp. 10-17.
- 308:2
- :9-11 J. G. KEPECS, A. RABIN, and M. ROBIN, "Atopic Dermatitis: A Clinical Psychiatric Study," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, vol. 13 (1951), pp. 1-9; H. C. Bethune and C. B. Kidd, "Psychophysiological Mechanisms in Skin Diseases," *The Lancet*, vol. 2 (1961), pp. 1419-1422.
- :13-16 H. F. HARLOW and M. K. HARLOW, "Learning to Love," *American Scientist*, vol. 54 (1966), pp. 244-272, and numerous other papers.
- :17-21 H. F. HARLOW, "Primary Affectional Patterns in Primates," *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, vol. 30, (1960), pp. 676-677; M. K. Harlow and H. F. Harlow, "Affection in Primates," *Discovery*, vol. 27, January 1966.
- 309:10-13 HARLOW, "Primary Affectional Patterns in Primates,"

## Page and Line

- American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, vol. 30 (1960), p. 683.
- :17-23 CLAY, "The Effect of Culture . . .," pp. 281-282.
- 310:10-12 *Ibid.*, p. 286.
- :18-22 H. F. HARLOW and M. K. HARLOW, "Learning to Love," *American Scientist*, vol. 54 (1966), p. 250.
- :24-31 H. F. HARLOW, "Development of the Second and Third Affectional Systems in Macaques Monkeys," in T. T. Tourlentes, S. L. Pollack, and H. E. Himwich (eds.), *Research Approaches to Psychiatric Problems* (New York: Grune & Stratton, 1962), pp. 209-229.
- 312:1-12 CLAY, "The Effect of Culture . . .," p. 290.
- 312:22-23 See also C. LOIZOS, "Play Behavior in Higher Primates: A Review," in D. Morris (ed.), *Primate Ethology* (Chicago: Aldine Publishing Co., 1967), pp. 176-218; O. Aldis, *Play Fighting* (New York: Academic Press, 1975); P. A. Jewell and C. Loizos (eds.), *Play, Exploration and Territory in Mammals* (New York: Academic Press, 1966); S. Miller, *The Psychology of Play* (Baltimore: Penguin Books, 1968).
- :37 to T. R. WILLIAMS, "Cultural Structuring of Tactile Experience in a Borneo Society," *American Anthropologist*, vol. 68
- 313:4 (1966), pp. 27-39.
- :11-13 A. TSUMORI, "Newly Acquired Behavior and Social Interactions of Japanese Monkeys," in S. A. Altmann (ed.), *Social Communication among Primates* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1967), pp. 207-219.
- :13-16 K. R. L. HALL, "Observational Learning in Monkeys and Apes," *British Journal of Psychology*, vol. 54 (1963), pp. 201-206; K. R. L. Hall, "Social Learning in Monkeys," in P. Jay (ed.), *Primates* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1969), pp. 383-397.
- :21 H. L. RHEINGOLD and C. O. ECKERMAN, "The Infant Separates Himself from His Mother," *Science*, vol. 168 (1970), pp. 78-83.
- 314:4-7 R. HELD and A. HEIN, "Movement-Produced Stimulation in the Development of Visually Guided Behavior," *Journal of Comparative and Physiological Psychology*, vol. 56 (1963), pp. 872-876.
- :27 to CLAY, "The Effect of Culture . . .," pp. 308, 322.
- 315:19



# INDEX

- acne, 216-17  
Ader, R., 23  
Aftenas, M., 229  
aging:  
    need for contact in, 320-22  
    skin changes in, 7, 145, 155, 320  
Ainsworth, Mary, 251, 252  
Aldrich, A., 157  
Alexander, G., 20  
algolagnia, 179-80  
allergic rhinitis, 90  
allergies, 215  
Amatruda (researcher), 255  
animals:  
    body contact in, 227  
    skin sensitivity in, 3  
    staring in, 248  
    *See also* Breastfeeding; Licking  
        behavior; Maternal behavior;  
        indiv. species  
Anne, Queen, 214  
anxiety, 76-77, 86-87, 217, 219,  
    277  
apes:  
    breastfeeding in, 40, 66  
    gestation period in, 40-41, 42  
    grooming behavior, 28, 34  
    independent behavior in, 233  
    licking behavior in, 18  
    maternal behavior in, 40  
    neonatal immaturity in, 40  
    *See also* Monkeys; indiv. species  
Arapesh, 256-57  
Arms, Suzanne, 114  
atopic dermatitis, 308  
Auden, W. H., 285  
Austen, Jane, *Emma*, 270-71  
Austrians, tactility in, 286  
autism. *See* Schizophrenia and  
    schizoid behavior  
baboons:  
    dog-headed, 35  
    staring in, 248  
Bach-y-Rita, Paul, 148  
Back, Kurt W., 292  
Bakwin, Harry, 82  
Bali:  
    child rearing in, 114-15, 116-18,  
        119  
    music in, 117  
    sleeping habits and patterns in,  
        118  
    toilet training and attitudes in,  
        117  
Balint, Michael, 219  
Barclay, Andrew, 172-73  
Barnett, C. R., 108  
Barron, Donald H., 25, 56  
Bartel, Helmut W., 209  
Barton, William H., 210-11  
Bateson, Gregory, 114-15  
bathing, 153-54  
    in Bali, 118  
    in India, 279

- bathing (*cont'd*)  
 of infant, 84–85, 106, 153, 271, 279  
 in Japan, 280–81  
 and masturbation, 154  
 sensual component in, 153–54  
 singing and, 154  
 in United States, 153, 271, 281
- behaviorism, 120–23, 125, 155
- Bell, R. W., 26
- Benda, Clemens, 307
- Benjamin, John D., 187
- Berenson, Bernard, 246–47, 248
- Berezin, Martin, 151
- Berkeley, George, 250
- Berkson, Gershon, 134
- Bettelheim, Bruno, 104
- Birch, H. G., 19
- Birdwhistell, Ray L., 87
- birth process, 38–39, 40, 47, 48–49, 56–58, 60, 62–63, 107  
 cesarean deliveries, 52–56  
 husband's role in, 107  
 mechanization of, 109–10, 111, 125–26, 136, 233–34, 263  
 postterm births, 46  
 and prematurity, 51–52, 54, 108–9  
 as shock, 194
- Blake, William, *Everlasting Gospel*, *The*, 112
- Blase, B., 132–33
- Blauvelt, H., 21
- Blinder, M. G., 162
- blindness, 8, 79, 80, 146–47, 150, 213, 229, 251  
*See also* Vision
- Bloch, Marc, *Royal Touch*, *The*, 214
- boils, 10
- Boverman, H., 132
- Bower, B. D., 250
- Bowlby, John, 186, 218–19
- Braille, Louis, 147
- brain, 1, 2, 3, 7–8  
 central gyrus, 102  
 fetal, 41  
 growth of, 44–46  
 hypothalamus, 20
- brain (*cont'd*)  
 postcentral gyrus, 8, 9  
 precentral gyrus, 8  
 tactile area of, 9–10  
*See also* Central nervous system
- Braque, Georges, 219
- breastfeeding:  
 immunity conferred by, 64–65  
 letdown reflex in, 66  
 primary function hypothesized, 31
- breastfeeding (animal):  
 apes, 40, 66  
 hares, 66  
 monkeys, 66  
 rabbits, 66  
 tree shrews, 66
- breastfeeding (human): 31, 59–75, 78, 112, 240n  
 in Arapesh, 256–57  
 and behavioral development, 73–74, 104  
 benefits of, 63–65, 67–69, 70, 71–72  
 vs. bottlefeeding, 67, 69  
 breast care in, 72  
 considered indecent, 61–62  
 contraceptive effect of, 44, 67  
 decline in, 126, 176, 266  
 early weaning in, 68  
 erotic component of, 62, 161  
 Freudian interpretation of, 95–96  
 function of, 63, 66  
 in Ganda, 251  
 immunity conferred by, 64–65, 67, 70  
 intimacy felt as uncomfortable, 62  
 in Japan, 281, 282  
 in !Kung Bushmen, 254, 255  
 in Mundugumor, 257–58  
 in Netsilik Eskimos, 236  
 and orality, 93–94  
 rooting behavior in, 98–99  
 sensual component of, 97  
 and smiling, 74–75  
 and speech development, 69–70  
 suckling behavior in, 69, 73, 85, 94, 96, 101–2



- breastfeeding (*cont'd*)  
 superiority of infants, 65, 67  
 thumb-sucking as substitute, 174  
 weaning from, 68
- breathing:  
 and anxiety, 92  
 and cutaneous stimulation, 90-91  
 in infants, 84-85, 91-92  
 learned nature of, 92
- Brennemann, J., 79
- Bridgman, Laura, 80, 81, 146-47
- British Medical Journal*, 109
- Broad, Frances, 69-70
- Brody, S., 169-70
- Bronfenbrenner, Urie, 189
- Brooke, Rupert, 291
- Burma, J. H., 304
- Burton, Arthur, 219, 223
- Bushmen. *See* !Kung Bushmen
- Butler, Samuel, *Hudibras*, 152
- Calley, Louise, 298-99
- Canadians, tactility in, 293
- Carlyle, Thomas, 152
- Carpenter, Edmund, 136, 238, 239, 243
- Carrighar, Sally, 136
- Carson, Elizabeth, 278
- Carson, Samuel, 278
- Casler, Lawrence, 186
- cats:  
 licking behavior in, 17, 18  
 stroking appetite of, 26
- Caudill, William, 267, 268, 279-80, 281
- central nervous system, relationship to skin, 2-3, 7-8, 9, 230
- cesarean deliveries, 52-56  
 and emotional disturbances, 55  
 and speech defects, 55
- Chapin, Henry Dwight, 77, 78
- Charles X, 213-14
- chickens, 3
- child abuse, 279, 304-07  
*See also* Spanking
- Children's Clinic (Dusseldorf), 78
- chimpanzees:  
 finger-grooming in, 35  
 gestation period in, 40  
 chimpanzees (*cont'd*)  
 handshaking in, 288-89  
 handstroking and caressing in, 35  
 neonatal weight, 41  
 tactile deprivation in, 227
- Chisholm, Brock, 124-25
- Christian tradition and taboos, 249
- Chu, Josephine, 53
- Citizen Kane*, 271
- Clay, Vidal Starr, "Effect of Culture on Mother-Child Tactile Communication," 185, 190, 261-63, 264, 265, 272, 284, 303, 309-10, 311-12, 314-15
- clothing, 142-46, 264
- coitus. *See* Sex and sex differences
- colic, 91
- Collias, N. E., 21
- Collins, Carter C., 148
- colostrum 42, 61, 232  
 immunity conferred by, 64-65
- commensal association, 28
- Conklin, P. M., 23
- Constable, John, 247  
*Leaping Horse, The*, 247
- Cooke, R. E., 85
- Coppola, August F., 212, 290
- coprophilia, 184
- cows:  
 colostrum of, 64  
 hand milking of, 26, 72  
 milk-fed calves, 71
- cradleboards, 296-99
- cradles and rocking, 78, 119-22, 124, 125, 127-28, 318-19  
 attacked by behaviorists, 120-23  
 benefits of, 77, 126  
 cribs substituted for, 122, 124, 125  
 physiological effects of, 128-32  
 relationship to music and dance, 135-42  
 as sedative, 127  
 self-rocking behavior, 134-35  
 waterbed as, 143-44  
*See also* Cribs
- crib death, 126

- cribs, 67, 122, 124, 125, 126, 127, 234, 318
- crocodiles, 28
- Croxton, James, 61
- cutaneous alagia, 8
- cutaneous stimulation. *See* Touch
- dance, 135  
     biological roots of, 139–40  
     “Milk Dance,” 139  
     “touch dancing,” 137  
     *See also* Music
- dark:  
     experiments in, 211–12, 213, 229  
     fear of, 100–1
- Darwin, Erasmus, *Zoonomia, or the Laws of Organic Life*, 73–75, 202–03
- deafness, 8, 79, 80, 213, 246  
     *See also* Hearing
- de Boer, Richard James, 235–36, 237
- Debussy, Claude, *L'Après-Midi d'un Faune*, 135
- deer. *See* Fallow deer
- Denenberg, Victor H., 26, 54
- dermatographia, 147–48
- dermographia, 147–48
- “dermo-optical perception,” 146–47, 149
- De Vore, Irven, 90
- Dill, D. B., 92
- dogs:  
     importance of gentling, 25  
     licking behavior in, 15, 17  
     stroking appetite of, 26  
     use of, in therapy, 278–79
- dolphins, 27
- Douglas, Alfred, 285
- Draper, Patricia, 253
- Drillien, C. M., 51, 54
- DuBois, Cora, 259
- Dunbar, Flanders, 205
- Durdin, Peggy, 245
- Dusun (North Borneo), 259–60, 312–13
- Dylan, Bob, 136
- eating, as substitute for love, 96
- echidnas, 28
- Eckerman, C. O., 313–14
- ectoderm. *See* Skin
- eczema, 215
- Eden, William, 271
- Egypt, tattooing in, 305
- Elder, M. S., 85
- elephant, gestation period in, 39
- Elizalde, Manuel, 245
- Ellis, Havelock, 181
- encounter and marathon groups, 291–93
- England:  
     boarding (public) schools in, 270, 285–86, 302, 304  
     Elizabethan, 291  
     lack of warmth and tactility in, 269, 270–71, 283–85, 293  
     upper classes, 269–71, 284–85, 286
- epidermis. *See* Skin
- Erasmus, 291
- Erikson, Erik H., 173, 185
- Escalona, S., 196, 197, 199, 200, 203
- Eskimos, 235–44  
     Aivilik Eskimos, 238–39, 243  
     breastfeeding in, 236  
     Copper Eskimos, 240–41, 242  
     hearing and auditory perception in, 242, 243–44  
     Iglulik Eskimos, 241–42  
     licking behavior in, 37, 243  
     Netsilik Eskimos, 235–38  
     poetry of, 240–41  
     Polar Eskimos, 37  
     sexual behavior in, 242  
     sleeping habits and patterns in, 242  
     smell, sense of, in, 242  
     spatial faculties of, 238–39, 243  
     stress-coping in, 239  
     toilet training and attitudes in, 237, 238
- exhibitionism, 181, 182, 183, 184
- extended family, 271–72

- exterogestation, 44, 47, 232-33, 234-35  
 Fagot, Beverly, 183-84  
 falling, fear of, 217  
 fallow deer, gestation period in, 39  
 Feldman, Sandor S., 290  
 Fenichel, Otto, 82-83, 167, 206-07  
 fetus:  
     brain growth in, 41, 44  
     rhythmic orientation of, 137, 138-39, 232-33  
     *See also* Birth process; Infants  
 Fischer, J. L. and Fischer, A., 185, 269  
 flagellation, 179, 180  
 Flaubert, Gustave, 245  
 fleas, possible function of, 28  
 Flye, J., 229  
 Forer, Bertram, 221-22, 223  
 Forster, E. M., 270, 285  
     *Howard's End*, 209  
 Fraiberg, Selma, 306  
 Frank, Lawrence K., 136, 170, 171-72, 175, 303  
 Frazier, W. H., 55  
 Frederick II, 81  
 Freedman, D. G., 132  
 Freedman, N., 132  
 French, tactility in, 283, 287-88, 291, 293  
 French Canadians, tactility in, 293  
 Freud, Anna, 156, 161, 274  
 Freud, Sigmund, 95-96, 167, 170, 221, 222, 292  
 Friedman, Myra, 168  
 Fries, Margaret, 298  
 frottage, 184  
 Fuchs, Lawrence H., 136  
 Fuller, J. L., 25  
 Furman, E., 111  
 Ganda (East Africa), 251-53  
 Gardner, L. I., 193  
 Gardner, Martin, 146  
 Garner, A. M., 226  
 Géber, Marcelle, 252, 253  
 Geldard, Frank A., 149  
 Gergen, Kenneth, 210-11  
 Gergen, Mary, 210-11  
 Germans:  
     Nazis, 303-04  
     tactility in, 286  
 Gescheider, G. A., 246  
 Gesell, Arnold, 255  
     child development tests, 253  
 Gibb, J. R., 292  
 Gibson, James, 240  
 Gill, Eric, 143  
 Gilmore, Raymond, 28  
 goats, licking behavior in, 21-22, 56  
 Goldberg (researcher), 185  
 Gordon, Suzanne, *Lonely in America*, 210  
 gorillas, 174  
     finger-grooming in, 35  
     gestation period in, 40  
     handshaking in, 289  
     handstroking and caressing in, 35  
     neonatal weight, 41  
     staring in, 248  
 gray whales, 27-28  
 Greenacre, P., 195  
 Greene, Graham, *Sort of Life*, A, 302  
 Greene, William, Jr., 131-32  
 Gregg, Lee W., 149-50  
 grooming, as evolutionary development from licking, 35  
     *See also* indiv. species  
 Grotta, L. J., 54  
 guinea pigs, 3, 42  
 Gunner, A., 28  
 Hahn, J. F., 150  
 Haimson, L. H., 295-96  
 Hair, 143  
 hair:  
     facial, 142-43  
     long, 142-43  
 Hall, E. T., 218, 268-9  
 Hall, G. Stanley, 95  
 Halliday, James L., *Psychosocial Medicine*, 76-77

- Hamili, R., 77  
 Hamerman, S., 216-17  
 hands (and fingers):  
   laying on of, 213-14  
   tactile importance of, 8, 102,  
   105-7, 147  
 handshaking, 288-91, 302  
 Hardy, M. C., 67  
 hares, 66  
   *See also* Rabbits  
 Haring, Douglas, 281-82  
 Harlow, Harry F., 22, 29-32, 34,  
   97, 153, 160, 176, 263, 308,  
   310  
 Harlow, M. K., 32, 97, 153, 160,  
   176, 310  
 Harris, Charles S., 251  
 Hasselmeyer, E. G., 133  
 Hartman, W. E., 144-45  
 Harvard Child Study Center, 51  
 Hayes, Helen, 217-18  
 hay fever, 90  
 Head, Henry, 196  
 health, definition of, 157  
 hearing, 244, 249-50  
   *See also* Deafness  
 Hearst, William Randolph, 271  
 hedgehogs, 28  
 Hediger, H., 35  
 Heinicke, C. M., 156  
 Heinstein, Martin I., 94  
 Helfer, Ray, 306  
 Hendrix, G., 26  
 Henley, Nancy, 272, 273-74  
 Henry, Jules, 244  
 Hersher, L., 21-22  
 Hey (researcher), 83, 84  
 Hobbes, Thomas, 197-98  
 Hocken, Sheila, 251  
 Hoefer, C., 67  
 Hofer, Myron A., 112-13  
 Holland, Jimmie, 209  
 Hollender, Marc H., 162, 163,  
   164-65, 168, 169  
 Holt, Luther Emmett, Sr., *Care  
   and Feeding of Children, The*,  
   78, 121-22, 121n, 123  
 homosexuality, 244, 283, 285-86  
 Hopi Indians, 298  
 horses, human handling of, 26  
 hostility, expressions of, 301-04  
 Housman, A. E., 285  
 Huang, L. T., 165  
 Hughes, Robert, 247  
  
 India, childrearing and maternal  
   behavior in, 124, 279  
*Infant Care* (U.S. govt.  
   publication), 62  
 infant mortality, 77-78, 79, 126  
 infants:  
   anxiety and rigidity in, 87  
   bathing of, 84-85, 91-92  
   body awareness in, 207-08  
   brain growth in, 44-46  
   breathing habits, 91-92  
   crying in, 157, 301  
   early conditioning in, 87-90,  
   169-70, 190-94  
   ego formation in, 202-03  
   grasping and learning in, 115-20  
   influence of heartbeat sound on,  
   138  
   need for contact, 190-94,  
   308-11, 313-19  
   neonatal immaturity, 30, 40,  
   42-43, 46-48, 58, 64-65, 76  
   orality in, 93-94, 95, 182  
   prematurity, 51-52, 54, 108-9,  
   132-33  
   psychological disturbances in,  
   218-19  
   relationship formation in, 87-90,  
   227-28  
   responsiveness to mother, 94-95,  
   250  
   rooting behavior in, 98-99  
   sensory development in, 249-50  
   smiling in, 74-75  
   spatial orientation of, 230-40  
   stresses in, 203-04  
   temperature regulation in, 83-84,  
   85  
   time sense in, 199-200

- infants (*cont'd*)  
   touch in, 47-48, 50-51, 54,  
     103-4, 195-96, 197-98,  
     199-201, 226  
   trust in, 199  
   *See also* Man; Maternal behavior  
 intercourse. *See* Sex and sex  
   differences  
 Iraq, tattooing in, 315  
 Irwin, O. C., 142  
 itching and scratching, 150-53  
   erotic component of, 151-52, 153  
   in mammals, 153  
   psychosomatics of, 150-51, 215  
  
 James I (king of England), 151  
 Japan:  
   bathing in, 280-81  
   breastfeeding in, 282  
   expression of feelings in, 282  
   intimacy vs. distance in, 268-69  
   maternal behavior in, 279-83  
   sexual attitudes and behavior in,  
     282-83  
   sleeping habits and patterns in,  
     267-68, 280  
   texture consciousness in, 218  
 Jay, Phillis, 18, 34  
 Jews:  
   body rocking in, 134  
   Jewish mother, 286-87  
   tactility in, 286-87  
 Jivaros, 260  
 Johnson, Samuel, 214  
 Jolly, Allison, 35  
 Jones, Blurton, 66  
 Jones, Frederic Wood, 3  
 Joplin, Janis, 168  
 Jourard, S. M., 273  
  
 Kabongo (Kikuyu chief), 75  
 Kahn, Fritz, 184  
 Kaingang (Brazil), 244  
 kangaroos, 46  
 Kantor, Robert E., 219, 223  
 Karas, G. G., 25-26  
 Kazda, S., 68  
 Keller, Helen, 8, 80, 81, 146-47  
  
 Kempe, Henry, 306  
 Kennell, J. H., 108, 110-11, 112,  
   133-34  
 Kepecs, J. G., 307  
 kinesics and kinesis behavior, 87,  
   90, 115  
 kinesthetic sense, in infants, 82,  
   86-87  
 King, Cecil, 271  
 King, Truby, 70-71, 72  
 Kipling, Rudyard, 245  
 Kitzinger, Sheila, 109-10  
 Klaus, M. H., 107, 108, 110-11,  
   112, 114, 133-34  
 kleptomania, 184  
 Kluckhohn, Clyde, 297, 298  
 Knox, J. H. M., 78, 155  
 Konner, M. J., 255, 256  
 Krecek, Jiri, 68  
 Kritzler, H., 27  
 Kroeber, Alfred, 248  
 Krohn, Bernard, 68  
 !Kung Bushmen, 253-56  
  
 labor. *See* Birth process  
 Lacombe, P., 87-88  
 Landauer, T. K., 203-04  
 Lang, Raven, 99, 106-7  
 langur monkeys, maternal behavior  
   in, 34  
 Larsson, K., 188  
 Latins, tactility in, 283, 287-88,  
   291  
 Lawrence, T. E., 285  
 Leboyer, Frederick, 279  
 leg, "falling asleep" of, 8-9  
 Lehrman, H. C., 17  
 Leiber, Lillian, 210  
 Leighton, D., 297, 298  
 Leites, N., 295  
 lemurs, grooming in, 35  
 Leon, M., 72  
 lesbianism, 163, 183, 184  
 Levin, R., 72  
 Levine, S., 26, 188  
 Levinson, Boris M., 278  
 Levitsky, Abraham, 100  
 Lewis, G. W., 26

- Lewis, M., 185  
 Liberson, W. T., 55  
 licking behavior (animal), 15-22,  
     35-36, 57-58  
     in apes, 18  
     in cats, 17, 18  
     compared to birth process in  
         man, 48-50, 56, 57-58  
     and disease resistance, 20  
     in dogs, 15, 17  
     in goats, 21-22, 56  
     and genitourinary system  
         maturation, 15-16, 48  
     in monkeys, 18  
     and mortality rate, 15, 16, 25, 37  
     in newborn animals, 15, 28, 37  
     in rats, 17, 18, 19, 33, 57  
     self-licking of mother, 17, 18-19  
     in sheep, 20-21, 22, 25  
 licking behavior (human):  
     birth process as parallel, 38-39  
     in figures of speech, 37-38  
     in Polar Eskimos, 37  
     in Tibet, 37  
 Liddell, H. S., 21  
 Lilly, John, 27  
 Linn, T., 26  
 lions, gestation period in, 40  
 lips:  
     role of, in breastfeeding, 93-94  
     sensitivity of, in fetuses, 93  
     significance of smacking, 99  
     tactile importance of, 8, 102  
 Lipton, R. C., 191, 215  
 loneliness, 210  
 Lourie, R. S., 197  
 love-bites, 180-81  
 Lowen, Alexander, 166, 168, 172,  
     217  
     *Betrayal of the Body, The*,  
         205-06, 207  
 Lowenfeld, V., 174  
 lullabies, 119, 139, 141  
     *See also* Music  
 McBride, A. F., 27  
 McCaghy, C. H., 183  
 McCance, R. A., 16, 56-57  
 Maccoby, E. E., 185  
 McGhee, J. B., 164-65  
 McGraw, M., 195  
 McKinney, B. M., 22  
 McLuhan, Marshall, 248  
 McPhee, Colin, 117  
 Madsen, C. K., 246  
 Mahler, M. S., 292  
 Maier, R. A., 21  
 Maliver, Bruce, 166  
 Malmquist, C. P., 162-63  
 man:  
     erect posture, consequences of,  
         41-42  
     exterogestation in, 44, 47  
     gestation period in, 40, 42,  
         43-44, 46  
     health, definition of, 157  
     neonatal immaturity of, 39, 40,  
         42-43, 46-48, 58, 64-65, 76  
     neonatal weight, 41  
     perinatal mortality in, 46  
     skin stimulation in, 12  
     uterogestation in, 44, 46, 47  
     *See also* Birth process; Infants;  
         Maternal behavior (human);  
         Skin; Touch  
 marasmus, 77-78, 79  
 Marcuse, Herbert, 249  
 Marler, Peter, 34  
 Marshall, Lorna, 254  
 masochism, 184  
 Mason, Marie K., 80  
 Mason, William A., 134, 277  
 Mason, W. M., 227  
 masturbation, 154, 170-71, 174,  
     282  
 maternal behavior (animal):  
     defined, 22-23  
     development of, 33-34  
     in dogs, 15, 17, 22  
     in hens, 21  
     in monkeys, 22-23, 32-33, 34  
     and need for contact, 32, 33, 34  
     in rats, 19, 33  
     synchrony in, 33-34  
     warmth of young in, 85

- maternal behavior (*cont'd*)  
*See also* Breastfeeding; Licking behavior
- maternal behavior (human), 76-137  
 anxiety in, 76-77, 86-87  
 in Arapesh, 256-57  
 in Bali, 114-15, 116-18  
 behaviorists' influence on, 120-23, 125, 155  
 and child development, 97-98, 169-70  
 coldness in, 94, 201  
 cultural influences on, 230, 231-32  
 in Dusun, 260  
 and father's role, 299-301  
 in Ganda, 251-53  
 implications of early separation, 22, 57, 60-61, 77-78, 109-15, 125-26  
 importance of early tactile stimulation, 28-29, 35, 57, 58, 70, 74-75, 76, 79-83, 98, 99, 104-5, 160-62, 190-94, 198-99, 208-09  
 in India, 124, 279  
 infant holding position, 137-38  
 and infant mortality, 77-78  
 influenced by 19th-century experts, 78, 79  
 influence on I.Q., 191  
 in Japan, 279-83  
 in Kaingang, 244  
 in !Kung Bushmen, 253-55  
 in Mundugumor, 257-58  
 in neonatal period, 57, 58  
 in Netsilik Eskimos, 235-38  
 in Pakistan, 124-25  
 self-rocking and, 134-35  
 sensitive period in, 111, 114  
 symbiotic nature of, 47, 61, 62-63, 66, 70, 73, 75, 97-98, 105, 218, 226-27  
 in Tasaday, 244-45  
 touch in, 104-8, 109-10, 218  
 in United States, 184-85, 196, 261-63, 264-66, 279-83, 303, 309-10, 311-12, 314-16
- maternal behavior (*cont'd*)  
 and warmth, 82-83  
 in West, 118-19  
*See also* Bathing; Breastfeeding; Sleeping habits and patterns; Toilet training and attitudes
- Mead, Margaret, 114-15, 116, 184-85, 256-57, 271  
*Study of Culture at a Distance, The*, 294-95
- Mears, W. G., 246
- meconium plug syndrome, 54
- Meerlo, Joost, 139-40, 217  
 "Milk Dance" concept, 139-40
- Meier, Gilbert W., 53
- Meissner's corpuscles, 3, 320
- Mercer (researcher), 164
- Mercurio, Mrs. Herbert, 129
- Métraux, R., *Study of Culture at a Distance, The*, 294-95
- mice:  
 enzyme development in, 42  
 in experiments, 23-24  
 importance of gentling, 23  
*See also* Rats
- Milne, A. A., *Now We Are Six*, 277
- Mirkin, A. S., 246
- Mitchell, W. E., 26
- Moloney, J. C., 174, 216
- Moltz, H., 72
- monkeys:  
 breastfeeding in, 66  
 contact behavior in, 35  
 grooming behavior in, 28, 34, 35  
 independent behavior in, 233  
 infant-holding position in, 137-38  
 licking behavior in, 18  
 staring in, 248  
*See also* Apes; indiv. species
- Montagu, Ashley, 10, 224-26
- Montaigne, Michel de, "Of Experience," 151
- Moore, A. U., 21-22
- Moss, H. A., 265
- Mundugumor, 256, 257-58
- Mundurucu Indians, 245

- Musaph, 151  
 music, 135-36  
   culturally determined aspects of,  
     140-41, 240-42  
   lullabies, 119, 139, 141  
   and mother's heartbeat, 138  
   rock 'n' roll, 135-37, 139, 141  
   *See also* Dance  
 myths, 239
- narratophilia, 184  
 Nash, Ogden, "Taboo to Boot,"  
   152  
 National Guidance Marriage  
   Council (England), 286  
 Navaho Indians, 296  
 Nazis, 303-04  
 Neal (researcher), 130  
 necrophilia, 184  
 Newman, John Henry, 160  
 New Zealand Christchurch Parents  
   Centre, 275  
 Nissen, Henry W., 227  
 Nolan, Finbarr, 214  
 nose:  
   importance of, in psychological  
     development, 90  
   in literature, 93  
   picking of, 90, 92-93  
   psychocutaneous disorders of, 90  
   self-stroking, 90-91, 92-93  
   stimulation of, in breastfeeding,  
     92-93  
 nudism and nudity, 143, 144-45,  
   154-55  
   associated with sex, 145  
   and skin damage, 155  
   symbolism of, 155  
 nursing. *See* Breastfeeding
- Obermayer, Maximilian,  
   *Psychocutaneous Medicine*, 10  
 O'Connell, B., 83  
 O'Donovan, W. J., *Dermatological  
   Neuroses*, 10  
 oncophilic behavior, 219  
 Ong, Walter, 100  
 opossums, 46  
 oral-genital contacts, 102  
 orang-utans, gestation period in, 40  
 Ortega y Gasset, José, 101  
 Osler, William, 226  
 Otley, M., 16, 56-57  
*Our Bodies, Our Selves*, 167
- pacifiers, 67  
 Pacinian corpuscles, 4, 246  
 Painter, William, 69  
 painting, tactile quality of, 245-48  
 Pakistan, childrearing and maternal  
   behavior in, 124-25  
 pangolins, 28  
 Papoušek, H., 108  
 paraphilias, 184  
 parathyroid, 12, 13, 14  
 Parke, Ross D., 301  
 Parker, H., 248  
 Passman, Richard, 276, 277  
 Patton, R. G., 193  
 Pedersen, F., 265  
 Peiper, Albrecht, 67, 127  
 perceptual deprivation, 186-94  
   experiments in touch  
     deprivation, 209-10  
   findings in animals, 187-90  
   findings in infants, 190-94
- Petersen, Clarence, 152  
 pets, 224, 277-79  
 Phares, R., 165  
 Philippine Negritos, 145  
 philobatic behavior, 219  
 pictophilia, 184  
 Pieper, William J., 54-55  
 Plath, David, 267, 268  
 Pollock, C. B., 177  
 Pottenger, Francis J., Jr., 68  
 premature infants, problems of,  
   51-52, 54, 108-9, 132-33  
 Prescott, James H., 177-78, 260  
 Pressman, Mark E., 209  
 Price, Lisbeth D., 120  
 primates. *See* Apes; Man; Monkeys  
 promiscuity, 163, 175  
 Province, S., 191  
 psoriasis, 10



- psychosomatic illness, 10-12, 90,  
     91  
     *See also* Skin, disorders of; indiv.  
     illnesses  
 psychotherapy, touch in, 220-24  
 Puritanism, 269-71  
     *See also* England; United States  
  
 Quilligan, Dr., 114  
  
 rabbits, 66  
 Rado, Sandor, 96  
 Rasmussen, Knud, 241  
 rats, 3  
     importance of gentling, 13-14,  
         20, 23, 24, 25-26, 85, 187-89  
     licking behavior in, 17, 18, 19,  
         33, 57  
     maternal behavior in, 19, 33  
     maternal separation in, 112-13  
     temperature importance for, 85  
 Reisner, G., 26  
 Reyniers, James A.:  
     germ-free experiments, 15-16  
 Rheingold, H. L., 17, 313-14  
 rhesus monkeys:  
     contact and play in, 310-11  
     infant development in, 308-11  
     maternal behavior in, 22-23,  
         32-33, 34, 176-77, 263-64,  
         308  
     surrogate mother experiments,  
         29-32, 134-35  
 Rhine, Larry, 16-17  
 Ribble, Margaret, 91, 101, 196  
 Richards, Audrey, 252  
 Richmond, J. B., 21-22, 215  
 Rilke, Rainer, "Palm of the  
     Hand," 291  
 Ritchie, James E., 258, 299-300  
 Robson, K. S., 265  
 Rock, Irvin, 251  
 rocking. *See* Cradles and rocking  
 Rogers, Carl, 292  
 Roland, Paul, 220  
 Romans, Jules, *Vision*  
     *Extra-Rétinienne*, 146  
 Rome, Florence, 304  
 Rosenblatt, Jay S., 17, 18, 33-34  
 Rosenthal, Maurice J., 215  
 Roth, Lorraine L., 18, 33  
 Rousseau, Jean-Jacques:  
     *Autobiography*, 179  
     *Émile*, 149  
 royal touch, 213  
 Rozanov, V. V., 93  
 Rubin, Reva, 104-5, 106, 107, 108,  
     185, 263, 273  
 Rudinesco, Jenny, 216  
 Ruesch, Jurgen, 168  
 Russell, Bertrand, 6  
 Russell, Brian, 152  
 Russians, tactility in, 283, 293-96  
  
 sadism, 184  
 Saleeby, C. W., *Sunlight and*  
     *Health*, 154-55  
 Salimbene, Fra, 81  
 Salk, Lee, 137-38  
 Salmon, M., 23-24  
 Sarton, George, 38  
 Sayler, A., 23-24  
 Scandinavians, tactility in, 284  
 scatophilia, 184  
 Schachtel, Ernest, 249  
 Schaeffer, R. W., 85  
 Schapiro, Meyer, 248  
 schizophrenia and schizoid  
     behavior, 205-06, 216  
     breakthroughs caused by body  
     contact, 220  
 Schlossmann, Arthur, 78  
 Schneirla, T. C., 17  
 Schwing, Gertrude, 220  
 Scopes, J. W., 83  
 scopophilia, 181, 182-83  
 scratching. *See* Itching and  
     scratching  
 scrofula, 213, 214  
 seals, gestation period in, 39  
 Sears, R. R., 185  
 Seashore, Marjorie J., 111  
 security blankets, 29, 274, 276-77  
 Segal, Sydney, 53  
 Segonzac, André Dunoyer de, 246

- Seitz, Philip F. Durham, 88-89, 90, 151
- self-esteem, 208-09
- self-rocking:  
in infants, 191-92  
and maternal stimulation, 134-35
- Selye, Hans, 24
- sensitivity training groups, 291-93
- sex and sex differences, 158-85  
affect-hunger and, 161-65, 166, 210  
in behavior, 218, 265, 266  
contact and pregnancy, 163, 164-65  
contact as prelude to sex, 166-67  
cultural differences, 165-66, 183, 242, 244, 245  
disturbances of, 178-83, 184  
as highest form of touch, 158-60  
intercourse as means of contact, 161-63, 167-68, 169  
in male and female infants, 170-71, 172-73, 176, 183-85  
maternal behavior and subsequent sexual development, 160-62, 169-70, 172, 174-78, 181  
physiology of, 158-60, 167, 180  
promiscuity, 163, 175  
in salutations, 291  
as tension release, 175  
twin-bed syndrome, 266-67  
violence and tactile deprivation, 176-78  
*See also* Homosexuality; Lesbianism; Masturbation
- Shakespeare, William, *Coriolanus*, 150-51
- Shaul, Ben, 66
- sheep:  
commensal association with birds, 28  
licking behavior in, 20-21, 22, 25
- Shevrin, H., 192
- Shirley, Mary, 51-52, 54
- shock, 194-95
- sight. *See* Vision
- Silverman, Alan F., 209
- skin:  
adaptivity and reactivity of, 229-30  
in aging process, 7, 145, 155, 320  
at birth, 4  
as compensatory sense organ, 8  
disorders of, 205, 213-14, 216-17, 307-08  
ectoderm, 2  
electricity of, 145-46  
in embryo, 2  
epidermis, 3-4  
erotogenic view of, 170  
functions of, 3, 4-5, 8-9  
growth and development of, 3  
as lining of orifices, 1  
in literature, 5  
in nonliterate people, 145  
in poetry, 5  
as protector, 1  
and psychosomatic illness, 10-11  
relationship to central nervous system, 2-3, 7-8, 9, 230  
seeing with, 146-47, 148, 149  
as sense organ, 1-2, 3, 4, 7, 8-9, 10, 145, 148-50, 246  
size of, 4, 7  
and sleep, 156-57  
stimulation of, 12  
variability of, 31  
versatility of, 5  
weight of, 3, 4
- Skipper, J. K., Jr., 183
- Slater, Philip, *Earthwalk*, 69
- sleep, feedback during, 9
- sleeping habits and patterns, 156-57  
in Bali, 118  
and contact, 156-57  
disturbances of, 156-57  
in Eskimos, 242  
in Europe, 268  
in Ganda, 253  
in India, 124  
in Japan, 267-68

- sleeping habits (*cont'd*)  
 lambskin rugs, use of, 275-76  
 in Pakistan, 124  
 security blankets, use of, 276-77  
 twin beds, 266-67  
 in United States, 266-67, 280  
 in West, 118-19, 122, 124, 274-77  
*See also* Cradles; Lullabies
- smiling behavior in infants, 74-75
- Smith, Lillian, *Strange Fruit*, 267
- Smith, Sydney, 288
- Smith, Theobald, 64
- sociality, 208
- Sokoloff, N., 132-33
- Solnit, A. J., 134
- Solomon, Joseph C., 130-31, 135
- Southworth, R. T., 77
- spanking, 179, 180, 303, 304-07
- spinal cord, 2, 4, 7  
*See also* Brain; Central nervous system
- Spitz, René, 99, 161, 201, 215
- Staël, Madame de, 146-47
- staring behavior, 248
- Steele, Brandt F., 177
- Stefansson, Vilhjalmur, 242
- Steinschneider, A., 215
- Sterne, Laurence, 301
- Stewart, Dugald, *Outlines of Moral Philosophy*, 228
- Stewart, Kilton, *Pygmies and Dream Giants*, 145
- Straker, M., 55
- stress, 24-25, 26
- strippers, paternal rejection in, 183
- sudden infant death syndrome, 126
- swaddling, 83, 204, 293, 294
- Swinburne, Algernon, 285
- Sylvester, E., 126, 198-99
- Symonds, J. A., 285
- tact, meaning of, 228-29
- Talbot, Fritz, 78
- Tasaday (Mindanao), 244-45
- tattooing, 304-05
- television, tactile quality of, 248
- Temerlin, M. K., 195
- tenderness, meaning of, 174  
*See also* Touch
- Tennyson, Alfred, 135  
*In Memoriam*, 201-02
- Terkel, J., 33
- thalamus, 7
- Thevenin, Tine, *Family Bed, The*, 275
- Thiess, George, 137
- thigmotropism, 239-40
- thymus, 20
- thyroid, 12, 13
- Tibet, licking behavior in, 37
- Tobach, E., 17
- toilet training and attitudes, 182  
 in Bali, 117  
 in Netsilik Eskimos, 237, 238  
 in United States, 196
- tongue, sticking out of, 102
- Toomey, J. A., 64
- touch:  
 and affectionate behavior, 213  
 in alleviation of stress, 24-25, 26  
 and breathing, 91  
 class and cultural differences, 272-74, 283-88  
 cold vs. warm, 102-3  
 in dictionary, 102-3  
 in embryo, 1-2  
 as feedback mechanism, 8  
 and hair follicles, 4  
 importance of, 249-50  
 and information, 249-51  
 in mammals, 26  
 in neonatal period, 47-48, 50-51, 54, 103-4, 195-96, 197-98, 199-201  
 orientation toward, 219  
 passive vs. active, 240  
 psychophysics of, 150  
 in psychotherapy, 220-24  
 as sensory system, 1-2  
 and sound, 245  
 in speech, 5-7  
 as substitute for other senses, 79-80, 81  
 tactility in painting, 245-48  
 as test of reality, 100-1

- touch (*cont'd*)  
   in theater, 217-18  
   *See also* Maternal behavior; Sex  
     and sex differences  
 Toussieng, P. W., 192  
 toys, as human substitutes, 271,  
   274-75  
 tree shrews, 66  
 Tsumori, A., 313
- United States:  
   bathing in, 133, 271, 281  
   class differences in, 264-66,  
     279-83, 303, 310  
   diapering in, 196  
   maternal behavior in, 184-85,  
     196, 261-63, 264-66, 279-83,  
     303, 309-10, 311-12, 314-16  
   New England Puritanism in, 269  
   sex differences in tactile  
     experiences, 184-85  
   sleeping habits and patterns in,  
     266-67, 280  
   tactility in, 279-83, 284, 287,  
     288  
   toilet training and attitudes in,  
     196
- uridinism, 184  
 urophilia, 184  
 urticaria, 10  
 uterogestation, 44, 46, 47
- Vambéry, Arminius, 140-41  
 Van de Velde, H., 180-81  
 Van Gogh, Vincent, 246, 247  
 Van Valck, J. D., 26  
 Veblen, Thorstein, 31  
*vernix caseosa*, 84-85  
 Victoria, Queen, 291  
 Vinokurov, Yevgeny, 210  
 violence, and tactile deprivation,  
   176-78
- vision:  
   as dominant sense, 208, 213,  
     249-50, 251  
   and perceptual deprivation,  
     186  
   sensory receptors in, 148-49
- vision (*cont'd*)  
   sight orientation, 219  
   tactile quality of, 248  
   through skin, 146-47, 148,  
     149  
   *See also* Blindness  
 von Haller Gilmer, B., 149-50  
 voyeurism, 181, 184
- Waal, N., 220  
 Wagner, Richard, *Liebestod*, 135  
 warmth, importance of, 85-86  
 Washington, George, 207  
 waterbeds, 143-44  
 Watson, John Broadus,  
   *Psychological Care of Infant  
     and Child*, 122-23  
 Weiner, Herbert, 207  
 Weininger, O., 24-25  
 Weinstein, Helen, 279-80, 281  
 Weintraub, D., 132-33  
 Weisberg, Paul, 276  
 Weiss, L., 142  
 Welles, Orson, 271  
 Wenar, C., 226  
 Werboff, J., 23  
 Westermarck, Edward, 289  
 Westheimer, I., 156  
 Whimbey, Arthur E., 23  
 Whiting, J. W. M., 203-04  
 Wilde, Oscar, 285  
 Williams D., 20  
 Williams, T. R., 259-60, 312-13  
 Winnicott, D. W., 205, 301  
 Wistar Institute:  
   rat experiments, 12-15  
 Wolff, Peter, 294  
 Woodcock, J. M., 130  
 "worrybeads," 216
- Yaffe, S., 132-33  
 Yarrow, C. J., 98, 191
- Zahovsky, John, 120, 128-29  
 Zaporozhets, A. V., 250  
 Zarrow, M. X., 54  
 zoophilia, 184  
 Zubek, J. P., 229

## ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Ashley Montagu is the author of some forty-five books and over two hundred articles in scholarly and scientific journals. He has taught at Harvard, the University of California, and at New York University and was formerly Chairman of the Department of Anthropology at Rutgers, the State University of New Jersey.





UNIVERSAL  
LIBRARY



104 888

UNIVERSAL  
LIBRARY